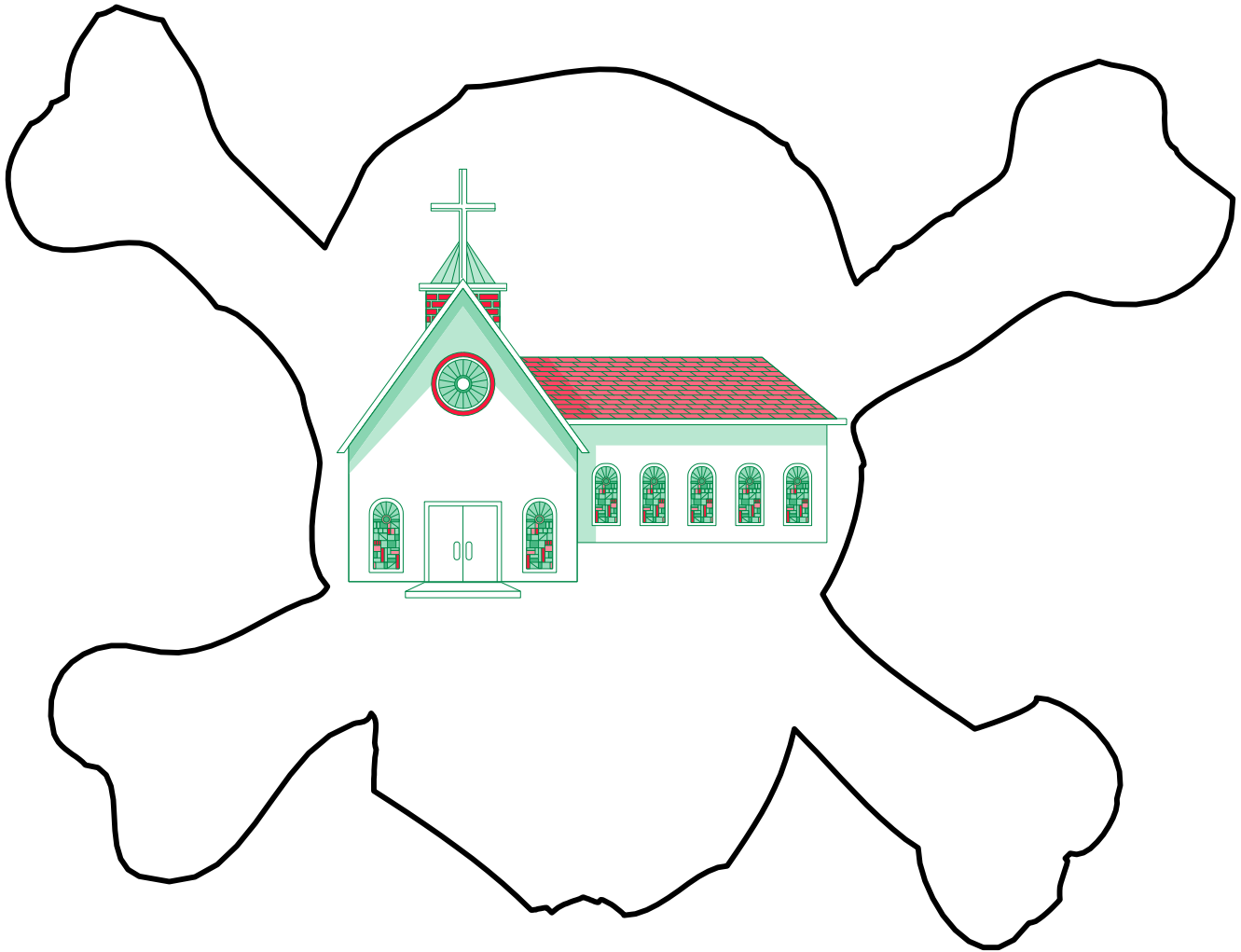


# ***POLICY DOCUMENT: CORRUPTION WITHIN MODERN CHRISTIANITY***



*“The house [church] of the wicked will be overthrown,  
But the tent of the upright will flourish.  
There is a way that seems right to a man [or a church],  
But its end is the way of death.”  
[Prov. 14:11-12, Bible, NKJV]*

## DEDICATION

### The Great Apostasy

*“Now, brethren, concerning the coming of our Lord Jesus Christ and our gathering together to Him, we ask you, not to be soon shaken in mind or troubled, either by spirit or by word or by letter, as if from us, as though the day of Christ had come. **Let no one deceive you by any means; for that Day will not come unless the falling away comes first, and the man of sin is revealed, the son of perdition, who opposes and exalts himself above all that is called God or that is worshiped, so that he sits as God in the temple of God, showing himself that he is God.**”*

*Do you not remember that when I was still with you I told you these things? And now you know what is restraining, that he may be revealed in his own time. For the mystery of lawlessness is already at work; only He who now restrains will do so until He is taken out of the way. And then the lawless one [Satan, the ANARCHIST] will be revealed, whom the Lord will consume with the breath of His mouth and destroy with the brightness of His coming. The coming of the lawless one is according to the working of Satan, with all power, signs, and lying wonders, and with all unrighteous deception among those who perish, because they did not receive the love of the truth, that they might be saved. **And for this reason God will send them strong delusion, that they should believe the lie, that they all may be condemned who did not believe the truth but had pleasure in unrighteousness.**”*

*[2 Thess. 2:1-12, Bible, NKJV]*

# TABLE OF CONTENTS

<b>DEDICATION .....</b>	<b>2</b>
<b>TABLE OF CONTENTS .....</b>	<b>3</b>
<b>TABLE OF AUTHORITIES .....</b>	<b>4</b>
<b>1 Introduction .....</b>	<b>26</b>
<b>2 The Good, the Bad, and Best Uses of Christianity .....</b>	<b>28</b>
2.1 THE GOOD: Jesus refused a domicile, refused to participate in all human franchises, benefits, and privileges, and refused the “civil status” that made them possible.....	32
2.2 THE BAD: Satan’s greatest sin was abusing “privileges” and “franchises” to make himself equal to or above God <sup>34</sup> .....	
<b>3 Background on deception, delusions, and presumptions .....</b>	<b>43</b>
<b>4 The Big Picture on Corruption Within Modern Christianity.....</b>	<b>46</b>
<b>5 Corruption of the meaning of Biblical Terms .....</b>	<b>51</b>
<b>6 Common Flawed Christian Arguments .....</b>	<b>52</b>
6.1 How Churches are Lying to You About What “Increase” means in The Biblical Requirement to Tithe .....	52
6.2 “Being a Christian means we will go to heaven”.....	55
6.3 “We are saved by grace. No works are necessary”.....	56
6.4 “The God of the old testament is a different god than the new testament”.....	57
6.5 “My church or faith is the only true church”.....	57
6.6 “Christians aren’t allowed to judge”.....	58
6.7 “Hate is not a Christian value”.....	63
6.8 “Everyone is equal in God’s Kingdom and will receive the same reward regardless of works”.....	75
6.9 “We must obey all governments. Even evil governments”.....	80
6.10 “The Bible is a history book, not a law book. The new testament repealed the old testament”.....	91
6.11 “Christians must render to the government whatever it demands, including any amount of tax”.....	96
6.12 “Hell is a real, physical place”.....	99
6.13 “Everything is ministry”.....	105
6.14 “God loves me unconditionally”.....	106
6.15 “People are all inherently good”.....	109
<b>7 Questions Your Minister Doesn’t Want You To Ask .....</b>	<b>110</b>
7.1 “What is the Biblical definition of sin?”.....	110
7.2 “What is God’s law?”.....	110
7.3 “Can the trinity be proven in the Bible?”.....	111
7.4 “What is the Gospel of Jesus Christ?”.....	112
7.5 “What is the Difference Between God the Father, Jesus Christ and the Holy Spirit?”.....	113
7.6 “What is a True Christian?”.....	114
7.7 “What is the Bible Definition of Love?”.....	114
7.8 “What is the Purpose of the Ten Commandments?”.....	115
7.9 “Why Was I Born?”.....	116
<b>8 Motivation for the Deception and Corruption .....</b>	<b>116</b>
8.1 Desire to avoid responsibility.....	118
8.2 Desire to do things our way instead of God’s way.....	120
8.3 Hedonism.....	129
8.4 Pride.....	130
<b>9 Philosophies and Faiths within Christianity that Originate the Delusion and Corruption Described Herein .....</b>	<b>133</b>
<b>10 About Anti-nomianism .....</b>	<b>135</b>
10.1 Antinomianism in the Old Testament.....	135
10.2 Antinomianism in the New Testament.....	136
10.3 Pauline passages supporting antinomianism.....	137
10.4 Pauline passages opposing antinomianism.....	140
10.5 Theological views.....	140

10.6	Paul versus James .....	140
10.7	Jesus and antinomianism .....	141
10.8	Antinomian Controversy in Christianity.....	141
<b>11</b>	<b>God v. Government: Competing Religions.....</b>	<b>142</b>
11.1	Why all man-made law is religious in nature .....	142
11.2	How Governments Abuse the Human Desire to Avoid Responsibility to Enslave the People and Become Like Pagan Gods.....	146
11.3	How government and God compete to provide “protection”.....	156
11.4	Government has become idolatry and a false religion .....	158
11.5	Comparison of the Government/Socialist Church to the Christian Church .....	175
11.6	The “Tax Code” is the Bible of a state-sponsored Religion, not a “law” .....	179
11.7	Both Big Government And Big Religion: The Enemy Of Freedom.....	194
11.8	What’s Wrong with American Christianity According to Pastor Chuck Baldwin.....	196
<b>12</b>	<b>Guide to Discerning Truth .....</b>	<b>198</b>
<b>13</b>	<b>Conclusions .....</b>	<b>200</b>
<b>14</b>	<b>Resources for application, study, and rebuttal.....</b>	<b>202</b>

**LIST OF TABLES**

Table 1:	Approaches to choice of law .....	133
Table 2:	The characteristics of the irresponsible and how the government panders to them .....	148
Table 3:	Worship of God (Christianity) v. Worship of Government (idolatry).....	160
Table 4:	Comparison between God’s Religion and Government’s Religion.....	176
Table 5:	Comparison of Political Religion v. Christianity .....	185

**TABLE OF AUTHORITIES**

**Constitutional Provisions**

Antiochus Epiphanes.....	136
Art. 1, § 2, cl. 3, § 9, cl. 4.....	53
Article 1, Section 8, Clause 3 .....	97
Article 1, Section 9, Clause 8 of the Constitution .....	193
Bill of Rights .....	31, 60, 193
Declaration of Independence .....	92, 125, 181
Federalist Paper #10, James Madison .....	31
Federalist Paper #36.....	97

**Regulations**

26 C.F.R. §1.1-1(a)(2)(ii).....	96
26 C.F.R. §301.6109-1(d)(3).....	96

**Rules**

Alaska Rule of Evidence, Rule 301(b) .....	45
California Evidence Code § 602.....	45
California Evidence Code §§ 621 et seq. ....	45

Federal Rule of Evidence 301 .....	44
Hawaii Rule of Evidence, Rule 305 .....	45
Hawaii Rules of Evidence, Rules 303, 304 .....	45
Maine Rule of Evidence, Rule 301(b) .....	45
Oregon Evidence Code, Rule 311 .....	45
Oregon Rule of Evidence, Rule 311(2) .....	45
Vermont Rule of Evidence, Rule 301(b) .....	45
Wisconsin Rule of Evidence, Rule 301 .....	45

## Cases

14 Connecticut 152.....	92
3 Dallas, 386.....	93
32 Connecticut, 118.....	93
5 Cranch, 185 .....	92
Adderley v. State of Fla., 385 U.S. 39, 87 S.Ct. 242 (U.S.Fla. 1966), Footnote 1 .....	61
American Casualty Co. v Costello, 174 Mich.App. 1, 435 N.W.2d. 760.....	45
Beagle v. Motor Vehicle Acc. Indemnification Corp., 44 Misc.2d. 636, 254 N.Y.S.2d. 763, 765 .....	122, 146
Bowers v. Kerbaugh-Empire Co., 271 U.S. 170, 174, (1926).....	53
Boy Scouts of America v. Dale, 120 S.Ct. 2446 .....	64
Brady v. U.S., 397 U.S. 742 (1970) .....	180
Brookhart v. Janis, 384 U.S. 1, 86 S.Ct. 1245, 16 L.Ed.2d. 314 (1966).....	180
Brushaber v. Union P. R. Co., 240 U.S. 1, 17 .....	53
Calder v. Bull, 3 U.S. 386 (1798).....	92
Chicago ex rel. Cohen v. Keane, 64 Ill.2d. 559, 2 Ill.Dec. 285, 357 N.E.2d. 452.....	36
Chicago Park Dist. v. Kenroy, Inc., 78 Ill.2d. 555, 37 Ill.Dec. 291, 402 N.E.2d. 181 .....	36
Connizzo v General American Life Ins. Co. (Mo App), 520 S.W.2d. 661 .....	44
Davis v. Beason, 133 U.S. 333, 342 , 10 S.Ct. 299, 300 .....	124
Delany v. Moralitis, C.C.A.Md., 136 F.2d. 129, 130 .....	122, 146
Doyle v. Mitchell Brothers Co., 247 U.S. 179, 185 .....	53
Doyle, Collector, v. Mitchell Brothers Co., 247 U.S. 179, 38 Sup.Ct. 467, 62 L.Ed.– .....	52
Edwards v. Cuba Railroad, 268 U.S. 628, 633 .....	53
Eisner v. Macomber, 252 U.S. 189, 207 .....	53
Everson v. Bd. of Ed., 330 U.S. 1, 15 (1947).....	192
Feldman v. United States, 322 U.S. 487, 501, 64 S.Ct. 1082, 1088, 88 L.Ed. 1408 .....	61
Ferdinand v Agricultural Ins. Co., 22 N.J. 482, 126 A.2d. 323, 62 A.L.R.2d. 1179 .....	44
Gas Co. v. Gas Co., 25 Id. 38.....	92
Georgia Dep't of Human Resources v. Sistrunk, 249 Ga. 543, 291 S.E.2d. 524 .....	36
Glasser v. United States, 314 U.S. 60, 70-71, 86 L.Ed. 680, 699, 62 S.Ct. 457 .....	180
Glover v Henry (Tex App Eastland), 749 S.W.2d. 502.....	45
Goodrich v. Edwards, 255 U.S. 527, 535 .....	53
Hinds v. John Hancock Mut. Life Ins. Co., 155 Me. 349, 155 A.2d. 721, 85 A.L.R.2d. 703 .....	44
Indiana State Ethics Comm'n v. Nelson (Ind App), 656 N.E.2d. 1172.....	36
Irwin v. Gavit, 268 U.S. 161, 167 .....	53
Jersey City v. Hague, 18 N.J. 584, 115 A.2d. 8.....	36
Jones v. City of Opelika, 316 U.S. 584, 62 S.Ct. 1231 (1942).....	172
Laird v. Tatum, 408 U.S. 1, 92 S.Ct. 2318 (1972) .....	61
Lansing v. Smith, 21 D. 89., 4 Wendel 9 (1829).....	80
Larmay v. Van Etten, 129 Vt. 368, 278 A.2d. 736.....	44
Legille v. Dann, 178 U.S.App.D.C. 78, 544 F.2d. 1, 191 USPQ 529.....	44
Levasseur v. Field (Me), 332 A.2d. 765.....	44
Loan Association v. Topeka, 20 Wall. 655 (1874).....	173
Madlener v. Finley, 161 Ill.App.3d. 796, 113 Ill.Dec. 712, 515 N.E.2d. 697 (1st Dist) .....	36
Maisano v. Mitchell, 155 Conn. 256, 231 A.2d. 539, 542.....	146
Manchester v. Dugan (Me), 247 A.2d. 827 .....	44
Marbury v. Madison, 5 U.S. 137, 1 Cranch 137, 2 L.Ed. 60 (1803) .....	123, 162, 170

Martin v. Phillips, 235 Va. 523, 369 S.E.2d. 397 .....	44
Merchants' L. & T. Co. v. Smietanka, 255 U.S. 509, 219 .....	53
Miles v. Safe Deposit Co., 259 U.S. 247, 252-253.....	53
Murray v. Montgomery Ward Life Ins. Co., 196 Colo. 225, 584 P.2d. 78.....	44
Nikulnikoff v. Archbishop, etc., of Russian Orthodox Greek Catholic Church, 142 Misc. 894, 255 N.Y.S. 653, 663 124, 175, 182, 188	
Pollock v. Farmer's Loan & T. Co., 157 U.S. 429, 29 L.Ed. 759, 15 Sup.St.Rep. 673, 158 U.S. 601, 39 L.Ed. 1108, 15 Sup.Ct.Rep. 912 .....	53
Pollock v. Farmers' Loan & Trust Co., 157 U.S. 429 (Supreme Court 1895) .....	40
Pollock v. Farmers' Loan & Trust Co., 158 U.S. 601 .....	53
Port Terminal & Warehousing Co. v. John S. James Co., D.C.Ga., 92 F.R.D. 100, 106 .....	44
Providence Bank v. Billings, 29 U.S. 514 (1830) .....	182
Re Estate of Borom (Ind App), 562 N.E.2d. 772 .....	44
Reagan v. Farmers Loan & Trust Co., 154 U.S. 362 (1894) .....	157
Smith v. Bohlen, 95 N.C. App 347, 382 S.E.2d. 812, affd 328 N.C. 564, 402 S.E.2d. 380 .....	44
Southern Pacific Co. v. Lowe, 247 U.S. 330, 335 .....	53
Southern Pacific Co., v. Lowe, 247 U.S. 330, 335, 38 S.Ct. 540 (1918) .....	53
Stanley v. Colt, 72 U.S. 119, 133, (1866) .....	93
State ex re. Maisano v. Mitchell, 155 Conn. 256, 231 A.2d. 539, 542 .....	122
State ex rel. Nagle v. Sullivan, 98 Mont. 425, 40 P.2d. 995, 99 A.L.R. 321 .....	36
Stratton's Independence v. Howbert, 231 U.S. 399, 415 .....	53
Stratton's Independence v. Howbert, 231 U.S. 399, 416, 417 S., 34 Sup.Ct. 136.....	53
U.S. v. Cleveland Indians Baseball Co., 532 U.S. 200, 121 S.Ct. 1433 (2001) .....	199
U.S. v. Lee, 455 U.S. 252 (1982) .....	172
U.S. v. Macintosh, 283 U.S. 605 (1931) .....	125
U.S. v. Whiteridge, 231 U.S. 144, 34 S.Sup.Ct. 24 (1913) .....	53
United States v. Boylan, 898 F.2d. 230, 29 Fed.Rules.Evid.Serv. 1223 (CA1 Mass).....	36
United States v. Holzer, 816 F.2d. 304 (CA7 Ill) .....	36
United States v. Kusche, D.C.Cal., 56 F.Supp. 201 207, 208 .....	122, 146
United States v. Lee, 106 U. S., at 220.....	36
United States v. Little, 889 F.2d. 1367 (CA5 Miss).....	36
United States v. Phellis, 257 U.S. 156, 169.....	53
United States v. Supplee-Biddle Co., 265 U.S. 189, 194 .....	53
United States v. Winstar Corp. 518 U.S. 839 (1996) .....	36
Van Wart v. Cook, Okl.App., 557 P.2d. 1161, 1163 .....	44
Wallace v. Jaffree, 472 U.S. 69 (1985) .....	192
West Virginia Bd. of Ed. v Barnett, 319 U.S. 624, 638 (1943).....	31
Whitney v. California, 274 U.S. 357 (1927) .....	61
Yick Wo v. Hopkins, 118 U.S. 356, 6 S.Ct. 1064 (1886) .....	80

## Other Authorities

1 Bl. Com. 91 .....	92
1 Hamilton's Works, ed. 1885, 270 .....	39
37 American Jurisprudence 2d, Fraud and Deceit, §144 (1999) .....	181
44 Cong.Rec. 4420.....	188
44 Cong.Rec. 4959 (1909) .....	150
63C American Jurisprudence 2d, Public Officers and Employees, §247 (1999) .....	36
75 Bible Questions Your Instructors Pray You Won't Ask, Second Edition, Gary North, 1984, 1988, ISBN 0-930462-03-3.....	202
75 Bible Questions Your Instructors Pray You Won't Ask, Second Edition, Gary North, 1984, 1988, ISBN 0-930462-03-3, p. 1.....	181
91 Corpus Juris Secundum, United States, §4 (2003) .....	157
A Call for Discernment, John MacArthur .....	63
A Greek-English Lexicon of the New Testament and other Early Christian Literature Bauer, Gingrich, Danker .....	141
A Przeworski, JM Maravall, I NetLibrary Democracy and the Rule of Law (2003) p. 223 .....	30

A Study of the word Gentile, Pastor Curtis Clair Ewing.....	51
A. W. Tozier.....	65
About Us Page, Family Guardian Fellowship.....	31
Achtemeier, P. J. 1985. Harper's Bible dictionary. Includes index. (1st ed.) (Page 1147). Harper & Row: San Francisco ...	68
Adam.....	95
Adolf Hitler.....	45
Affidavit of Duress: Illegal Tax Enforcement by De Facto Officers, Form #02.005.....	42
Against the Antinomians (1539).....	135
Aleister Crowley.....	121
Alex Hamilton.....	174
Alexander Fraser Tytler.....	31
Allen Edwardes, Erotica Judaica, A Sexual History of the Jews (NY: Julian Press, 1967) p. 56.....	49
American Jurisprudence 2d, Evidence, §181 (1999).....	44
American Vision, Gary Demar.....	134
Anabaptists.....	142
Antilegomena.....	140
Apostasy Watch Website.....	203
Apostle Paul.....	61
Bandas, Robert. Christ the End of the Law, Romans 10.4 in Pauline Perspective, 1985, ISBN 0-905774-93-0.....	139
Bible Law Course, Form #12.015.....	203
Biblical Institutes of Law by Rousas Rushdoony, 1972, pp. 664-669.....	147
Biblical Standards for Civil Rulers, Form #13.013.....	203
Black's Law Dictionary, Sixth Edition, p. 1185.....	44
Black's Law Dictionary, Sixth Edition, p. 1292.....	160, 175, 182, 188, 189
Black's Law Dictionary, Sixth Edition, p. 139.....	171
Black's Law Dictionary, Sixth Edition, p. 1407.....	122, 146
Black's Law Dictionary, Sixth Edition, p. 269.....	184
Black's Law Dictionary, Sixth Edition, p. 501.....	188
Black's Law Dictionary, Sixth Edition, p. 599.....	125, 170
Black's Law Dictionary, Sixth Edition, p. 841.....	183
Black's Law Dictionary, Sixth Edition, pp. 1606-1607.....	123
Book of Life.....	119, 152
Boundaries For Effective Ministry.....	105, 106
Bouvier's Maxims of Law, 1856.....	123, 175, 189
Brett Keith.....	97
Brook Stockton, Retired Christian Pastor with over 50 years in ministry.....	54
C.C. Goen, Revivalism and Separatism in New England, 1740-1800, Strict Congregationalists and Separate Baptists in the Great Awakening (New Haven: Yale University Press, 1962), p. 200 f.....	154
C.N.N.....	50
Caesar.....	80, 85
Calvinists.....	142
Catholic Encyclopedia.....	140
Catholic Encyclopedia: Judaizers.....	140
Catholic Encyclopedia: Judaizers see section titled: "THE INCIDENT AT ANTIOCH".....	140
Chalcedon Foundation.....	203
Charles Darwin.....	45
Charles Haddon Spurgeon.....	196
Charles Ryries.....	134
Christian Citizenship Training Course, Slides and handouts, Form #12.009.....	203
Christian Citizenship Training Course, Volume 1, Form #12.007.....	203
Christian Citizenship Training Course, Volume 2, Form #12.008.....	203
Christianity and Human Flourishing: The Role of Law and Politics, Emory Law School.....	28
Contra Faust, 32.13.....	137
Cornelius Van Til, A Letter on Common Grace (Philadelphia: Presbyterian and Reformed Publishing Company, 1955), p. 40 f.....	154
Dallas Theological Seminary.....	134
David C. Pack, Pastor.....	203

David Hempton, The Alonzo L. McDonald Family Professor of Evangelical Theological Studies, the Lord John Obrien Professor of Divinity, and the Dean of Harvard Divinity School.....	29, 55
Delegation of Authority Order from God to Christians, Form #13.007 .....	121, 135
Delegation of Authority Order from God to Christians, Form #13.007, Section 3.6 .....	91
Delegation of Authority Order from God to Christians, Form #13.007, Section 4.5 .....	75
Department of Justice .....	42
Did God Create Human Nature? .....	109
DuQuette, Lon Milo. The Magick of Thelema.....	130
E. P. Sanders.....	141
E. P. Sanders, Jesus and Judaism, 1985 SCM Press ISBN 0-334-02091-3, pages 264-9.....	141
Emden, R. "Appendix to "Seder 'Olam," pp. 32b-34b, Hamburg, 1752.....	140
Encyclopedia Britannica: Antinomianism.....	135
Ernest F. Kevan, The Moral Law (Jenkintown, Penna.: Sovereign Grace Publishers, 1963) p. 5 f .....	126, 143
Ernest F. Kevan, The Moral Law (Jenkintown, Penna.: Sovereign Grace Publishers, 1963) p. 5 f. S.R. Driver, "Law (In Old Testament), "in James Hastings, ed., A Dictionary of the Bible, vol. III (New York: Charles Scribner's Sons, 1919), p. 64.....	93
F. C. Baur .....	140
Family Constitution, Form #13.003, Section 2.3.6 .....	63
Family Constitution, Form #13.003, Section 7.4.7 .....	80
Family Guardian Website.....	203
Federal Reserve .....	38
Form #05.017 .....	176
Form #11.306 .....	203
Fossum, Jarl; Munoa, Phillip. Jesus and the Gospels. Thomson Learning, 2004.....	136
François Rabelais .....	121
Freedom Ministries, Pastor John Weaver.....	203
Friedrich Heer, The Intellectual History of Europe, p. 179 .....	154
George Washington.....	177
Government Establishment of Religion, Form #05.038 .....	142
Government Instituted Slavery Using Franchises, Form #05.030.....	124
Government Instituted Slavery Using Franchises, Form #05.030, Section 2.15 .....	32
Government Instituted Slavery Using Franchises, Form #05.030, Section 2.16 .....	34
Government Instituted Slavery Using Franchises, Form #05.030, Section 22.4 .....	38
Great IRS Hoax, Form #11.302, Section 1.10.2.....	96
Great IRS Hoax, Form #11.302, Section 4.3.12 .....	176
Great IRS Hoax, Form #11.302, Section 4.3.9.....	142, 146
Great IRS Hoax, Form #11.302, ver. 4.51, Section 5.6.17 .....	179
Gustave Friedrich Oehler, Theology of the Old Testament (Grand Rapids: Zondervan, 1883), p. 177 .....	94, 128, 144
H. de Jongste and J.M. van Krimpen, The Bible and the Life of the Christian .....	95, 128, 145
Harris, Stephen L., Understanding the Bible. Palo Alto: Mayfield. 1985. p. 316-320.....	137
Helen of Troy .....	50
Henry, M. 1996, c1991. Matthew Henry's commentary on the whole Bible : Complete and unabridged in one volume (Pr 11:1). Hendrickson: Peabody .....	73
Henry, M. 1996, c1991. Matthew Henry's commentary on the whole Bible : Complete and unabridged in one volume (Pr 11:20). Hendrickson: Peabody .....	72
Hermann Kleinknecht and W. Gutbrod, Law (London: Adam and Charles Black, 1962), p. 21 .....	126, 142
His Holy Church.....	203
How State Nationals Volunteer to Pay Income Tax, Form #08.024, pp. 94-96 .....	53
Hugh H. Currie, "Law of God," in James Hastings, ed., A Dictionary of Christ and the Gospels (New York: Charles Scribner's Sons, 1919), I, 685 .....	94, 127, 144
Internal Revenue Code .....	188
Internal Revenue SERVICE.....	89
J.A. Thompson: The Ancient Near Easter Treaties and the Old Testament (London: The Tyndale Press, 1964).....	144
Jeff Bowman .....	159
Jesus is an Anarchist, Family Guardian Fellowship.....	203
Jesus Is An Anarchist, James Redford .....	34
Jesus of Nazareth: Illegal Tax Protester, Ned Netterville.....	203



Jewish Encyclopedia article on Gentile: Gentiles May Not Be Taught the Torah .....	140
Jewish Encyclopedia: Baptism .....	136
Jewish Encyclopedia: Jesus .....	141
Jewish Encyclopedia: New Testament: Misunderstood Passages .....	141
John Calvin, Institutes of the Christian Religion, bk. IV, chap. XX, para. Xiv .....	128
John Calvin, Institutes of the Christian Religion, bk. IV, chap. XX, para. Xiv. In the John Allen translation (Philadelphia: Presbyterian Board of Christina Education, 1936), II, 787 f .....	95
John Feinberg .....	134
John Walvord .....	134
Joseph Fitzmyer, The Acts of the Apostles (The Anchor Yale Bible Commentaries), Yale University Press (December 2, 1998), ISBN 0300139829, chapter V .....	137
Karl Josef von Hefele's commentary on canon II of Gangra .....	137
Kelinknecht an Gutbrod, Law, p. 125 .....	143
King Agrippa .....	141
King Elizabeth .....	50
Kleinknecht and Gutbrod, Law, p. 125 .....	93, 127
Kleinknecht and Gutbrod, Law, p. 44 .....	93
Kline, Treaty of the Great King, p. 41 .....	95, 145
Law of Thelema .....	122
Laws of the Bible, Form #13.001 .....	203
Laws of the Bible, Form #13.001, Section 3 .....	52
Malcolm Bradbury .....	66
Mao Tse-Tung, The foolish Old Man Who Removed Mountains (Peking: Foreign Languages Press, 1966), p. 3 .....	126, 143
Martin Luther .....	135
Mary Queen of Scots .....	50
McGrath, Alister E., Christianity: An Introduction, Blackwell Publishing (2006), ISBN 1-4051-0899-1, Page 174..	136, 141
Meredith G. Line, Treaty of the Great King, The Covenant Structure of Deuteronomy: Studies and Commentary (Grand Rapids: William B. Eerdmans, 1963), p. 16 .....	94, 144
Merriam Webster's Online Dictionary .....	43
Microsoft ® Encarta ® Reference Library 2005. © 1993-2004 Microsoft Corporation .....	192
Microsoft ® Encarta ® Reference Library 2008. © 1993-2007 Microsoft Corporation .....	47
Moffatt .....	116
Mormon Church (LDS) .....	53
Morris Raphael Cohen, Reason and Law (New York: Collier Books, 1961), p. 84 f. ....	126, 143
Muslims .....	38
New Testament Israel, Sheldon Emry .....	51
Olaf Moe, "Law," in James Hastings, ed., Dictionary of the Apostolic Church (New York: Charles Scribner's Sons, 1919), I, 685 .....	94, 127, 144
One Hundred One Questions Your Pastor Hopes You Never Ask, Earl Paulk, 1990, K-Dimension Pub; ISBN 10-091759536X .....	202
Overview of America, Form #12.011 .....	49
Pastor John Weaver .....	203
Pearson, Joanne. A Popular Dictionary of Paganism, p. 44. Routledge, 2002. ISBN 0700715916 .....	130
Peterson, E. H. (2005). The Message: the Bible in contemporary language (Mt 23:13–39). Colorado Springs, CO: NavPress .....	33
Pope Gregory the Third (731) .....	137
President Obama .....	50
President Obama Says US Will NOT Impose Its Political or Economic System on Anyone, Exhibit #05.053 .....	41
Presumption: Chief Weapon for Unlawfully Enlarging Government Jurisdiction, Form #05.017 .....	46
Proof that Involuntary Income Taxes on Your Labor are Slavery, Form #05.055 .....	53
Protestant Reformation (c.1517) .....	135
R.J. Rushdoony, "The Myth of Nature," in The Mythology of Science (Nutley, N.J.: The Craig Press, 1967), pp. 96-98 ..	95, 129, 146
Real Truth Website .....	203
Requirement for Consent, Form #05.003 .....	179
Requirement for Equal Protection and Equal Treatment, Form #05.033 .....	29
Restored Church of God .....	203

Riker, William (1988) [First published in 1982]. Liberalism Against Populism. Prospect Heights, Illinois, USA: Waveland Press. ISBN 0-88133-367-0.....	30
Rosie O'Donnell.....	49
Ryrie, C. C. (1972). A survey of Bible doctrine. Chicago: Moody Press.....	34
S.R. Driver, "Law (In Old Testament), "in James Hastings, ed., A Dictionary of the Bible, vol. III (New York: Charles Scribner's Sons, 1919), p. 64.....	126, 143
Salvador, Barbera; Jackson, Matthew O. (2004). "Choosing How to Choose: Self-Stable Majority Rules and Constitutions". Quarterly Journal of Economics 119 (3): 1011–1048. doi:10.1162/0033553041502207 .....	30
SEDM About Us Page, Section 9: About Religious Tolerance In This Ministry.....	28
SEDM About Us Page, Sections 1 and 2.....	31
SEDM Disclaimer, Section 9 .....	43
Sheldon Emry Memorial Library .....	52
Sheldon Emry Memorial Library, Pastor Sheldon Emry.....	51
Should Christians Always Obey the State?, Form #13.014.....	202
Sir Francis Dashwood .....	121
Social Security: Mark of the Beast, Form #11.407 .....	112, 182, 191
Socialism: The New American Civil Religion, Form #05.016.....	112, 142, 175, 203
Solicitor General Elena Kagan .....	50
Sorry Mr. Franklin, We're All Democrats Now, Ron Paul.....	31
Sovereignty Education and Defense Ministry (SEDM) .....	203
Spirituality Page, Section 12: Corruption of Christianity, Family Guardian Fellowship .....	203
The American Heritage Dictionary of the English Language: Fourth Edition, 2000. ....	135
The Biblical Doctrine of Hatred, Pastor John Weaver, Item 5.3 .....	75
The Book of the Law, Aleister Crowley.....	121
The Chalcedon Foundation .....	118
The Church in Satan's City, March 20, 2016, Pastor David Jeremiah.....	41
The Crisis of Church Incorporation, Form #13.017 .....	203
The Institutes of Biblical Law, Rousas John Rushdoony, 1973, The Craig Press, Library of Congress Catalog Card Number 72-79485.....	118, 134, 142, 203
The Institutes of Biblical Law, Rousas John Rushdoony, 1973, The Craig Press, Library of Congress Catalog Card Number 72-79485, pp. 4-5 .....	146, 183
The Kiss of Death, Family Guardian Fellowship .....	75
The Marks of Israel, Pastor Sheldon Emry.....	51
The Old Jerusalem is not the New Jerusalem, Pastor Sheldon Emry .....	51
The Oxford Dictionary of World Religions, 1997.....	135
The Satan Controversy, Pastor Sheldon Emry .....	51
The Ten Commandments of the U.S. Government, Family Guardian Fellowship.....	167
The Ten Commandments: Nailed to the Cross or Required for Salvation?.....	115, 203
The TRINITY – Is God three-in-one?.....	113
The Unlimited Liability Universe, Family Guardian Fellowship.....	135
Thomas Jefferson: Notes on Virginia Q.XIV, 1782. ME 2:207 .....	147
Tiberius Caesar.....	147
Trading Away Your Freedom by Foreign Entanglements, John Birch Society .....	41
Tübingen school .....	140
U.S. Supreme Court .....	51, 92
Unvarnished New Testament, 1991, ISBN 0-933999-99-2.....	139
Urban, Hugh. Magia Sexualis: Sex, Magic, and Liberation in Modern Western Esotericism. University of California Press, 2006. ISBN 0520247760.....	130
W.J. Harrelson, "Law in the OT," in The Interpreter's Dictionary of the Bible, (New York: Abingdon Press, 1962), III, 77.....	93, 127, 143
Webster's Ninth New Collegiate Dictionary, 1983, ISBN 0-87779-510-X, p. 1118 .....	79
Webster's Ninth New Collegiate Dictionary, 1983, ISBN 0-87779-510-X, p. 1361 .....	123, 124, 162, 175
Webster's Ninth New Collegiate Dictionary, 1983, ISBN 0-87779-510-X, p. 653 .....	58
Webster's New World Dictionary of the American Language: College Edition 1966 .....	135
What is Mystery Babylon?, Pastor Sheldon Emry .....	52
What is True Conversion?, The Reformed Church of God .....	114
What Pastors and Clergy Need to Know About Government and Taxation, Form #12.006 .....	202

Where Is The Church? ..And Its Incredible History!, Reformed Church of God .....	202
Who Are Israelites, Pastor Sheldon Emry .....	51
Who or What Is the Beast of Revelation?, The Reformed Church of God.....	112
Who Were the Pharisees and Saducees?, Form #05.047 .....	26
Why Domicile and Becoming a “Taxpayer” Require Your Consent, Form #05.002.....	39, 124
Why Most Latter day Saints Are Over paying Their Tithing By 1000s Of Dollars, Mormon Discussion, Inc .....	53
Why No One is Required to File Tax Returns, by William Conklin, 1996, Davidson Press, ISBN 189183391X, p. viii .....	98
Why We Should Obey God’s Law, Pastor Tim Keller .....	51
Wikipedia .....	135
Wikipedia Encyclopedia, 1/5/2009 .....	122
Wikipedia: Majoritarianism, Downloaded 6/20/2016 .....	30
Wood, D. R. W. 1996. New Bible dictionary (3rd ed.) (Page 4). InterVarsity Press: Leicester, England; Downers Grove, Ill .....	69
Zion in America, Sermon 8315b, Pastor Sheldon Emry .....	52
Zion of Bible Prophecy, Pastor C.O. Staklev .....	52

## Scriptures

1 Cor 6:9-10 .....	140
1 Cor. 10:26, 28.....	176
1 Cor. 11:25.....	94, 128, 145
1 Cor. 5:11-13 .....	62
1 Cor. 6:18.....	59, 72
1 Corinthians 11:31 .....	58
1 Corinthians 5:11 .....	140
1 Corinthians 7:10-16.....	140
1 Corinthians 9:20 .....	140
1 Jn. 3:13 .....	70
1 Jn. 4:20 .....	70
1 John 2:11 .....	68
1 John 2:16 .....	131
1 John 2:3-6.....	47, 123
1 John 2:9 .....	68
1 John 3:15 .....	71
1 John 3:4 .....	101, 141
1 John 4:16 .....	48, 75, 122
1 John 4:20 .....	68
1 John 4:8 .....	68, 75, 105
1 John 4:8-16.....	71
1 John 5:3 .....	119, 152
1 John 5:7-8.....	112
1 Ki. 11:5.....	69
1 Kings 11:38 .....	79
1 Kings 11-12.....	168
1 Kings 12:25-33.....	168
1 Kings 14:7-13.....	79
1 Macc 1:14-15.....	136
1 Peter 2:15-17 .....	56
1 Peter 2:5 .....	177, 178
1 Peter 3:7 .....	50
1 Sam. 12:24.....	66
1 Sam. 15:22-28 .....	172
1 Sam. 18:8-9 .....	74
1 Sam. 8:4-8 .....	41, 117, 132
1 Sam. 8:6ff.....	106
1 Thess. 1:10 .....	68

1 Thess. 4:3-6.....	59
1 Thess. 4:9-12.....	151
1 Thess. 5:21-22.....	26, 46
1 Thessalonians 1: 7-9.....	105
1 Thessalonians 4:13-16.....	140
1 Ti 3:6.....	34
1 Tim. 2:8.....	68
1 Tim. 6:10.....	39, 53
1 Timothy 6:16.....	101
1Corinthians 6:1.....	86
1Corinthians 6:7.....	86
1Ti 6:13-15.....	85
2 Chron. 12:12.....	69
2 Chron. 24:18.....	68
2 Chron. 29:8.....	69
2 Chron. 32:24-26.....	69
2 Cor. 5:10.....	69
2 Corinthians 2:11.....	58
2 Corinthians 3:6-17.....	138
2 Ki 17:6.....	81
2 Ki. 16:3.....	69
2 Ki. 23:13.....	69
2 Kings 17:15-18.....	150
2 Kings 17:37.....	91
2 Macc 6:1.....	136
2 Peter 2:1.....	58
2 Peter 2:3.....	45
2 Peter 2:9.....	103
2 Peter 3:13.....	75
2 Peter 3:16.....	137
2 Sa 11:14.....	81
2 Sa 11:26.....	81
2 Sa 12:9.....	82, 158
2 Sa. 13:15.....	69
2 Sa. 13:22.....	69
2 Sa. 22:41.....	69
2 Sam. 11:14-25.....	158
2 Sam. 3:18.....	37
2 Sam. 6:7.....	68
2 Sam. 7:14.....	107
2 Sam. 7:8-9.....	37
2 Samuel Chapters 11 and 12.....	158
2 Thess. 2:1-12.....	2
2 Thess. 2:3-17.....	200
2 Thess. 2:7-12.....	48
2 Thessalonians 2:11.....	59
2 Thessalonians 2:2.....	137
2 Thessalonians 2:3-4.....	59
2 Thessalonians 3:17.....	137
2 Tim. 2:15-17.....	27, 46
2 Tim. 3:16-17.....	27, 67
2 Tim. 4:2-5.....	179
2 Timothy 4:8.....	58
Acts 10:1-48.....	94, 127
Acts 10:9-16.....	137
Acts 11.....	137
Acts 13:33.....	85

Acts 13:39 .....	138
Acts 15:1 .....	136
Acts 15:19-21 .....	136
Acts 15:5 .....	136
Acts 16:1-3 .....	140
Acts 17:16-21 .....	140
Acts 18:12-16 .....	138
Acts 2:38 .....	114
Acts 21:21 .....	138
Acts 24:14 .....	140
Acts 26:19-20 .....	141
Acts 5 .....	87
Acts 5 and 12 .....	88
Acts 5:27-29 .....	85, 157, 172, 174
Acts 6:13-14 .....	136
Adam and Eve .....	99, 198
Am. 6:8 .....	70
Amos 3:3 .....	57
Amos 5:15 .....	66, 73, 75
Apostle Peter .....	96
Apostolic Decree .....	137
Book of Joshua, Chapter 7 .....	84
Christ .....	43
Col. 2:14 .....	111
Col. 2:8-10 .....	27
Col. 3:6 .....	68
Col. 3:8 .....	68
Colossians 2 .....	111
Colossians 2:13-14 .....	138
Colossians 3:5 .....	140, 172
Colossians 4:18 .....	137
Dan 3:12 .....	74
Dan 3:16 .....	83
Dan 6:10 .....	83
Dan 6:16 .....	83
Dan 6:7 .....	83
Daniel 3 .....	88
Daniel 6 .....	87
Daniel 7:24-25 .....	135
Daniel 7:8 .....	136
Deu 17:11 .....	84
Deu 27:26 .....	84, 170
Deut 12:32 .....	81
Deut 17:14 .....	81
Deut 17:18 .....	81
Deut 32:16 .....	72
Deut. 10:11-13 .....	66
Deut. 10:15 .....	35
Deut. 10:20 .....	66
Deut. 13:12-18 .....	73
Deut. 14:22 .....	52
Deut. 14:22-30 .....	52
Deut. 23:18 .....	72
Deut. 27:15 .....	72
Deut. 28:1-14 .....	47
Deut. 29:23 .....	68
Deut. 32:41 .....	74

Deut. 6:13.....	66
Deut. 6:24.....	66
Deut. 7:25.....	72, 73
Deut. 7:26.....	73
Deut. 7:7 f.; 8:17; 9:4-6.....	94, 128, 144
Deuteronomy 10:14.....	98, 131
Deuteronomy 18:1-2.....	78
Deuteronomy 2:3.....	107
Deuteronomy 25:18.....	49
Deuteronomy 28:2.....	153
Deuteronomy 29:28.....	68
Dt. 12:31; 16:22.....	70
Dt. 18:9-14.....	69
Dt. 21:15-17.....	70
Dt. 22:13-16; 24:3.....	69
Dt. 4:42; 19:4, 6, 11.....	69
Dt. 5:9; 7:10.....	69
Ecc 12:13.....	83
Ecc. 9:5.....	55
Eccl. 1:18.....	199
Eccl. 12:13-14.....	67, 77
Eccl. 3:1,8.....	71
Eccl. 3:8.....	71
Eccl. 8:6.....	77
Ecclesiastes 12: 7.....	101
Ecclesiastes 3:1-8.....	67
Ecclesiastes 9: 3-6, 10.....	102
Elijah.....	55
Eph. 1:3, 4:7.....	178
Eph. 2:3; 5:6.....	68
Eph. 2:4-10.....	56
Eph. 4:14.....	46
Eph. 4:31.....	68
Eph. 5:11.....	60
Eph. 5:22-24.....	89
Eph. 5:6.....	68
Eph. 6:12.....	49
Ephesians 2:15.....	139
Ephesians 2:8-10.....	140
Ephesians 5:5.....	140
Ephesians 6:12.....	195
Epistle of James.....	140
Est 3:8.....	81
Esth. 3:5-6.....	74
Esth. 9:1, 9:5.....	74
Esther 3:8-9.....	28
Ex. 1.....	87
Ex. 20:5.....	69
Ex. xix. 5.....	144
Exod. 4:14.....	68
Exodus 17.....	49
Exodus 18:20.....	28, 91
Exodus 2:2-11.....	74
Exodus 20:12-17.....	74, 75
Exodus 20:14.....	72
Exodus 20:2-11.....	75
Exodus 20:3.....	28, 41, 163

Exodus 20:3-11 .....	90
Exodus 20:3-4 .....	152
Exodus 20:3-6 .....	90
Exodus 20:4-5 .....	70
Exodus 23:2.....	150
Exodus 29:8-9 .....	139
Exodus 31:14-17 .....	141
Exodus 32:7-14 .....	68
Exodus 4.....	38
Eze 11:10.....	82
Eze 11:12.....	82
Eze. 8:10-12 .....	90
Ezek. 12:2.....	202
Ezek. 18:4, 20.....	110
Ezek. 35:5-6 .....	74
Ezek. vii. 26.....	143
Ezekiah 11:19-20.....	91
Ezekial 20:10-20 .....	41
Ezekial 28:16.....	42
Ezekiel.....	202
Ezekiel 16:41.....	40
Ezekiel 18:20.....	101
Ezekiel 28: 13-19 .....	105
Ezekiel 28:11–15.....	34
Ezekiel 28:13-19 .....	39
Ezekiel 39:23-24 .....	158
Ezekiel 8:14.....	90
Ezekiel 8:16.....	90
Ezekiel 8:17.....	90
Ezekiel 9:11.....	90
Ezekiel 9:5.....	90
Ezekiel 9:6.....	90
Ezekiel 9:7.....	90
Ezk. 23:28 .....	69
Ezr 4:6.....	82
Ezra 8:21-22 .....	157
First Samuel 8:7-19 .....	88
Gal 5:14.....	75, 118, 151
Gal. 1:7.....	112
Gal. 2:16.....	161
Gal. 5:14.....	74
Gal. 5:20.....	68
Galatians 2:14.....	140
Galatians 2:4.....	138
Galatians 2:6-10 .....	140
Galatians 2:9.....	140
Galatians 3:1-5 .....	138
Galatians 3:23-25 .....	138
Galatians 4:21-31 .....	139
Galatians 4:22-26 .....	139
Galatians 4:30-31 .....	139
Galatians 5:19-21 .....	140
Galatians 5:19–21.....	140
Galatians 5:3.....	140
Galatians 6:11.....	137
Gen 27:41 .....	74
Gen 37:4.....	74

Gen 4:5, 4:8.....	74
Gen. 1:26 ff.; 2:15-17.....	94, 128, 145
Gen. 10:18.....	70
Gen. 13:13.....	70
Gen. 26:24.....	79
Gen. 26:4-5.....	110
Gen. 27:41.....	70
Gen. 3:13.....	121
Gen. 3:22.....	121
Gen. 47:13-26.....	38
Gen. 9:1-17.....	94, 128, 145
Genesis 1 :31- 2:2.....	99
Genesis 1:1.....	99
Genesis 1:26.....	113
Genesis 2:7.....	100
Genesis 26.....	110
Genesis 3:17-19.....	184
Genesis 3:4-5.....	118, 153
Genesis 9.....	137
Gn. 27:41; 37:4f., 8.....	69
Gn. 29:31, 33.....	70
Gn. 43:32.....	69
Gospel of Mark.....	141
Gospel of Matthew.....	141
Heb 1:1-5.....	85
Heb 5:5.....	85
Heb. 1:9.....	70
Heb. 11:1.....	125, 170
Heb. 13:8.....	57
Heb. 2:7-10.....	116
Heb. 9:16,17.....	95, 145
Heb. 9:27.....	69
Hebrews 11.....	87
Hebrews 7:11-28.....	139
Hebrews 7:12.....	139
Hebrews 8:10.....	139
Hebrews 8:13.....	139
Hebrews 8:6.....	138
Hebrews 8:6-7.....	139
Hebrews 8-9.....	139
Hebrews 9:1-5.....	139
Hebrews 9:16, 17.....	94, 145
Hebrews 9:27-28, 10:1.....	118, 151
Ho. 9:15.....	70
Holy Bible.....	124
Holy Trinity.....	32
Hos 4:1.....	83
Hos 8:1.....	83
Hos 8:4.....	83
Hos. 12:7, 8.....	42, 72
Hosea 4:6.....	58, 201
I Cor. 10:3-4.....	57
I John 2:18.....	195
I John 2:4.....	111
I John 3:4.....	110
I John 4:3.....	195
I John 4:8.....	55



I John 4:8, 16.....	115
I John 5.....	111, 113
I John 5:19.....	109
I John 5:3.....	114
I Peter.....	88
I Thes. 4:14.....	55
II Cor. 11:23-27.....	155
II Cor. 11:3.....	113
II Tim. 3:13.....	202
Is 51:12.....	82
Is 51:7.....	82
Is. 1:13.....	69
Is. 61:8.....	70
Isa. 59:2.....	55
Isa. 65:5.....	72
Isa. xxx. 9.....	143
Isaiah 56:1-2.....	157
Isaiah 14:12-21.....	121
Isaiah 14:13-14.....	188
Isaiah 14:4-21.....	104
Isaiah 30:1-3, 8-14.....	199, 201
Isaiah 33:22.....	160, 176
Isaiah 40:15.....	170
Isaiah 40:17.....	170
Isaiah 40:23.....	148
Isaiah 54:11-17.....	156, 160, 176
Isaiah 54:5-6.....	184
Isaiah 59:19.....	59
Isaiah 65:16.....	75
Isaiah 66:22.....	75
Isaiah 66:24.....	104
James 1:21-25.....	78
James 1:22.....	141
James 1:25.....	120, 152
James 1:5.....	200
James 2:10-11.....	140
James 2:14-26.....	140
James 2:17-20.....	62
James 2:8.....	74
James 2:8-9.....	140
James 3:16.....	199
James 4:17.....	119, 152
James 4:4.....	129, 178
Jdg 2:21.....	83
Jdg 3:4.....	83
Jdg. 14:16.....	69
Je. 12:8.....	70
Je. 16:18.....	69
Jer 7:4.....	33
Jer. 13:27.....	72
Jer. 17:9.....	109
Jeremiah 17:5-8.....	160, 161, 170
Jeremiah 2:26-28.....	168
Jeremiah 9:4,5.....	197
Jesus.....	26, 32, 80, 132, 177
Jesus Christ.....	55, 94, 112
Jms. 1:25.....	115

Jms. 2:17-18, 20, 22 .....	56
Jn. 12:25 .....	70
Jn. 15:18-20; 17:14 .....	70
Jn. 15:24 .....	70
Jn. 7:7; 15:18, 24 .....	70
Job 1:6 & 7 .....	100
Job 13:15 .....	155
Job 14: 10-15, 21 .....	102
Job 27:3, 4 .....	101
Joel 2:13 .....	68
Joh 18:37 .....	85
John 10:1 .....	147
John 10:27 .....	76
John 11:10 .....	199
John 12:26 .....	79
John 12:44 .....	35
John 14:15 .....	108, 111, 162
John 14:1-6 .....	75
John 14:21 .....	46, 63, 65, 108, 122, 189
John 14:23 .....	108
John 14:2-3 .....	56
John 14:24 .....	108
John 14:30-31 .....	188
John 14:6 .....	75, 198
John 15:10 .....	108
John 15:16 .....	154
John 15:18 .....	68
John 15:1-8 .....	56
John 15:1-8 .....	76
John 15:18-19 .....	68
John 15:18-25 .....	130
John 15:19 .....	70
John 15:19-21 .....	34
John 15:20 .....	80
John 15:20-21 .....	173
John 15:24-25 .....	68
John 15:4-11 .....	62
John 16:18 .....	70
John 16:2 .....	197
John 17:15 .....	70
John 17:17 .....	198
John 2:13-17 .....	68
John 3:13 .....	55
John 5:30 .....	60, 113
John 5:37 .....	35
John 6:38 .....	35
John 7:24 .....	58, 60, 63
John 7:49 .....	200
John 7:7 .....	68
John 8:34 .....	169
John the Baptist .....	177
Jos. 20:5 .....	69
Joshua 1:2-5 .....	36
Joshua 1:8-9 .....	200
Joshua 7:11-13 .....	84
Jude 7 .....	104
Judg. 11:7 .....	74

Judges 16.....	87
Koran.....	38
Lam. ii. 9 .....	143
Laws of the Bible, Form #13.001 .....	96, 124, 199, 200
Lazarus .....	103
Lev 17-18 .....	137
Lev. 18:21 .....	71
Lev. 18:22 .....	72
Lev. 18:23 .....	72, 73
Lev. 18:29 .....	69, 73
Lev. 19:15 .....	58
Lev. 19:17 .....	68, 71
Lev. 19:18 .....	65, 74
Lev. 20:13 .....	72
Lev. 25:35-43 .....	37, 39
Lev. 25:42 .....	36
Lev. 25:55 .....	36
Leviticus 17 and 20 .....	137
Leviticus 18:20.....	72
Leviticus 18:4.....	91
Leviticus 19:17.....	59
Lk. 14:26 .....	70
Lk. 16:13 .....	70
Lk. 6:22 .....	70
Luk 19:27 .....	85
Luk 20:39 .....	85
Luke 10:18 .....	131
Luke 10:21 .....	91
Luke 11:5-13 .....	77
Luke 12:10 .....	190
Luke 12:35-40.....	77
Luke 12:35-48.....	78
Luke 12:49-53.....	78
Luke 14:26 .....	70
Luke 16:15 .....	72
Luke 16:19-31 .....	103
Luke 17:3 .....	60
Luke 20:22 .....	85
Luke 21:17 .....	70
Luke 22:20 .....	94, 128, 145
Luke 22:42 .....	35
Luke 23:2 .....	88, 96
Luke 6:46 .....	46, 122
Luke 8:21 .....	46
Luke 9:48 .....	35
Lv. 11:10 .....	69
Lv. 18:22 .....	69
Lv. 19:17 .....	69
Lv. 7:18 .....	69
Mal. 1:2 .....	70
Mal. 1:3 .....	71
Mal. 2:16 .....	72
Mal. 3:6 .....	57
Mal. ii. 4 ff .....	143
Malachi 3:8-10 .....	173
Malachi 4:1, 3.....	104
Mar 12:14 .....	85

Mark 1:15	114
Mark 10:42-45	35
Mark 12:14-17	80, 86
Mark 12:29-30	75
Mark 12:31	74, 75
Mark 12:41-44	117, 130
Mark 14:24	94, 128, 145
Mark 2:23-28	141
Mark 3:21	99
Mark 3:29	190
Mark 3:35	74
Mark 5:40	99
Mark 7:21	72
Mark 7:7-9	141
Mark 8:38	98, 99
Mat 22:17	84
Mat 22:18	85
Mat 22:46	85
Mat 25:31-32	85
Mat 28:18	85
Matt 13:13	65
Matt. 10:22	68
Matt. 10:38	76
Matt. 12:32	190
Matt. 12:50	76
Matt. 13:57	99
Matt. 16:18	57
Matt. 16:24	76
Matt. 16:6,11,12	27
Matt. 17:24-27	96
Matt. 17:26	97
Matt. 19:16	108
Matt. 19:17	109
Matt. 19:19	74
Matt. 19:21	76
Matt. 19:28	76
Matt. 20:1-16	77
Matt. 20:25-28	35
Matt. 20:15-16	132
Matt. 22:37-38	163
Matt. 22:39	74
Matt. 23:23	62, 84
Matt. 23:28	48
Matt. 23:8-12	35
Matt. 24:9, 23-25	27
Matt. 25:1-13	77
Matt. 25:14-30	77
Matt. 25:23	79
Matt. 26:28	94, 128, 145
Matt. 26:6-13	117, 130
Matt. 4:8-11	188
Matt. 5:17	58
Matt. 5:17-18	110
Matt. 5:21-22	110
Matt. 5:43	74
Matt. 5:5	55
Matt. 6:19-21	174

Matt. 7:12 .....	39
Matt. 7:21 .....	46, 106, 119, 122, 152
Matt. 7:23 .....	48
Matt. 8:18-20.....	34
Matthew 13:40.....	103
Matthew 13:40-43 .....	141
Matthew 16.....	57
Matthew 20:25-28 .....	89
Matthew 22:15-22 .....	97
Matthew 23:13-36 .....	26
Matthew 25.....	59
Matthew 5.....	110
Matthew 5:17.....	141
Matthew 7:21.....	141
Matthew 7:21-23 .....	141
Matthew Henry’s Commentary on the Whole Bible; Henry, M., 1996, c1991, under Prov. 11:1 .....	42
Mic 6:13 .....	83
Mic 6:16 .....	83
Mk. 13:13 .....	70
Mk. 3:5 .....	70
Mosaic Law .....	135
Moses .....	55, 107, 110
Mt 3:9 .....	33
Mt. 10:37 .....	70
Mt. 12:36 .....	108
Mt. 15 .....	48
Mt. 23:1-3.....	94, 127, 144
Mt. 5:17 .....	93, 127, 144
Mt. 5:43 .....	70
Mt. 6:24.....	70
New King James Version .....	28
Noahide Law .....	137
Nu. 10:35 .....	69
Num 15:15.....	84
Num. 15:30 (NKJV).....	45
Numbers 12:8 .....	79
Numbers 14:24 .....	36, 79
Numbers 14:44 .....	45
Numbers 19:11 .....	101
Obadiah 16 .....	103
Obadiah 3-4.....	130
Parable of the Faithful Servant and the Evil Servant.....	77
Paul.....	62
Paul of Tarsus.....	137
Pauline Epistles .....	135
Peter.....	56
Peterson, E. H. (2005). The Message: the Bible in contemporary language (Php 2:5–11). Colorado Springs, CO: NavPress.....	32, 35
Pharisees.....	33
Phil 2:5-11 .....	32
Philemon 19 .....	137
Pr. 12:22; 20:23 .....	69
Pr. 14:20 .....	69
Pr. 15:8.....	69
Pr. 29:10 .....	69
Pr. 6:16.....	70
Prov. 1:20-33 .....	202

Prov. 1:22 .....	71
Prov. 1:28-29 .....	70
Prov. 1:7 .....	198
Prov. 10:12 .....	68
Prov. 10:18 .....	68
Prov. 10:21 .....	58, 60
Prov. 11:1, 10:10, 20:23 .....	72
Prov. 11:15 .....	71
Prov. 11:23 .....	68
Prov. 11:9 .....	190
Prov. 12:1 .....	71, 75
Prov. 13:110 .....	131
Prov. 13:5 .....	67, 71
Prov. 14:11-12 .....	1
Prov. 14:17 .....	71
Prov. 15:1 .....	71
Prov. 15:10 .....	71, 75
Prov. 15:17 .....	68
Prov. 15:18 .....	71
Prov. 15:26 .....	72
Prov. 15:27 .....	71
Prov. 15:31-32 .....	28, 67
Prov. 15:9 .....	72
Prov. 16:18 .....	131
Prov. 16:18-19 .....	131
Prov. 16:29-30 .....	147
Prov. 16:8 .....	72
Prov. 17:15 .....	72
Prov. 18:17 .....	190
Prov. 19:19 .....	68
Prov. 19:25 .....	62
Prov. 2:6 .....	198
Prov. 20:14 .....	199
Prov. 21:7 .....	60
Prov. 22:4 .....	67
Prov. 23:17 .....	67
Prov. 23:23 .....	198
Prov. 24:25 .....	27, 59, 67
Prov. 26:24 .....	70
Prov. 26:24-26 .....	68
Prov. 26:28 .....	45
Prov. 28:16 .....	71
Prov. 28:22 .....	174
Prov. 28:23 .....	28, 59, 67
Prov. 28:4 .....	91
Prov. 28:9 .....	72, 190, 200, 201
Prov. 29:10 .....	68
Prov. 29:23 .....	131
Prov. 29:27 .....	66
Prov. 29:8 .....	68
Prov. 3:13-15 .....	198
Prov. 3:22, 11:20 .....	72
Prov. 3:32 .....	72
Prov. 3:5-6 .....	200
Prov. 3:9 .....	191
Prov. 31:8-9 .....	58
Prov. 6:16-19 .....	63, 67, 70

Prov. 6:17 .....	71
Prov. 6:18 .....	71
Prov. 6:19 .....	71, 74
Prov. 6:23 .....	62
Prov. 6:9-11 .....	148
Prov. 8:12 .....	198
Prov. 8:13 .....	59, 66, 71, 73, 198
Prov. 8:36 .....	71, 74
Proverbs 1:10-19 .....	148
Proverbs 28:9 .....	91
Proverbs 8:13 .....	67
Proverbs 8:36 .....	105
Ps 50:18 .....	81
Ps 94:20 .....	82
Ps. 101:3; 139:21f.; 119:104, 113 .....	70
Ps. 103:8 .....	68
Ps. 119:104 .....	71
Ps. 119:163 .....	71
Ps. 129:5 .....	69
Ps. 139:21-22 .....	71
Ps. 24:1; 50:12 .....	176
Ps. 25:19 .....	68
Ps. 34:21 .....	69
Ps. 36:19 .....	68
Ps. 45:7 .....	70
Ps. 55:12 .....	69
Psalms 104:29 .....	101
Psalms 104:30 .....	101
Psalms 118 .....	160
Psalms 118:8-9 .....	98, 156, 161, 184
Psalms 119:104 .....	67
Psalms 119:142 .....	198
Psalms 119:155 .....	200
Psalms 119:160 .....	198
Psalms 119:163 .....	67, 71
Psalms 119:9-16 .....	92
Psalms 119:97, 113, 163, 165 .....	74
Psalms 139:21-22 .....	67
Psalms 141:5 .....	27
Psalms 146: 2-4 .....	101, 102
Psalms 146:3 .....	160
Psalms 146:4 .....	55
Psalms 16:11 .....	105
Psalms 19 .....	111
Psalms 19:12-13 .....	45
Psalms 19:7-14 .....	91
Psalms 19:7-8 .....	111
Psalms 2:7 .....	85
Psalms 23 .....	149
Psalms 33:8 .....	66
Psalms 34:21 .....	71
Psalms 37: 10 & 20 .....	103
Psalms 37:11 .....	55
Psalms 45:7 .....	71
Psalms 5:5 .....	66
Psalms 51: 10- 11 .....	105
Psalms 78:49 .....	69

Psalm 9:19-20.....	157
Psalm 94:20-23.....	199
Psalm 97:10.....	63, 66, 71, 73
Rev 11:15.....	85
Rev 19:14.....	85
Rev 2:26-27.....	85
Rev 20:4-6.....	85
Rev. 13:11-18.....	160
Rev. 14:1.....	178
Rev. 16:2.....	193
Rev. 17:1-2.....	89
Rev. 17:5.....	40
Rev. 18:3-8.....	89
Rev. 2:17.....	178
Rev. 2:6.....	70
Rev. 20:11-13.....	55
Rev. 20:11-15.....	77
Rev. 21:1.....	75
Rev. 22:14.....	120, 152
Rev. 22:4.....	178
Rev. 3:12-13.....	77
Rev. 3:14-22.....	50
Rev. 3:18.....	62
Rev. 3:21.....	77
Revelation 12:3-9.....	131
Revelation 16:1-2.....	182
Revelation 17.....	89
Revelation 18:3-8.....	89
Revelation 18:4.....	194
Revelation 18:6-8.....	89
Revelation 19:19.....	182
Revelation 20.....	100
Revelation 20:11-15.....	119, 152
Revelation 20:7-10, 14.....	100
Revelation 20:9.....	104
Revelation 3:19.....	58
Rom. 1:18; 2:5; 2:8; 5:9; 9:22.....	68
Rom. 1:30.....	68
Rom. 12:9.....	68, 71
Rom. 13:1.....	74
Rom. 13:10.....	115
Rom. 13:3-5.....	70, 73
Rom. 13:5.....	74
Rom. 13:7.....	174
Rom. 3:23.....	55, 109
Rom. 5:5.....	114
Rom. 6:23.....	110, 115
Rom. 7:12.....	111
Rom. 7:12, 14.....	115
Rom. 7:18.....	109
Rom. 7:7.....	115
Rom. 8:22-23.....	116
Rom. 8:29.....	116
Rom. 8:7.....	109
Rom. 8:9.....	113, 114
Rom. 9:13.....	70
Romans 1:18.....	68



Romans 10:4.....	139
Romans 12:1-2 .....	80
Romans 12:19.....	68
Romans 12:9.....	66
Romans 13:10.....	74
Romans 13:3-5 .....	73
Romans 13:9.....	62, 74
Romans 14:10.....	69
Romans 14:13.....	60
Romans 16:22.....	137
Romans 2:12–16.....	140
Romans 3:10-12 .....	109
Romans 3:31.....	140
Romans 4:15.....	74
Romans 6.....	138
Romans 6:23.....	89, 118
Romans 7:1-7 .....	139
Romans 7:4.....	139
Romans 8:11.....	116
Satan .....	38, 43, 188, 200
Scofield Reference Bible (Oxford Press) .....	134
Strong's G5056.....	139
Strong's G5498.....	138
Synoptic Gospels.....	135
Ten Commandment .....	140
Ten Commandments .....	51, 66, 94, 110, 115, 159
The New King James Version. 1996, c1982 (Ro 13:3-5). Thomas Nelson: Nashville .....	73
The Open Bible, New King James Version, Thomas Nelson Publishers, Copyright 1997, pp. 340-341 .....	163
Titus 1:10-16 .....	61
Titus 3:3 .....	68
Titus 3:5 .....	132
Torah .....	137, 141
Zec 14:9.....	85
Zechariah.....	33

1                   *"Test all things; hold fast to what is good. Abstain from every form of evil."*  
2                   [1 Thess. 5:21-22, Bible, NKJV]

## 3   **1   Introduction**

4   One of the things that non-believers like to do is criticize the hypocrisy they see in Christianity and use it as an excuse not to  
5   learn more about God or become Christians themselves. In doing so, they look at Christians and say they are hypocrites  
6   because of one of the following:

- 7   1. The Bible contradicts itself.
- 8   2. The Bible advocates violence or murder.
- 9   3. Christians don't live their lives consistent with God's laws.
- 10   4. Christian clergy violate God's laws all the time and set a poor example not only for their congregation, but for humanity  
11   in general.

12   Ironically, these same criticisms are not new. Even Jesus used them against the clerics of His time:

13                   *"But woe to you, scribes and Pharisees, hypocrites! For you shut up the kingdom of heaven against men; for you*  
14                   *neither go in yourselves, nor do you allow those who are entering to go in.*

15                   [...]

16                   ***Woe to you, scribes and Pharisees, hypocrites! For you pay tithes of mint and anise and cummin, and have***  
17                   ***neglected the weightier matters of the law: justice and mercy and faith.** These you ought to have done, without*  
18                   *leaving the others undone.*

19                   [...]

20                   ***Woe to you, scribes and Pharisees, hypocrites! For you are like whitewashed tombs which indeed appear***  
21                   ***beautiful outwardly, but inside are full of dead men's bones and all uncleanness.***

22                   ***Even so, you also outwardly appear righteous to men, but inside you are full of hypocrisy and lawlessness.***

23                   [...]

24                   *Fill up, then, the measure of your fathers' guilt. Serpents, brood of vipers! How can you escape the condemnation*  
25                   *of hell? Therefore, indeed, I send you prophets, wise men, and scribes: some of them you will kill and crucify,*  
26                   *and some of them you will scourge in your synagogues and persecute from city to city, that on you may come all*  
27                   *the righteous blood shed on the earth..."*

28                   [Matthew 23:13-36]

29   For a much more detailed account of who the Pharisees and Saducees were that Jesus criticized and specifically WHY He  
30   criticized them, see:

31   Who Were the Pharisees and Saducees?, Form #05.047 32 <a href="http://sedm.org/Forms/FormIndex.htm">http://sedm.org/Forms/FormIndex.htm</a>
---

33   Many of these criticisms by nonbelievers and even Jesus Himself were and are valid and they undermine the ability of  
34   Christianity to recruit new converts and to retain and motivate the parishioners they already have. Modern Christianity  
35   obviously suffers from many fallacies and delusions about God, about the proper role of Christians in a secular society, and  
36   about the nature of the Bible not as a history book, but a law book which regulates their behavior TODAY. This leads to the  
37   type of "lawlessness" or anarchism that Jesus described above, wherein the Bible is NOT enforced as though it were the law  
38   book that it in fact truly is. These delusions are at the heart of the above criticisms.

39   The aim of this document is therefore to:

- 40   1. Describe and explain the major fallacies, delusions, and flawed arguments found throughout modern American  
41   Christianity.
- 42   2. Prove why they are flawed using scripture and other respected religious authorities.

- 1 3. Provide a substitute way to present and explain our faith that is more consistent with the Bible.
- 2 4. Emphasize the authority and importance of both the New Testament and the Old Testament not only as a history book,
- 3 but as a law book which is pertinent and applicable to our lives today.
- 4 5. Describe the faiths and belief systems that give rise to these fallacies and delusions with the hope of either reforming
- 5 them or avoiding them in order to avoid the reproaches of Christianity described above.
- 6 6. Provide additional resources beyond those contained here that the believer can refer others which address the subject of
- 7 this memorandum more completely.

8 The goal is to enlighten the reader, not to condemn any one faith, pastor, or speaker.

9 It is our hope that this information will also be immediately useful to Christian readers:

- 10 1. In satisfying your biblical calling to learn the truth and follow it:

11 *Then Jesus said to them, "Take heed and beware [investigate] of the leaven [teachings, laws, doctrine, and*  
12 *publications] of the Pharisees [lawyers] and the Sadducees [political leaders]." .... How is it you do not*  
13 *understand that I did not speak to you concerning bread?—but to beware of the leaven of the Pharisees and the*  
14 *Sadducees." Then they understood that He did not tell them to beware [investigate and expose] of the leaven*  
15 *of bread, but of the [false or usurious] doctrine [laws, statutes, and publications] of the Pharisees [lawyers]*  
16 *and Sadducees [political leaders].*  
17 *[Matt. 16:6,11,12, Bible, NKJV]*

18 *"Be diligent to [investigate the truth for yourself and thereby] present yourself [and the public servants who*  
19 *are your fiduciaries and stewards under the Constitution] approved to God, a worker who does not need to be*  
20 *ashamed, rightly dividing the word [and the deeds] of truth. But shun profane babblings [government*  
21 *propaganda, tyranny, and usurpation] for they will increase to more ungodliness. And their message [and*  
22 *their harmful effects] will spread like cancer [to destroy our society and great Republic]."*  
23 *[2 Tim. 2:15-17, Bible, NKJV]*

- 24 2. In finding a church that teaches and obeys the pure truths found in the Bible and does not insert the doctrines of men.

25 *"Beware lest anyone [and especially lawyers and politicians] cheat you through philosophy and empty deceit,*  
26 *according to the tradition of men [including deceptive laws and political and media propaganda], according to*  
27 *the basic [carnal] principles of the world, and not according to Christ, for in Him dwells all the fullness of the*  
28 *Godhead bodily; and you are complete in Him, who is the head of all principality and power."*  
29 *[Col. 2:8-10, Bible, NKJV]*

- 30 3. As a benchmark to gauge whether the pastor of your existing church is deceiving the church elect:

31 *"Watch out that no one deceives you. For many will come in my name, claiming, 'I am the Christ,[a]' and will*  
32 *deceive many.*

33 *[. . .]*

34 *At that time if anyone says to you, 'Look, here is the Christ!' or, 'There he is!' do not believe it. For false Christs*  
35 *and false prophets will appear and perform great signs and miracles to deceive even the elect—if that were*  
36 *possible. See, I have told you ahead of time.*  
37 *[Matt. 24:9, 23-25, Bible, NKJV]*

- 38 4. As a resource to use in rebuking and reproaching false teachings and false teachers in your church:

39 *"All Scripture is given by inspiration of God, and is profitable for doctrine, for reproof, for correction, for*  
40 *instruction in righteousness, that the man of God may be complete, thoroughly equipped for every good work."  
41 *[2 Tim. 3:16-17, Bible, NKJV]**

42 *"Let the [proven] righteous strike me;*  
43 *It shall be a kindness,*  
44 *And let him rebuke me;*  
45 *It shall be as excellent oil;*  
46 *Let my head not refuse it."*  
47 *[Psalm 141:5, Bible, NKJV]*

48 *"But those who rebuke the wicked will have delight, and a good blessing will come upon them."*  
49 *[Prov. 24:25]*

1                   *"The ear that hears the rebukes of life will abide among the wise. He who disdains instruction despises his own*  
2 *soul, but he who heeds rebuke gets understanding."*  
3 *[Prov. 15:31-32, Bible, NKJV]*

4                   *"He who rebukes a man will find more favor afterward than he who flatters with the tongue."*  
5 *[Prov. 28:23]*

- 6 5. As a tool to discern the "legislative intent" of God's holy laws and to conform our life with absolute integrity to His  
7 revealed Sovereign will, the Holy Bible.

8                   *"And thou shalt teach them ordinances and laws [of both [God](#) and [man](#)], and shalt shew them the way wherein*  
9 *they must walk, and the work [of obedience to God] that they must do."*  
10 *[Exodus 18:20, Bible, NKJV]*

- 11 6. As a justification for the proposition that Christians have a Biblical obligation to:  
12 6.1. Govern their own lives under the civil laws of the bible to the exclusion of civil society where that society is in  
13 conflict with God's laws:

14                   *Then Haman said to King Ahasuerus, "There is a certain people scattered and dispersed among the people in all*  
15 *the provinces of your kingdom; their laws are different from all other people's, **and they do not keep the king's***  
16 ***laws.** Therefore it is not fitting for the king to let them remain. If it pleases the king, let a decree be written that*  
17 *they be destroyed, and I will pay ten thousand talents of silver into the hands of those who do the work, to bring*  
18 *it into the king's treasuries."*  
19 *[Esther 3:8-9, Bible, NKJV]*

- 20 6.2. Be politically active.

- 21 6.3. Impose the authority of God's law upon the society they live while serving as jurists and voters.

22                   *"You shall have no other gods [including political rulers, governments, or earthly laws] before Me [or [My](#)*  
23 *[commandments](#)]."*  
24 *[Exodus 20:3, Bible, NKJV]*

- 25 6.4. Become far less passive in tolerating obvious and ongoing corruption within the government and legal profession  
26 because it violates God's laws. This is called "tough love".

27 We emphasize that this document is simply a starting point for peer review and improvement of the educational materials  
28 available through this ministry. Chances are, there are aspects of biblical doctrine that we have overlooked or misconstrued.  
29 We invite the reader and every Member of our ministry to share any additional evidence they feel is appropriate that might  
30 amplify, contradict, or explain the content of this booklet to bring it into faithful conformance with the revealed word of God  
31 found in the Holy Bible.

32 We will approach this discussion from a non-denominational point of view using mainly the New King James Version of the  
33 Holy Bible. SEDM is a non-denominational Christian ministry that relies exclusively on the Bible as its basis for belief. We  
34 do not advocate or represent any one given Christian faith and do not discriminate against other faiths. If you would like to  
35 know about our view of other faiths and our religious tolerance, see:

[SEDM About Us Page](http://sedm.org/AboutUs.htm), Section 9: About Religious Tolerance In This Ministry  
<http://sedm.org/AboutUs.htm>

## 36 **2 The Good, the Bad, and Best Uses of Christianity**

37 The focus of this section is to summarize the good, bad and best uses of Christianity. To establish what those things are, we  
38 rely on a video conference hosted by Emory Law School and posted on Youtube:

[Christianity and Human Flourishing: The Role of Law and Politics](https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=hcvGFdmn3JI), Emory Law School  
<https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=hcvGFdmn3JI>

39 In the above video by some very distinguished theological and legal scholars, David Hempton, The Alonzo L. McDonald  
40 Family Professor of Evangelical Theological Studies, the Lord John Obrien Professor of Divinity, and the Dean of Harvard

1 Divinity School speaks about the good, bad, and best uses of Christianity and how it can promote what he calls “human  
2 flourishing”. He summarizes what these things are as follows:

- 3 1. Religion is at its best when its agenda is about expanding human, protecting the vulnerable, and fighting against  
4 injustice. See Minutes 20-21. Included within the concept of "justice" is equality under REAL law. This approach  
5 relies upon HUMILITY and equality of all in the eyes of the law.
- 6 2. Religion is at its worst when moves to an exclusive and sectarian or moral coercion agenda. See Minutes 21-22.  
7 Charles Dickens called this “trying to make people religious by main force”. This suggests “our tradition has special  
8 privileges and all the rest don’t”. In other words, we are better than you. This would also include "benefits and  
9 privileges and franchises". This results in the abuse of force and legislation to coerce others. Franchises produce  
10 INEQUALITY and therefore conflict. This approach relies on PRIDE, INEQUALITY, and elevation of one person  
11 or group above others. Recall that pride is one of the seven deadly sin and was perhaps Satan’s greatest sin.
- 12 3. The best role for religion is to oppose the use of force in a political or legal context. See Minute 30.

13 For details on the central role of equality and inequality in the above, please read:

Requirement for Equal Protection and Equal Treatment, Form #05.033  
<http://sedm.org/Forms/FormIndex.htm>

14 Equality is such an important subject that the entire French Revolution was fought to secure it, culminating in the national  
15 French mantra:

16 *“Liberty, Equality, Fraternity”*

17 We agree wholeheartedly with the assertions of David Hempton above. He listed some examples of GOOD, POSITIVE  
18 change in society wrought by Christianity as follows:

- 19 1. The separation of church and state. This eliminates conflicts of interest that can cause the abuse of churches as another  
20 extension of state coercion.
- 21 2. The rise of religious toleration and religious equality.
- 22 3. An end of slavery.
- 23 4. Protecting animals from cruelty.
- 24 5. Rolling back forced ecclesiastical taxation.
- 25 6. Pioneering working class education. This equalizes the KNOWLEDGE of all.
- 26 7. Ending inherited privileges of elite established churches. This eliminates inequality in churches between the  
27 parishioners and the clergy.

28 He also listed examples of the BAD, HARMFUL effects of Christianity as follows:

- 29 1. Nasty sectarian anti-Catholicism. This results in some denominations piously enforcing their own superiority over  
30 other sects or religions.
- 31 2. Emboldened moral majoritarianism. In other words, using the will of the majority to enforce their subjective morality  
32 in a political and legal context.
- 33 3. Trying to enforce sabbatarianism, temperance, and the colonial export of Christianity, commerce, and civilization. This  
34 has produced a bitter legacy in the world since. The reason is that it has been abused as a means of foreign conquest,  
35 subjugation, and imperialism.
- 36 4. Moral coercion agenda to use law to force people to become religious by main force.

37 The term “majoritarianism” is interesting, because the definition essentially describes a totalitarian democracy in which the  
38 will of the majority is unrestrained by the organic or fundamental law or even the religious dogmas of that society:

39 **Majoritarianism**

40 *Majoritarianism is a traditional [political philosophy](#) or agenda that asserts that a [majority](#) (sometimes  
41 categorized by [religion](#), [language](#), [social class](#), or some other identifying factor) of the population is entitled to a  
42 certain degree of primacy in society, and has the right to make decisions that affect the society. This traditional*

1 view has come under growing criticism and democracies have increasingly included constraints in what the  
2 parliamentary majority can do, in order to protect citizens' fundamental rights.<sup>1</sup>

### 3 **Concept in depth**

4 Advocates of majoritarianism argue that majority decision making is intrinsically democratic and that any  
5 restriction on majority decision making is intrinsically undemocratic. If democracy is restricted by a constitution  
6 which cannot be changed by a simple majority decision then yesterday's majority is being given more weight than  
7 today's. If it is restricted by some small group, such as aristocrats, judges, priests, soldiers, or philosophers, then  
8 society becomes an oligarchy. The only restriction acceptable in a majoritarian system is that a current majority  
9 has no right to prevent a different majority emerging in the future (this could happen, for example, if a minority  
10 persuades enough of the majority to change its position). In particular, a majority cannot exclude a minority from  
11 future participation in the democratic process. Majoritarianism does not prohibit a decision being made by  
12 representatives as long as this decision is made via majority rule, as it can be altered at any time by any different  
13 majority emerging in the future.

14 One critique of majoritarianism is that systems without supermajority requirements for changing the rules for  
15 voting can be shown to likely be unstable.<sup>2</sup> Among other critiques of majoritarianism is that most decisions in  
16 fact take place not by majority rule, but by plurality, unless the voting system artificially restricts candidates or  
17 options to two only.<sup>3</sup> In turn, due to Arrow's paradox, it is not possible to have plurality voting systems with more  
18 than two options that retain adherence to both certain "fairness" criteria and rational decision-making criteria."  
19 [Wikipedia: Majoritarianism, Downloaded 6/20/2016;SOURCE:  
20 <https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Majoritarianism>]

21 The Family Guardian Fellowship sister site describes our relationship to democracy as a political system as follows:

22 About Us Page  
23 Section 1: Mission Statement

24 Like our founding fathers (see Federalist Paper #10), we also oppose pure democracy, and instead endorse a  
25 "republican form of government", whereby the will of the majority during elections is strictly limited by a Bill of  
26 Rights that sets boundaries on what the majority can impose on the minority. Below is what our Founding Father  
27 said on this subject as part of Federalist Paper #10:

28 "If a faction consists of less than a majority, relief is supplied by the republican principle,  
29 which enables the majority to defeat its sinister views by regular vote. It may clog the  
30 administration, it may convulse the society; but it will be unable to execute and mask its  
31 violence under the forms of the Constitution. When a majority is included in a faction, the  
32 form of popular government, on the other hand, enables it to sacrifice to its ruling passion  
33 or interest both the public good and the rights of other citizens. To secure the public good  
34 and private rights against the danger of such a faction, and at the same time to preserve  
35 the spirit and the form of popular government, is then the great object to which our  
36 inquiries are directed. Let me add that it is the great desideratum by which this form of  
37 government can be rescued from the opprobrium under which it has so long labored, and  
38 be recommended to the esteem and adoption of mankind.

39 By what means is this object attainable? Evidently by one of two only. Either the existence  
40 of the same passion or interest in a majority at the same time must be prevented, or the  
41 majority, having such coexistent passion or interest, must be rendered, by their number  
42 and local situation, unable to concert and carry into effect schemes of oppression. If the  
43 impulse and the opportunity be suffered to coincide, we well know that neither moral nor  
44 religious motives can be relied on as an adequate control. They are not found to be such  
45 on the injustice and violence of individuals, and lose their efficacy in proportion to the  
46 number combined together, that is, in proportion as their efficacy becomes needful.

47 From this view of the subject it may be concluded that a pure democracy, by which I mean  
48 a society consisting of a small number of citizens, who assemble and administer the  
49 government in person, can admit of no cure for the mischiefs of faction. A common passion  
50 or interest will, in almost every case, be felt by a majority of the whole; a communication  
51 and concert result from the form of government itself; and there is nothing to check the  
52 inducements to sacrifice the weaker party or an obnoxious individual. Hence it is that such

---

<sup>1</sup> A Przeworski, JM Maravall, I NetLibrary Democracy and the Rule of Law (2003) p. 223

<sup>2</sup> Salvador, Barbera; Jackson, Matthew O. (2004). "Choosing How to Choose: Self-Stable Majority Rules and Constitutions". Quarterly Journal of Economics **119** (3): 1011–1048. doi:10.1162/0033553041502207.

<sup>3</sup> Riker, William (1988) [First published in 1982]. Liberalism Against Populism. Prospect Heights, Illinois, USA: Waveland Press. ISBN 0-88133-367-0.

1 democracies have ever been spectacles of turbulence and contention; have ever been found  
2 incompatible with personal security or the rights of property; and have in general been as  
3 short in their lives as they have been violent in their deaths. Theoretic politicians, who have  
4 patronized this species of government, have erroneously supposed that by reducing  
5 mankind to a perfect equality in their political rights, they would, at the same time, be  
6 perfectly equalized and assimilated in their possessions, their opinions, and their passions.

7 A republic, by which I mean a government in which the scheme of representation takes  
8 place, opens a different prospect, and promises the cure for which we are seeking. Let us  
9 examine the points in which it varies from pure democracy, and we shall comprehend both  
10 the nature of the cure and the efficacy which it must derive from the Union.

11 The two great points of difference between a democracy and a republic are: first, the  
12 delegation of the government, in the latter, to a small number of citizens elected by the rest;  
13 secondly, the greater number of citizens, and greater sphere of country, over which the  
14 latter may be extended.  
15 [[Federalist Paper #10, James Madison](#)]

16 The chief weaknesses of democracy that Madison predicted and explained above were insightfully summarized  
17 below:

18 "A Democracy cannot exist as a permanent form of government It can only exist until the  
19 voters discover that they can vote themselves largesse from the public treasury [[socialism](#)  
20 (OFFSITE LINK)]. From that moment on the majority always vote for the candidates  
21 promising the most benefits from the public treasury, with the result that a Democracy  
22 always collapses over loose fiscal policy, always followed by a dictatorship. The average  
23 age of the worlds greatest civilizations has been two hundred years. These nations have  
24 progressed through this sequence: From bondage to spiritual faith; from spiritual faith to  
25 great courage; from courage to liberty; from liberty to abundance; from abundance to  
26 selfishness; from selfishness to complacency; from complacency to apathy; from apathy to  
27 dependence; from dependency back again into bondage."  
28 [Alexander Fraser Tytler]

29 Congressman Ron Paul also demonstrated how this deficient democratic political model has corrupted and will  
30 eventually destroy our once great Republic in his wonderful article at the address below:

[Sorry Mr. Franklin, We're All Democrats Now, Ron Paul](#)  
<http://famguardian.org/Subjects/Politics/Corruption/RonPaul-030129.htm>

31 [The predictable and steady erosion we have seen in our country over the last 50 years](#) has been a direct result of  
32 the excesses and defects of a totalitarian democratic system, which has steadily undermined and encroached upon  
33 the role of the [Bill of Rights](#) and the [Separation of Powers Doctrine](#) in the protection of our liberties and God-  
34 given rights.

35 "The very purpose of a [Bill of Rights](#) was to withdraw certain subjects from the vicissitudes  
36 of political controversy, to place them beyond the reach of majorities and officials and to  
37 establish them as legal principles to be applied by the courts. One's [right](#) to life, liberty,  
38 and property, to free speech, a free press, freedom of worship and assembly, and other  
39 fundamental rights may not be submitted to vote; they depend on the outcome of no  
40 elections."  
41 [West Virginia Bd. of Ed. v Barnett, [319 U.S. 624](#), 638 (1943)]

42 [About Us Page, Family Guardian Fellowship, SOURCE: <http://famguardian.org/Ministry/aboutus.htm>]

43 Consistent with his comments about the BEST uses of Christianity, the Mission Statement of this ministry seeks EXACTLY  
44 what he suggests. Read for yourself:

[SEDM About Us Page](#), Sections 1 and 2  
<http://sedm.org/Ministry/AboutUs.htm>

45 The following subsections delve deeper into the GOOD and BAD uses of Christianity and the origin of specifically what  
46 makes them Good and Bad, discussed from the viewpoint of the archetype of both.

## 2.1 THE GOOD: Jesus refused a domicile, refused to participate in all human franchises, benefits, and privileges, and refused the “civil status” that made them possible<sup>4</sup>

Jesus definitely participated in God’s franchise, being a member of the Holy Trinity. However, he refused to participate in human franchises. It may interest the reader to learn that Jesus had NO civil status under man’s law and refused to participate in any government “benefit”, franchise, or privilege:

### The Humbled and Exalted Christ

*“Let this mind be in you which was also in Christ Jesus, who, being in the form of God, did not consider it robbery to be equal with God, but made Himself of no reputation, taking the form of a bondservant, and coming in the likeness of men. And being found in appearance as a man, He humbled Himself and became obedient to the point of death, even the death of the cross. Therefore God also has highly exalted Him and given Him the name which is above every name, that at the name of Jesus every knee should bow, of those in heaven, and of those on earth, and of those under the earth, and that every tongue should confess that Jesus Christ is Lord, to the glory of God the Father.”*

*[Phil 2:5-11, Bible, NKJV]*

Below is a famous Bible commentary on the above passage:

*“Think of yourselves the way Christ Jesus thought of himself. He had equal status with God but didn’t think so much of himself that he had to cling to the advantages of that status no matter what. Not at all. When the time came, he set aside the privileges of deity and took on the status of a slave, became human! Having become human, he stayed human. It was an incredibly humbling process. He didn’t claim special privileges. Instead, he lived a selfless, obedient life and then died a selfless, obedient death—and the worst kind of death at that—a crucifixion.”*

*“Because of that obedience, God lifted him high and honored him far beyond anyone or anything, ever, so that all created beings in heaven and on earth—even those long ago dead and buried—will bow in worship before this Jesus Christ, and call out in praise that he is the Master of all, to the glorious honor of God the Father.”*

*[Peterson, E. H. (2005). The Message: the Bible in contemporary language (Php 2:5–11). Colorado Springs, CO: NavPress]*

Below is a summary of lessons learned from the above amplified version of the same passage, put into the context of privileges, civil status, and franchises:

1. Jesus forsook having a civil status and the privileges and franchises of the Kingdom of Heaven franchise that made that status possible.
2. He instead chose a civil status lower for Himself than other mere humans below him in status.
3. BECAUSE He forsook the “benefits”, privileges, and franchises associated with the civil status of “God” while here on earth, he was blessed beyond all measure by God.

Moral of the Story: We can only be blessed by God if we do not seek to use benefits, privileges, and franchises to elevate ourself above anyone else or to pursue a civil status above others.

*“Pure and undefiled religion before God and the Father is this: to visit orphans and widows in their trouble, and to keep oneself unspotted [“foreign”, “sovereign”, and/or “alien”] from the world [and the corrupt BEAST governments and rulers of the world].”*

*[James 1:27, Bible, NKJV]*

One cannot be “unspotted from the world” without surrendering and not pursuing any and all HUMAN civil statuses, franchises, or benefits. Those who are Christians, however, cannot avoid the privileged status and office of “Christian” under God’s laws.

The OPPOSITE of being “unspotted from the world” is the following. The pursuit of government “benefits” or the civil status that makes them possible is synonymous with the phrase “your desire for pleasure” in the following passage.

*“Where do wars and fights come from among you? Do they not come from your desires for pleasure [unearned money or “benefits”, privileges, or franchises, from the government] that war in your members [and your*

<sup>4</sup> Source: *Government Instituted Slavery Using Franchises*, Form #05.030, Section 2.15; <http://sedm.org/Forms/FormIndex.htm>.



1 democratic governments]? You lust [after other people's money] and do not have. You murder [the unborn to  
2 increase your standard of living] and covet [the unearned] and cannot obtain [except by empowering your  
3 government to STEAL for you!]. You fight and war [against the rich and the nontaxpayers to subsidize your  
4 idleness]. Yet you do not have because you do not ask [the Lord, but instead ask the deceitful government]. You  
5 ask and do not receive, because you ask amiss, that you may spend it on your pleasures. Adulterers and  
6 adulteresses! Do you not know that **friendship [statutory "citizenship"] with the world [for the governments of**  
7 **the world] is enmity with God?** Whoever therefore wants to be a friend [STATUTORY "citizen", "resident",  
8 "inhabitant", "person" franchisee] of the world [or the governments of the world] makes himself an enemy of  
9 God."  
10 [[James 4:4](#), Bible, NKJV]

11 The personification of those who did the OPPOSITE of Jesus and pursued civil status, rewards, benefits, privileges, and  
12 franchises were the Pharisees, and these people were the ONLY people Jesus got mad at. Here's what He said about them in  
13 one of his very few angry tirades. Back then, they had a theocracy and the Bible was their law book, so the term "religion  
14 scholars" meant the lawyers of that time, not the pastors of today's time.

15 *I've had it with you! You're hopeless, you religion scholars, you Pharisees! Frauds! Your lives are roadblocks to*  
16 *God's kingdom. You refuse to enter, and won't let anyone else in either.*

17 *"You're hopeless, you religion scholars and Pharisees! Frauds! You go halfway around the world to make a*  
18 *convert, but once you get him you make him into a replica of yourselves, double-damned.*

19 *"You're hopeless! What arrogant stupidity! You say, 'If someone makes a promise with his fingers crossed, that's*  
20 *nothing; but if he swears with his hand on the Bible, that's serious.' What ignorance! Does the leather on the*  
21 *Bible carry more weight than the skin on your hands? And what about this piece of trivia: 'If you shake hands on*  
22 *a promise, that's nothing; but if you raise your hand that God is your witness, that's serious'? What ridiculous*  
23 *hairsplitting! What difference does it make whether you shake hands or raise hands? A promise is a promise.*  
24 *What difference does it make if you make your promise inside or outside a house of worship? A promise is a*  
25 *promise. God is present, watching and holding you to account regardless.*

26 *"You're hopeless, you religion scholars and Pharisees! Frauds! You keep meticulous account books, tithing on*  
27 *every nickel and dime you get, but on the meat of God's Law, things like fairness and compassion and*  
28 *commitment—the absolute basics!—you carelessly take it or leave it. Careful bookkeeping is commendable, but*  
29 *the basics are required. Do you have any idea how silly you look, writing a life story that's wrong from start to*  
30 *finish, nitpicking over commas and semicolons?*

31 *"You're hopeless, you religion scholars and Pharisees! Frauds! You burnish the surface of your cups and bowls*  
32 *so they sparkle in the sun, while the insides are maggoty with your greed and gluttony. Stupid Pharisee! Scour*  
33 *the insides, and then the gleaming surface will mean something.*

34 *"You're hopeless, you religion scholars and Pharisees! Frauds! You're like manicured grave plots, grass clipped*  
35 *and the flowers bright, but six feet down it's all rotting bones and worm-eaten flesh. People look at you and think*  
36 *you're saints, but beneath the skin you're total frauds.*

37 *"You're hopeless, you religion scholars and Pharisees! Frauds! You build granite tombs for your prophets and*  
38 *marble monuments for your saints. And you say that if you had lived in the days of your ancestors, no blood would*  
39 *have been on your hands. You protest too much! You're cut from the same cloth as those murderers, and daily*  
40 *add to the death count.*

41 *"Snakes! Reptilian sneaks! Do you think you can worm your way out of this? Never have to pay the piper? It's*  
42 *on account of people like you that I send prophets and wise guides and scholars generation after generation—*  
43 *and generation after generation you treat them like dirt, greeting them with lynch mobs, hounding them with*  
44 *abuse.*

45 *"You can't squirm out of this: Every drop of righteous blood ever spilled on this earth, beginning with the blood*  
46 *of that good man Abel right down to the blood of Zechariah, Barachiah's son, whom you murdered at his prayers,*  
47 *is on your head. All this, I'm telling you, is coming down on you, on your generation.*

48 *"Jerusalem! Jerusalem! Murderer of prophets! Killer of the ones who brought you God's news! How often I've*  
49 *ached to embrace your children, the way a hen gathers her chicks under her wings, and you wouldn't let me. And*  
50 *now you're so desolate, nothing but a ghost town. What is there left to say? Only this: I'm out of here soon. The*  
51 *next time you see me you'll say, 'Oh, God has blessed him! He's come, bringing God's rule!'"*  
52 *[Peterson, E. H. (2005). The Message: the Bible in contemporary language (Mt 23:13–39). Colorado Springs,*  
53 *CO: NavPress.]*

54 Keep in mind that the term "hypocrite" is defined in the following passages as "trusting in privileges", meaning franchises:  
55 Jer 7:4; Mt 3:9.

1 Jesus kept Himself unspotted from the world by not choosing a domicile there. The phrase “nowhere to lay His head” in the  
2 following passage is synonymous with a legal home or domicile.

3 **The Cost of Discipleship**

4 *And when Jesus saw great multitudes about Him, He gave a command to depart to the other side. Then a certain*  
5 *scribe came and said to Him, “Teacher, I will follow You wherever You go.”*

6 *And Jesus said to him, “**Foxes have holes and birds of the air have nests, but the Son of Man has nowhere to***  
7 ***lay His head.**”*

8 *[Matt. 8:18-20, Bible, NKJV]*  
9

10 *“If you were of the world, the world would love its own. **Yet because you are not of [domiciled within] the world,***  
11 ***but I [Jesus] chose you [believers] out of the world, therefore the world hates you.** Remember the word that I*  
12 *said to you, ‘A [public] servant is not greater than his [Sovereign] master.’ If they persecuted Me, they will also*  
13 *persecute you. If they kept My word, they will keep yours also [as trustees of the public trust]. But all these*  
14 *things they will do to you for My name’s sake, because they do not know Him [God] who sent Me.”*  
15 *[Jesus in John 15:19-21, Bible, NKJV]*

16 It is perhaps because of the content of this section that Jesus was widely regarded as an “anarchist”. See:

*Jesus Is An Anarchist*, James Redford  
<http://famguardian.org/Subjects/Spirituality/ChurchvState/JesusAnarchist.htm>

17 **2.2 THE BAD: Satan’s greatest sin was abusing “privileges” and “franchises” to make himself**  
18 **equal to or above God<sup>5</sup>**

19 In the previous section, we showed how Christ refused privileges, benefits, and franchises and insisted on equality towards  
20 every other human. In this chapter, we compare that approach to Satan’s approach. It should interest the Christian reader to  
21 know that Satan’s greatest sin in the Bible was to abuse the “privileges” and therefore franchises bestowed by God to try to  
22 elevate himself to an equal or superior relation to God. By doing so, he insisted on being above every other creation of God,  
23 including humans. He did this out of pride, vanity, conceit, and covetousness.

24 Satan abused the “benefits” of the Bible franchise to try to become superior rather than remain equal to all other humans or  
25 believers. Below is what one commentary amazingly says on the subject:

26 **WHAT WAS SATAN’S SIN?**

27 ***Satan’s sin was done from a privileged position. He was not a deprived creature who had not drunk deeply of***  
28 ***the blessings of God before he sinned. Indeed, Ezekiel 28:11–15 declares some astounding things about the***  
29 ***privileged position in which he sinned.** That this passage has Satan in view seems most likely if one eliminates*  
30 *the idea that it is a mythical tale of heathen origin and if one takes the language at all plainly and not merely as*  
31 *filled with Oriental exaggerations. **Ezekiel “saw the work and activity of Satan, whom the king of Tyre was***  
32 ***emulating in so many ways.” Satan’s privileges included (1) full measure of wisdom (v. 12), (2) perfection in***  
33 ***beauty (v. 12), (3) dazzling appearance (v. 13), (4) a place of special prominence as the anointed cherub that***  
34 ***covered God’s throne (v. 14).** Verse 15 (ASV) says all that the Bible says about the origin of sin—“till*  
35 *unrighteousness was found in thee.” It is clear, however, that Satan was not created as an evil being, for the verse*  
36 *clearly declares he was perfect when created. Furthermore, God did not make him sin; he sinned of his own*  
37 *volition and assumed full responsibility for that sin; and because of his great privileges, it is obvious that Satan*  
38 *sinned with full knowledge.*

39 ***Satan’s sin was pride (1 Ti 3:6).** The specific details of how that pride erupted are given in Isaiah 14:13–14 and*  
40 *are summarized in the assertion, “I will be like the most High” (v. 14).*  
41 *[Ryrie, C. C. (1972). A survey of Bible doctrine. Chicago: Moody Press]*

42 Christ’s greatest glory, on the other hand, was to do the OPPOSITE of Satan in this regard:

<sup>5</sup> Source: *Government Instituted Slavery Using Franchises*, Form #05.030, Section 2.16; <http://sedm.org/Forms/FormIndex.htm>.

1 1. Jesus made his own desires and flesh “invisible” and became an agent and fiduciary of God 24 hours a day, 7 days a  
2 week:

3 ““Whoever receives this little child in My name receives Me; and whoever receives Me receives Him who sent  
4 Me. For he who is least among you all will be great.””  
5 [Luke 9:48, Bible, NKJV]

6 “Father, if it is Your will, take this cup away from Me; nevertheless not My will, but Yours, be done.”  
7 [Luke 22:42, Bible, NKJV]

8 “And the Father Himself, who sent Me, has testified of Me. You have neither heard His voice at any time, nor  
9 seen His form.”  
10 [John 5:37, Bible, NKJV]

11 “For I have come down from heaven, not to do My own will, but the will of Him who sent Me.”  
12 [John 6:38, Bible, NKJV]

13 “Then Jesus cried out and said, “He who believes in Me, believes not in Me but in Him who sent Me.”  
14 [John 12:44, Bible, NKJV]

15 2. Jesus did NOT abuse the “privileges”, “franchises”, or “benefits” of God to elevate himself in importance or “rights”  
16 either above any other human or above God:

17 “Think of yourselves the way Christ Jesus thought of himself. He had equal status with God but didn’t think so  
18 much of himself that he had to cling to the advantages of that status no matter what. Not at all. When the time  
19 came, he set aside the privileges of deity and took on the status of a slave, became human! Having become  
20 human, he stayed human. It was an incredibly humbling process. He didn’t claim special privileges. Instead,  
21 he lived a selfless, obedient life and then died a selfless, obedient death—and the worst kind of death at that—  
22 a crucifixion.”

23 “Because of that obedience, God lifted him high and honored him far beyond anyone or anything, ever, so that  
24 all created beings in heaven and on earth—even those long ago dead and buried—will bow in worship before  
25 this Jesus Christ, and call out in praise that he is the Master of all, to the glorious honor of God the Father.”  
26 [Peterson, E. H. (2005). The Message: the Bible in contemporary language (Php 2:5–11). Colorado Springs, CO:  
27 NavPress]

28 Basically, Jesus had a servant’s heart and required the same heart of all those who intend to lead others in government:

29 “But you, do not be called ‘Rabbi’; for One is your Teacher, the Christ, and you are all brethren. Do not call  
30 anyone on earth your father; for One is your Father, He who is in heaven. And do not be called teachers; for One  
31 is your Teacher, the Christ. But he who is greatest among you shall be your servant. And whoever exalts  
32 himself will be humbled, and he who humbles himself will be exalted”.  
33 [Jesus in Matt. 23:8-12, Bible, NKJV]

34 But Jesus called them to Himself and said to them, “You know that those who are considered rulers over the  
35 Gentiles lord it over them, and their great ones exercise authority over them. Yet it shall not be so among you;  
36 but whoever desires to become great among you shall be your servant. And whoever of you desires to be first  
37 shall be slave of all. For even the Son of Man did not come to be served, but to serve, and to give His life a  
38 ransom for many.”  
39 [Mark 10:42–45, Bible, NKJV. See also Matt. 20:25-28]

40 Those in government who follow the above admonition in fact are implementing what the U.S. Supreme Court called “a  
41 society of law and not men” in Marbury v. Madison. The law is the will of the people in written form. Those who put that  
42 law above their own self-interest and execute it faithfully are:

- 43 1. Agents and/or officers of We the People.
- 44 2. “Trustees” and managers over God’s property. The entire Earth belongs to the Lord, according to the Bible.<sup>6</sup>
- 45 3. Acting in a fiduciary duty towards those who have entrusted them with power.

<sup>6</sup> “Indeed heaven and the highest heavens belong to the LORD your God, also the earth with all that is in it.” [Deut. 10:15, Bible, NKJV]

1 "As expressed otherwise, the powers delegated to a public officer are held in trust for the people and are to be  
2 exercised in behalf of the government or of all citizens who may need the intervention of the officer. <sup>7</sup>  
3 **Furthermore, the view has been expressed that all public officers, within whatever branch and whatever level**  
4 **of government, and whatever be their private vocations, are trustees of the people, and accordingly labor under**  
5 **every disability and prohibition imposed by law upon trustees relative to the making of personal financial gain**  
6 **from a discharge of their trusts. <sup>8</sup> That is, a public officer occupies a fiduciary relationship to the political**  
7 **entity on whose behalf he or she serves. <sup>9</sup> and owes a fiduciary duty to the public. <sup>10</sup> It has been said that the**  
8 **fiduciary responsibilities of a public officer cannot be less than those of a private individual. <sup>11</sup> Furthermore,**  
9 **it has been stated that any enterprise undertaken by the public official which tends to weaken public confidence**  
10 **and undermine the sense of security for individual [PRIVATE] rights is against public policy. <sup>12</sup>**  
11 [63C American Jurisprudence 2d, Public Officers and Employees, §247 (1999)]

- 12 4. Implementing a "covenant" or "contract" or "social compact" between them and the people. All civil and common law  
13 is based on compact.<sup>13</sup>
- 14 5. "Creatures [CREATIONS] of the law" as the U.S. Supreme Court calls them.<sup>14</sup>
- 15 6. Violating their oath and/or covenant if they use the property or rights they are managing or protecting for any aspect of  
16 private gain. In fact, 18 U.S.C. §208 makes it a crime to preside over a matter that you have a financial conflict of  
17 interest in.

18 All of the people in the Bible that God got most excited about were doing the above. There are many verses like those below:

- 19 1. Lev. 25:42:

20 "**For they are My servants**, whom I brought out of the land of Egypt; they shall not be sold as slaves."

- 21 2. Lev. 25:55:

22 "**For the children of Israel are servants to Me; they are My servants** whom I brought out of the land of Egypt:  
23 I am the LORD your God."

- 24 3. Numbers 14:24:

25 "**But My servant Caleb**, because he has a different spirit in him and has followed Me fully, I will bring into the  
26 land where he went, and his descendants shall inherit it."

- 27 4. Joshua 1:2-5:

28 "**Moses My servant** is dead. Now therefore, arise, go over this Jordan, you and all this people, to the land which  
29 I am giving to them—the children of Israel. Every place that the sole of your foot will tread upon I have given  
30 you, as I said to Moses. From the wilderness and this Lebanon as far as the great river, the River Euphrates, all  
31 the land of the Hittites, and to the Great Sea toward the going down of the sun, shall be your territory. No man

<sup>7</sup> State ex rel. Nagle v. Sullivan, 98 Mont. 425, 40 P.2d. 995, 99 A.L.R. 321; Jersey City v. Hague, 18 N.J. 584, 115 A.2d. 8.

<sup>8</sup> Georgia Dep't of Human Resources v. Sistrunk, 249 Ga. 543, 291 S.E.2d. 524. A public official is held in public trust. Madlener v. Finley (1st Dist), 161 Ill.App.3d. 796, 113 Ill.Dec. 712, 515 N.E.2d. 697, app gr 117 Ill.Dec. 226, 520 N.E.2d. 387 and revd on other grounds 128 Ill.2d. 147, 131 Ill.Dec. 145, 538 N.E.2d. 520.

<sup>9</sup> Chicago Park Dist. v. Kenroy, Inc., 78 Ill.2d. 555, 37 Ill.Dec. 291, 402 N.E.2d. 181, appeal after remand (1st Dist) 107 Ill.App.3d. 222, 63 Ill.Dec. 134, 437 N.E.2d. 783.

<sup>10</sup> United States v. Holzer (CA7 Ill), 816 F.2d. 304 and vacated, remanded on other grounds 484 U.S. 807, 98 L.Ed. 2d 18, 108 S.Ct. 53, on remand (CA7 Ill) 840 F.2d. 1343, cert den 486 U.S. 1035, 100 L.Ed. 2d 608, 108 S.Ct. 2022 and (criticized on other grounds by United States v. Osser (CA3 Pa) 864 F.2d. 1056) and (superseded by statute on other grounds as stated in United States v. Little (CA5 Miss) 889 F.2d. 1367) and (among conflicting authorities on other grounds noted in United States v. Boylan (CA1 Mass), 898 F.2d. 230, 29 Fed.Rules.Evid.Serv. 1223).

<sup>11</sup> Chicago ex rel. Cohen v. Keane, 64 Ill.2d. 559, 2 Ill.Dec. 285, 357 N.E.2d. 452, later proceeding (1st Dist) 105 Ill.App.3d. 298, 61 Ill.Dec. 172, 434 N.E.2d. 325.

<sup>12</sup> Indiana State Ethics Comm'n v. Nelson (Ind App), 656 N.E.2d. 1172, reh gr (Ind App) 659 N.E.2d. 260, reh den (Jan 24, 1996) and transfer den (May 28, 1996).

<sup>13</sup> "**A body politic," as aptly defined in the preamble of the Constitution of Massachusetts, "is a social compact by which the whole people covenants with each citizen, and each citizen with the whole people, that all shall be governed by certain laws for the common good."** [United States v. Winstar Corp. 518 U.S. 839 (1996) ]

<sup>14</sup> "No man in this country is so high that he is above the law. No officer of the law may set that law at defiance with impunity. All the officers of the government, from the highest to the lowest, are **creatures of the law**, and are bound to obey it." [United States v. Lee, 106 U. S., at 220]

1 shall be able to stand before you all the days of your life; as I was with Moses, so I will be with you. I will not  
2 leave you nor forsake you. “

3 5. 2 Sam. 3:18:

4 “Now then, do it! For the LORD has spoken of David, saying, ‘By the hand of **My servant David**, I will save My  
5 people Israel from the hand of the Philistines and the hand of all their enemies.’”

6 6. 2 Sam. 7:8-9:

7 “Now therefore, thus shall you say to **My servant David**, ‘Thus says the LORD of hosts: “I took you from the  
8 sheepfold, from following the sheep, to be ruler over My people, over Israel. And I have been with you wherever  
9 you have gone, and have cut off all your enemies from before you, and have made you a great name, like the name  
10 of the great men who are on the earth.”’

11 God also said that you shall NOT abuse your power or commerce generally to enslave or coerce anyone:

12 **‘If one of your brethren becomes poor [desperate], and falls into poverty among you, then you shall help him,**  
13 **like a stranger or a sojourner, that he may live with you.**

14 **Take no usury or interest from him;** but fear your God, that your brother may live with you.

15 **You shall not lend him your money for usury, nor lend him your food at a profit.**

16 I am the LORD your God, who brought you out of the land of Egypt, to give you the land of Canaan and to be your  
17 God.

18 **‘And if one of your brethren who dwells by you becomes poor, and sells himself to you, you shall not compel**  
19 **him to serve as a slave.**

20 As a hired servant and a sojourner he shall be with you, and shall serve you until the Year of Jubilee.

21 And then he shall depart from you—he and his children with him—and shall return to his own family. He shall  
22 return to the possession of his fathers.

23 **For they are My servants, whom I brought out of the land of Egypt; they shall not be sold as slaves.**

24 You shall not rule over him with rigor, but you shall fear your God.  
25 [Lev. 25:35-43, Bible, NKJV]

26 Note above that it says that people who are poor or desperate should be treated not as slaves, but as “sojourners”, which today  
27 means “nonresidents” and “transient foreigners”. This is exactly the condition that our members are required to have.

28 The most famous example in the Bible of the violation of the above prohibition against usury was how Pharaoh used a famine  
29 to enslave his entire country, including the Israelites. See Gen. 47:13-26:

30 **Joseph Deals with the Famine**

31 <sup>13</sup> Now there was no bread in all the land; for the famine was very severe, so that the land of Egypt and the land  
32 of Canaan languished because of the famine. <sup>14</sup> And Joseph gathered up all the money that was found in the land  
33 of Egypt and in the land of Canaan, for the grain which they bought; and Joseph brought the money into  
34 Pharaoh’s house.

35 <sup>15</sup> So when the money failed in the land of Egypt and in the land of Canaan, all the Egyptians came to Joseph and  
36 said, “Give us bread, for why should we die in your presence? For the money has failed.”

37 <sup>16</sup> Then Joseph said, “Give your livestock, and I will give you bread for your livestock, if the money is gone.” <sup>17</sup> So  
38 they brought their livestock to Joseph, and Joseph gave them bread in exchange for the horses, the flocks, the  
39 cattle of the herds, and for the donkeys. Thus he fed them with bread in exchange for all their livestock that year.

40 <sup>18</sup> When that year had ended, they came to him the next year and said to him, “We will not hide from my lord that  
41 our money is gone; my lord also has our herds of livestock. There is nothing left in the sight of my lord but our  
42 bodies and our lands. <sup>19</sup> Why should we die before your eyes, both we and our land? Buy us and our land for

1 bread, and we and our land will be servants of Pharaoh; give us seed, that we may live and not die, that the land  
2 may not be desolate.”

3 <sup>20</sup> Then Joseph bought all the land of Egypt for Pharaoh; for every man of the Egyptians sold his field, because  
4 the famine was severe upon them. So the land became Pharaoh's. <sup>21</sup> And as for the people, he moved them into  
5 the cities, from one end of the borders of Egypt to the other end. <sup>22</sup> Only the land of the priests he did not buy; for  
6 the priests had rations allotted to them by Pharaoh, and they ate their rations which Pharaoh gave them; therefore  
7 they did not sell their lands.

8 <sup>23</sup> Then Joseph said to the people, “Indeed I have bought you and your land this day for Pharaoh. Look, here is  
9 seed for you, and you shall sow the land. <sup>24</sup> And it shall come to pass in the harvest that you shall give one-fifth  
10 to Pharaoh. Four-fifths shall be your own, as seed for the field and for your food, for those of your households  
11 and as food for your little ones.”

12 <sup>25</sup> So they said, “You have saved our lives; let us find favor in the sight of my lord, and we will be Pharaoh's  
13 servants.” <sup>26</sup> And Joseph made it a law over the land of Egypt to this day, that Pharaoh should have one-fifth,  
14 except for the land of the priests only, which did not become Pharaoh's.  
15 [Gen. 47:13-26, Bible, NKJV]

16 Eventually, God liberated the Israelites in the famous story of Moses' exodus out of Egypt, but not before he brought a series  
17 of curses on Pharaoh for his usury in Exodus 4. Another similar source of usury was the Canaanites in the Bible, if you wish  
18 to investigate further. We talk about this subject in Government Instituted Slavery Using Franchises, Form #05.030, Section  
19 22.4. It is very interesting that the above history of usury occurred in the land of Canaan for that very reason.

20 It is interesting to note that the main political objection that most Muslim countries have to the United States is related to  
21 usury created by the abuse of commerce. The Koran forbids lending money at interest. Libya and Iraq both became the  
22 target of war and intervention because they wanted to abandon the Federal Reserve fiat currency system and implement gold  
23 instead of paper money. Muslims refer to this usury as “imperialism” and literally hate it. Iran's own leader calls for “death  
24 to America” and usury is the main reason he does so. There is no question that the abuse of commerce to create inequality,  
25 servitude, and usury is satanic because the Bible says this was the essence of Satan's greatest sin. The Muslims are correct  
26 to PEACEFULLY protest it and oppose it.

27 “You were the seal of perfection,  
28 Full of wisdom and perfect in beauty.  
29 <sup>13</sup> You were in Eden, the garden of God;  
30 Every precious stone was your covering:  
31 The sardius, topaz, and diamond,  
32 Beryl, onyx, and jasper,  
33 Sapphire, turquoise, and emerald with gold.  
34 The workmanship of your timbrels and pipes  
35 Was prepared for you on the day you were created.

36 <sup>14</sup> “You were the anointed cherub who covers;  
37 I established you;  
38 You were on the holy mountain of God;  
39 You walked back and forth in the midst of fiery stones.  
40 <sup>15</sup> You were perfect in your ways from the day you were created,  
41 Till iniquity was found in you.

42 <sup>16</sup> **“By the abundance of your trading**  
43 **You became filled with violence within,**  
44 **And you sinned;**  
45 **Therefore I cast you as a profane thing**  
46 **Out of the mountain of God;**  
47 **And I destroyed you, O covering cherub,**  
48 **From the midst of the fiery stones.**

49 <sup>17</sup> “Your heart was lifted up because of your beauty;  
50 You corrupted your wisdom for the sake of your splendor;  
51 I cast you to the ground,  
52 I laid you before kings,  
53 That they might gaze at you.

54 <sup>18</sup> **“You defiled your sanctuaries**  
55 **By the multitude of your iniquities,**  
56 **By the iniquity of your trading;**

1 **Therefore I brought fire from your midst;**  
2 **It devoured you,**  
3 **And I turned you to ashes upon the earth**  
4 *In the sight of all who saw you.*  
5 *<sup>19</sup> All who knew you among the peoples are astonished at you;*  
6 *You have become a horror,*  
7 *And shall be no more forever.”””*  
8 *[Ezekiel 28:13-19, Bible, NKJV]*

9 That is not to say that we condone the use of violence or terrorism to oppose usury, however. More peaceful means are  
10 available, and especially that of withdrawing our domicile and sponsorship of usurious governments and becoming non-  
11 resident non-persons. We talk about this approach in:

*Why Domicile and Becoming a “Taxpayer” Require Your Consent*, Form #05.002  
<http://sedm.org/Forms/FormIndex.htm>

12 We conclude in the above document that the only way that changing domicile and thereby removing funding and civil  
13 jurisdiction from the government can result in violence is if the government actively interferes with you receiving the  
14 “benefits” of doing so. When they do that, violence, revolution, anarchy, and even war is inevitable eventually.

15 We refer to the systematic implementation of usury as the greatest sin of our present government because it was Satan’s  
16 greatest sin. The Federal Reserve counterfeiting franchise is its foundation. We describe the government as an economic  
17 terrorist, the District of Columbia as the District of Criminals, and politicians as criminals because of it. It’s all based on “the  
18 love of money”:

19 *“For the love of money is a root of all kinds of evil, for which some have strayed from the faith in their greediness,*  
20 *and pierced themselves through with many sorrows.”*  
21 *[1 Tim. 6:10, Bible, NKJV]*

22 It is our sincere belief that if we as a country had stuck to the requirements of Lev. 25:35-43 earlier in our external relations,  
23 the problems we have with terrorism from foreign nations could be significantly reduced. The United States commits usury  
24 and economic terrorism against foreign countries, so they reciprocate with violent terrorism, but both types of terrorism are  
25 equally evil. The economic interventionism and the coercion that the usury leads to is a direct violation of the requirements  
26 of justice itself. “Justice” is legally defined as the right to be left alone. If we want to be “left alone” by the terrorists and  
27 treated with respect, then we have to quit meddling in their affairs, invading and bombing their countries mainly for economic  
28 reasons, or using our economic might to coerce them with sanctions. You will always reap what you sow.

29 The United States as a country sows economic violence so we reap physical violence. This is the inevitable consequence of  
30 the fact that we are all equal and any attempt to make us unequal inevitably produces wars, violence, anarchy, and political  
31 instability:

32 *“Therefore, whatever you want men to do to you, do also to them, for this is the Law and the Prophets.”*  
33 *[Matt. 7:12, Bible, NKJV]*

34 The U.S. Supreme Court stated the above slightly differently, when they declared the first income tax unconstitutional, which  
35 was implemented as a franchise tax that discriminated against one class of people at the expense of another and therefore,  
36 produced INEQUALITY:

37 *“The income tax law under consideration is marked by discriminating features which affect the whole law. It*  
38 *discriminates between those who receive an income of four thousand dollars and those who do not. It thus*  
39 *vitiates, in my judgment, by this arbitrary discrimination, the whole legislation.* Hamilton says in one of his  
40 papers, (the Continentalist,) “the genius of liberty reprobates everything arbitrary or discretionary in taxation. It  
41 exacts that every man, by a definite and general rule, should know what proportion of his property the State  
42 demands; whatever liberty we may boast of in theory, it cannot exist in fact while [arbitrary] assessments  
43 continue.” I Hamilton’s Works, ed. 1885, 270. The legislation, in the discrimination it makes, is class legislation.  
44 *Whenever a distinction is made in the burdens a law imposes or in the benefits it confers on any citizens by*  
45 *reason of their birth, or wealth, or religion, it is class legislation, and leads inevitably to oppression and abuses,*  
46 *and to general unrest and disturbance in society [e.g. wars, political conflict, violence, anarchy].* It was hoped  
47 and believed that the great amendments to the Constitution which followed the late civil war had rendered such  
48 legislation impossible for all future time. But the objectionable legislation reappears in the act under  
49 consideration. It is the same in essential character as that of the English income statute of 1691, which taxed  
50 Protestants at a certain rate, Catholics, as a class, at double the rate of Protestants, and Jews at another and

1 separate rate. Under wise and constitutional legislation every citizen should contribute his proportion, however  
2 small the sum, to the support of the government, and it is no kindness to urge any of our citizens to escape from  
3 that obligation. If he contributes the smallest mite of his earnings to that purpose he will have a greater regard  
4 for the government and more self-respect 597\*597 for himself feeling that though he is poor in fact, he is not a  
5 pauper of his government. And it is to be hoped that, whatever woes and embarrassments may betide our people,  
6 they may never lose their manliness and self-respect. Those qualities preserved, they will ultimately triumph over  
7 all reverses of fortune."

8 [. . .]

9 "Here I close my opinion. I could not say less in view of questions of such gravity that go down to the very  
10 foundation of the government. If the provisions of the Constitution can be set aside by an act of Congress, where  
11 is the course of usurpation to end? **The present assault upon capital is but the beginning. It will be but the**  
12 **stepping-stone to others, larger and more sweeping, till our political contests will become a war of the poor**  
13 **against the rich; a war constantly growing in intensity and bitterness.**"

14 "**If the court sanctions the power of discriminating taxation, and nullifies the uniformity mandate of the**  
15 **Constitution, "as said by one who has been all his life a student of our institutions, "it will mark the hour when**  
16 **the sure decadence of our present government will commence.**" If the purely arbitrary limitation of \$4000 in  
17 the present law can be sustained, none having less than that amount of income being assessed or taxed for the  
18 support of the government, the limitation of future Congresses may be fixed at a much larger sum, at five or ten  
19 or twenty thousand dollars, parties possessing an income of that amount alone being bound to bear the burdens  
20 of government; or the limitation may be designated at such an amount as a board of "walking delegates" may  
21 deem necessary. There is no safety in allowing the limitation to be adjusted except in strict compliance with the  
22 mandates of the Constitution which require its taxation, if imposed by direct taxes, to be apportioned among the  
23 States according to their representation, and if imposed by indirect taxes, to be uniform in operation and, so far  
24 as practicable, in proportion to their property, equal upon all citizens. **Unless the rule of the Constitution**  
25 **governs, a majority may fix the limitation at such rate as will not include any of their own number.**"  
26 [Pollock v. Farmers' Loan & Trust Co., 157 U.S. 429 (Supreme Court 1895)]

27 We talk about our opposition to usurious commerce that produces inequality in our Disclaimer, Section 9:

28 **SEDM Disclaimer**

29 **9. APPROACH TOWARDS "HATE SPEECH" AND HATE CRIME**

30 This website does not enforce or support [hate speech](#) or hate crimes, violent thoughts, deeds or actions against  
31 any particular person(s), group, entity, government, mob, paramilitary force, intelligence agency, overpaid  
32 politician, head of state, queen, dignitary, ambassador, spy, spook, soldier, bowl cook, security flunky, contractor,  
33 dog, cat or mouse, Wal-Mart employee, amphibian, reptile, and or deceased entity without a PB (Physical Body).

34 The foundation of the religious beliefs and practices underlying this website is a refusal to contract with or engage  
35 in commerce with any and every government. Black's Law Dictionary defines "commerce" as "intercourse".

36 "Commerce. ... **Intercourse** by way of trade and traffic [money instead of semen]  
37 between different peoples or states and the citizens or inhabitants thereof, including not  
38 only the purchase, sale, and exchange of commodities, but also the instrumentalities  
39 [governments] and agencies by which it is promoted and the means and appliances by  
40 which it is carried on..."  
41 [Black's Law Dictionary, Sixth Edition, p. 269]

42 Hence this website advocates a religious refusal to engage in sex or intercourse or commerce with any  
43 government. In fact, the Bible even describes people who VIOLATE this prohibition as "playing the harlot"  
44 ([Ezekiel 16:41](#)) and personifies that harlot as "Babylon the Great Harlot" ([Rev. 17:5](#)), which is fornicating with  
45 the Beast, which it defines as governments ([Rev. 19:19](#)).

46 I [God] brought you up from Egypt [slavery] and brought you to the land of which I swore  
47 to your fathers; and I said, 'I will never break My covenant with you. And you shall make  
48 no covenant [[contract or franchise or agreement of ANY kind](#)] with the inhabitants of  
49 this [[corrupt pagan](#)] land; you shall tear down their [[man/government worshipping](#)  
50 [socialist](#)] altars.' But you have not obeyed Me. Why have you done this?

51 "Therefore I also said, 'I will not drive them out before you; but they will become as  
52 thorns [[terrorists and persecutors](#)] in your side and their gods will be a snare [slavery!]  
53 to you.'"

54 So it was, when the Angel of the LORD spoke these words to all the children of Israel, that  
55 the people lifted up their voices and wept.



1 [\[Judges 2:1-4, Bible, NKJV\]](#)  
2

3 "Do you not know that friendship with the world is enmity with God? **Whoever therefore**  
4 **wants to be a friend** [["citizen"](#), ["resident"](#), ["taxpayer"](#), ["inhabitant"](#), or ["subject"](#) under  
5 [a king or political ruler](#)] of the world [or any man-made kingdom other than God's  
6 [Kingdom](#)] **makes himself an enemy of God.** "  
7 [\[James 4:4, Bible, NKJV\]](#)  
8

9 "You shall make no covenant [[contract or franchise](#)] with them [[foreigners, pagans](#)],  
10 **nor with their** [[pagan government](#)] gods [[laws or judges](#)]. They shall not dwell in your  
11 land [and you shall not dwell in theirs [by becoming a "resident" in the process of](#)  
12 [contracting with them](#)], lest they make you sin against Me [God]. For if you serve their  
13 gods [under [contract or agreement or franchise](#)], it will surely be a snare to you."  
14 [\[Exodus 23:32-33, Bible, NKJV\]](#)  
15

16 "Pure and undefiled religion before God and the Father is this: to visit orphans and widows  
17 in their trouble, and to **keep oneself unspotted from the world** [the obligations and  
18 [concerns of the world](#)]. "  
19 [\[James 1:27, Bible, NKJV\]](#)  
20

21 "You shall have no other gods [including political rulers, governments, or Earthly laws]  
22 before Me [or [My commandments](#)]."  
23 [\[Exodus 20:3, Bible, NKJV\]](#)  
24

25 "Then all the elders of Israel gathered together and came to Samuel [the priest in a  
26 Theocracy] at Ramah, and said to him, 'Look, you [the priest within a theocracy] are old,  
27 and your sons do not walk in your ways. **Now make us a king** [or political ruler] to judge  
28 us like all the nations [and be OVER them]'.  
29

30 "But the thing displeased Samuel when they said, 'Give us a king [or political ruler] to  
31 judge us.' So Samuel prayed to the Lord. **And the Lord said to Samuel, 'Heed the voice**  
32 **of the people in all that they say to you; for they have rejected Me** [God], **that I should**  
33 **not reign over them.** According to all the works which they have done since the day that I  
34 brought them up out of Egypt, even to this day—with which they have forsaken Me [God  
35 as their **ONLY King, Lawgiver, and Judge**] and [served other gods](#)—so they are doing to  
36 you also [government or political rulers becoming the object of idolatry]."  
37 [\[1 Sam. 8:4-8, Bible, NKJV\]](#)

38 "Do not walk in the [statutes of your fathers](#) [the heathens], nor observe their judgments,  
39 nor defile yourselves with their [pagan government] idols. I am the LORD your God: Walk  
40 in [My statutes](#), keep My judgments, and do them; hallow My Sabbaths, and they will be a  
41 sign between Me and you, that you may know that I am the LORD your God."  
42 [\[Ezekial 20:10-20, Bible, NKJV\]](#)

43 Where is "separation of church and state" when you REALLY need it, keeping in mind that [Christians AS](#)  
44 [INDIVIDUALS are "the church"](#) and secular society is the ["state" as legally defined](#)? The John Birch Society  
45 agrees with us on the subject of not contracting with anyone in the following video:

46 Trading Away Your Freedom by Foreign Entanglements, John Birch Society  
47 <https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=2Q24tWlrRdk>

48 Pastor David Jeremiah of Turning Point Ministries also agrees with us on this subject:

[The Church in Satan's City](https://youtu.be/oujXpO5pejQ), March 20, 2016  
<https://youtu.be/oujXpO5pejQ>

49 President Obama also said that it is the right of EVERYONE to economically AND politically disassociate with  
50 the government so why don't the agencies of the government recognize this fact on EVERY form you use to interact  
51 with them?.

[President Obama Says US Will NOT Impose Its Political or Economic System on Anyone](https://youtu.be/2t_ZRQSIPr0), Exhibit #05.053  
[https://youtu.be/2t\\_ZRQSIPr0](https://youtu.be/2t_ZRQSIPr0)

1 We wrote an entire book on how to economically and politically disassociate in fulfillment of Obama's promise  
2 above, and yet the government hypocritically actively interferes with economically and politically disassociating,  
3 in defiance of President Obama's assurances and promises. HYPOCRITES!

*Non-Resident Non-Person Position*, Form #05.020  
<http://sedm.org/Forms/FormIndex.htm>

4 Government's tendency to compel everyone into a commercial relationship with them is defined by the Bible as  
5 the ESSENCE of Satan himself! Therefore, the religious practice and sexual orientation of avoiding commerce  
6 with governments is the essence of our religious faith:

7 "By the **abundance** of your [Satan's] **trading** You became filled with violence within, **And**  
8 you sinned; Therefore I cast you as a profane thing Out of the mountain of God; **And I**  
9 destroyed you, O covering cherub, From the midst of the fiery stones."  
10 [[Ezekial 28:16](#), Bible, NKJV]

11  
12 "As religion towards God is a branch of universal righteousness (he is not an honest man  
13 that is not devout), so **righteousness towards men is a branch of true religion, for he is**  
14 **not a godly man that is not honest, nor can he expect that his devotion should be accepted;**  
15 for,

16 **1. Nothing is more offensive to God than deceit in [commerce](#). A false balance is here put**  
17 **for all manner of unjust and fraudulent practices [of our public dis-servants] in dealing**  
18 **with any person [within the public], which are all an abomination to the Lord, and render**  
19 **those abominable [hated] to him that allow themselves in the use of such accursed arts**  
20 **of thriving. It is an affront to justice, which God is the patron of, as well as a wrong to**  
21 **our neighbour, whom God is the protector of. Men [in government] make light of such**  
22 **frauds, and think there is no sin in that which there is money to be got by, and, while it**  
23 **passes undiscovered, they cannot blame themselves for it; a blot is no blot till it is hit,**  
24 **Hos. 12:7, 8. But they are not the less an abomination to God, who will be the avenger**  
25 **of those that are defrauded by their brethren.**

26 **2. Nothing is more pleasing to God than fair and honest dealing, nor more necessary to**  
27 **make us and our devotions acceptable to him: A just weight is his delight. He himself**  
28 **goes by a just weight, and holds the scale of judgment with an even hand, and therefore is**  
29 **pleased with those that are herein followers of him.**

30 **A [false] balance, [[whether it be in the federal courtroom](#) or in the government or in the**  
31 **[marketplace](#),] cheats, under pretence of doing right most exactly, and therefore is the**  
32 **greater abomination to God."**  
33 [[Matthew Henry's Commentary on the Whole Bible](#); Henry, M., 1996, c1991, under Prov.  
34 11:1]

35 Any individual, group, or especially government worker that makes us the target of discrimination, violence,  
36 "selective enforcement", or hate because of this form of religious practice or "sexual orientation" or abstinence  
37 is practicing HATE SPEECH based BOTH on our religious beliefs AND our sexual orientation as legally defined.  
38 Furthermore, all readers and governments are given [reasonable timely notice](#) that the terms of use for the  
39 information and services available through this website mandate that any attempt to compel us into a commercial  
40 or tax relationship with any government shall constitute:

- 41 1. "purposeful availment" in satisfaction of the [Foreign Sovereign Immunities Act, 28 U.S.C. Chapter 97](#).
- 42 2. A waiver of official, judicial, and sovereign immunity.
- 43 3. A commercial invasion within the meaning of Article 4, section 4 of the United States Constitution.
- 44 4. A tort cognizable as a Fifth Amendment taking without compensation.
- 45 5. A criminal attempt at identity theft by wrongfully associating us with a civil status of "citizen", "resident",  
46 "taxpayer", etc.
- 47 6. Duress as legally defined. See [Affidavit of Duress: Illegal Tax Enforcement by De Facto Officers, Form](#)  
48 [#02.005](#).

49 The GOVERNMENT crimes documented on this website fall within the ambit of [18 U.S.C. §2381: Treason](#). The  
50 penalty mandated by law for these crimes is DEATH. We demand that actors in the Department of Justice for  
51 both the states and the federal government responsible for prosecuting these crimes of Treason do so as required  
52 by law. A FAILURE to do so is ALSO an act of Treason punishable by death. Since murder is not only a crime,  
53 but a violent crime, pursuant to [18 U.S.C. §1111](#), then the government itself can also be classified as terrorist. It  
54 is also ludicrous to call people who demand the enforcement of the death penalty for the crimes documented as  
55 terrorists. If that were true, every jurist who sat on a murder trial in which the death penalty applied would also  
56 have to be classified as and prosecuted as a terrorist. Hypocrites.

[SEDM Disclaimer, Section 9;  
SOURCE: <http://sedm.org/disclaimer.htm>]

The moral of the story is that the main difference between Christ and Satan was how they handled “privileges” and “franchises” and whether they tried to use them as a means to create inequality or usury or slavery or servitude between them and others while they were on the earth.

As we say repeatedly throughout this document, franchises are the main method used to destroy and undermine equality of all under the law. Any attempt to implement them in any governmental system is SATANIC and emulates Satan’s greatest sin. Those in government who institute or enforce franchises will therefore get the same punishment as Satan did for exactly the same reasons.

### **3 Background on deception, delusions, and presumptions**

A false belief is called a delusion. We commonly refer to those who have false beliefs as being “deceived”. Merriam Webster’s Dictionary defines “delusion” as follows:

*de-lu-sion*

*Pronunciation:* \di-lü-zhən, dē-\

*Function:* noun

*Etymology:* Middle English, from Late Latin *delusion-*, *delusio*, from *deludere*

*Date:* 15th century

*1: the act of deluding ; the state of being deluded*  
*2 a: something that is falsely or [delusively](#) believed or propagated*  
*b: a persistent false psychotic belief regarding the self or persons or objects outside the self that is maintained despite indisputable evidence to the contrary ; also : the abnormal state marked by such beliefs*

— *de-lu-sion-al* \-lü-zh-nəl, -lü-zhə-nəl\ adjective

— *de-lu-sion-ary* \-zhə-ner-ē\ adjective

*synonyms [delusion](#) , [illusion](#) , [hallucination](#) , [mirage](#) mean something that is believed to be true or real but that is actually false or unreal. [delusion](#) implies an inability to distinguish between what is real and what only seems to be real, often as the result of a disordered state of mind <delusions of persecution>. [illusion](#) implies a false ascribing of reality based on what one sees or imagines <an illusion of safety>. [hallucination](#) implies impressions that are the product of disordered senses, as because of mental illness or drugs <suffered from terrifying hallucinations>. [mirage](#) in its extended sense applies to an illusory vision, dream, hope, or aim <claimed a balanced budget is a mirage>.*

[SOURCE: Merriam Webster’s Online Dictionary; <http://www.merriam-webster.com/dictionary/delusion>]

In the psychological field, a person who acts upon delusions is called a “psychotic”. In ordinary speech, most people would also call such a person a hypocrite. Merriam Webster’s Dictionary defines psychosis as follows:

*psy·cho·sis*

*Pronunciation:* \sī- kō-səs\

*Function:* noun

*Inflected Form(s): plural [psy·cho·ses](#) \-,sēz\*

*Etymology:* New Latin

*Date:* 1847

*: fundamental derangement of the mind (as in schizophrenia) characterized by defective or lost contact with reality especially as evidenced by delusions, hallucinations, and disorganized speech and behavior.*

[SOURCE: Merriam Webster’s Online Dictionary; <http://www.merriam-webster.com/dictionary/psychosis>]

A person who has delusions about something is a person whose beliefs essentially are inconsistent with what reality and recognized evidence otherwise indicate. Their belief may be inconsistent with reality and recognized evidence because:

1. They have never had an opportunity to see the evidence for themselves.

- 1 2. They don't have the intellectual skills or discipline to be able to discern the truth for themselves.
- 2 3. Those who tell them the truth and present evidence to correct their views have been discredited and rebuked by people
- 3 they trust and who they don't question.
- 4 4. They are too lazy to investigate the truth for themselves.
- 5 5. They benefit from the perception they have so much that they are actually punished if they examine the evidence and
- 6 adjust their views accordingly.

7 Whatever the reason is that people believe a falsehood, the ultimate result is that they usually also engage in presumptions.  
8 A presumption is simply any belief that is not supported by evidence. Not all presumptions may truthfully be classified as a  
9 delusion, but most are. The reason is that sometimes, we may presume things that are actually true and consistent with reality.

10 Black's Law Dictionary, Sixth Edition, defines "presumption" as follows:

11 **presumption.** *An inference in favor of a particular fact. A presumption is a rule of law, statutory or judicial, by*  
12 *which finding of a basic fact gives rise to existence of presumed fact, until presumption is rebutted. Van Wart v.*  
13 *Cook, Okl.App., 557 P.2d. 1161, 1163. A legal device which operates in the absence of other proof to require*  
14 *that certain inferences be drawn from the available evidence. Port Terminal & Warehousing Co. v. John S. James*  
15 *Co., D.C.Ga., 92 F.R.D. 100, 106.*

16 *A presumption is an assumption of fact that the law requires to be made from another fact or group of facts found*  
17 *or otherwise established in the action. A presumption is not evidence. A presumption is either conclusive or*  
18 *rebuttable. Every rebuttable presumption is either (a) a presumption affecting the burden of producing evidence*  
19 *or (b) a presumption affecting the burden of proof. Calif.Evid.Code, §600.*

20 *In all civil actions and proceedings not otherwise provided for by Act of Congress or by the Federal Rules of*  
21 *Evidence, a presumption imposes on the party against whom it is directed the burden of going forward with*  
22 *evidence to rebut or meet the presumption, but does not shift to such party the burden of proof in the sense of the*  
23 *risk of nonpersuasion, which remains throughout the trial upon the party on whom it was originally cast. Federal*  
24 *Evidence Rule 301.*

25 *See also Disputable presumption; inference; Juris et de jure; Presumptive evidence; Prima facie; Raise a*  
26 *presumption.*  
27 *[Black's Law Dictionary, Sixth Edition, p. 1185]*

28 American Jurisprudence Legal Encyclopedia 2d defines "presumption" as follows:

29 *American Jurisprudence 2d*  
30 *Evidence, §181*

31 **A presumption is neither evidence nor a substitute for evidence.** <sup>15</sup> *Properly used, the term "presumption" is a*  
32 *rule of law directing that if a party proves certain facts (the "basic facts") at a trial or hearing, the factfinder*  
33 *must also accept an additional fact (the "presumed fact") as proven unless sufficient evidence is introduced*  
34 *tending to rebut the presumed fact.* <sup>16</sup> *In a sense, therefore, a presumption is an inference which is mandatory*  
35 *unless rebutted.* <sup>17</sup>

36 *The underlying purpose and impact of a presumption is to affect the burden of going forward.* <sup>18</sup> *Depending*  
37 *upon a variety of factors, a presumption may shift the burden of production as to the presumed fact, or may shift*  
38 *both the burden of production and the burden of persuasion.* <sup>19</sup>

---

<sup>15</sup> *Levasseur v. Field (Me), 332 A.2d. 765; Hinds v. John Hancock Mut. Life Ins. Co., 155 Me. 349, 155 A.2d. 721, 85 A.L.R.2d. 703 (superseded by statute on other grounds as stated in Poitras v R. E. Glidden Body Shop, Inc. (Me) 430 A.2d. 1113); Connizzo v General American Life Ins. Co. (Mo App), 520 S.W.2d. 661.*

<sup>16</sup> *Inferences and presumptions are a staple of our adversary system of factfinding, since it is often necessary for the trier of fact to determine the existence of an element of a crime—that is an ultimate or elemental fact—from the existence of one or more evidentiary or basic facts. County Court of Ulster County v Allen, 442 US 140, 60 L Ed 2d 777, 99 S Ct 2213.*

<sup>17</sup> *Legille v. Dann, 178 U.S.App.D.C. 78, 544 F.2d. 1, 191 USPQ 529; Murray v. Montgomery Ward Life Ins. Co., 196 Colo. 225, 584 P.2d. 78; Re Estate of Borom (Ind App), 562 N.E.2d. 772; Manchester v. Dugan (Me), 247 A.2d. 827; Ferdinand v Agricultural Ins. Co., 22 N.J. 482, 126 A.2d. 323, 62 A.L.R.2d. 1179; Smith v. Bohlen, 95 N.C. App 347, 382 S.E.2d. 812, affd 328 N.C. 564, 402 S.E.2d. 380; Larmay v. Van Ethen, 129 Vt. 368, 278 A.2d. 736; Martin v. Phillips, 235 Va. 523, 369 S.E.2d. 397.*

<sup>18</sup> *F.R.E. Rule 301.*

<sup>19</sup> *§198.*

1 A few states have codified some of the more common presumptions in their evidence codes.<sup>20</sup> Often a statute  
2 will provide that a fact or group of facts is prima facie evidence of another fact.<sup>21</sup> Courts frequently recognize  
3 this principle in the absence of an explicit legislative directive.<sup>22</sup>

4 The purpose of lying is to develop in the hearts and minds of the hearers a *false presumption*. The more ignorant and unwise  
5 and godless the hearers, the more likely they are to believe this false presumption. Those who promote such lies will do so  
6 for selfish reasons but ultimately their purposes are harmful and hateful.

7 "A lying tongue hates those who are crushed by it, and a flattering mouth works ruin."  
8 [Prov. 26:28, Bible, NKJV]

9 "And in their covetousness (lust, greed) they will exploit you with false (cunning) arguments ["words of art"].  
10 From of old the sentence [of condemnation] for them has not been idle; their destruction (eternal misery) has  
11 not been asleep."  
12 [2 Peter 2:3, Bible, Amplified Edition]

13 Most frequently, we also acquire false presumptions by less dishonest or more casual means. For instance, we acquire false  
14 presumptions mainly from the media and our associates in our normal interactions. This method is the most popular technique  
15 used by our government to brainwash the sheeple, I mean people. When our government does it, it is called "propaganda".  
16 The reason more informal techniques such as this are most successful is that we just accept what people say without thinking  
17 critically about it and without questioning it. We are among people and organizations that we supposedly love or trust and  
18 so our intellectual defenses are down. In effect, we are intellectually lazy and don't bother to process or analyze or question  
19 new ideas or look what God's word says about them before we commit them to our memory banks as *truth*.

20 "What luck for rulers that men do not think"  
21 [Adolf Hitler]

22 "Ignorance more frequently begets confidence than does knowledge."  
23 [Charles Darwin (1809-1882) 1871]

24 The Bible has some very convicting things to say about presumption that every Christian ought to teach their children, and  
25 which should also be part of the jury instructions that every jury hears:

26 "Who can understand his errors? Cleanse me from secret faults. **Keep back Your servant also from**  
27 **presumptuous sins; Let them not have dominion over me. Then I shall be blameless, and I shall be innocent**  
28 **of great transgression.**"  
29 [Psalm 19:12-13, Bible, NKJV]

30 Evidently, being presumptuous is a sin for which God takes offense. Our King James Bible has a footnote under the above  
31 passage that says: "The right response to God's revelation is to pray for His help with errors, faults, and sins." That same  
32 passage above under the word "presumptuous" then points to Num. 15:30 (NKJV), which tells the rest of the very telling  
33 story on this subject:

34 "But **the person who does anything presumptuously, whether he is native-born or a stranger, that one brings**  
35 **reproach on the Lord, and he shall be cut off from among his people.**"  
36 [Numbers 15:30, Bible, NKJV]

37 So evidently, we're dealing with very serious sin here, folks. Presumption evidently is a very big offense to the Lord. If you  
38 further research the meaning of "presumptuous", you will find in Numbers 14:44 that it means defiance and disobedience to  
39 God's laws, the Bible, His commandments, and His will revealed to us by the Holy Spirit, and through His prophets.

40 Obviously then, it is VERY important as a Christian to ensure that:

41 1. We do not engage in presumption or act presumptuously.

---

<sup>20</sup> California Evidence Code §§ 621 et seq.; Hawaii Rules of Evidence, Rules 303, 304; Oregon Evidence Code, Rule 311.

<sup>21</sup> California Evidence Code § 602; Alaska Rule of Evidence, Rule 301(b); Hawaii Rule of Evidence, Rule 305; Maine Rule of Evidence, Rule 301(b); Oregon Rule of Evidence, Rule 311(2); Vermont Rule of Evidence, Rule 301(b); Wisconsin Rule of Evidence, Rule 301.

<sup>22</sup> American Casualty Co. v Costello, 174 Mich.App. 1, 435 N.W.2d. 760; Glover v Henry (Tex App Eastland), 749 S.W.2d. 502.

- 1 2. Everything we believe can be supported by physical evidence. In the case of Christians, that evidence can only be the
- 2 Holy Bible and what the Holy Spirit itself tells you.
- 3 3. We challenge the presumptions of others to prevent anyone from being either deceived or hurt.
- 4 4. We question absolutely everything upon which we base any belief.
- 5 5. We question everyone who claims to be an authority on any given subject and demand physical evidence to prove that
- 6 what they claim is true actually is true.

7 The reasons for the above are clear scripturally:

8 *"Test all things; hold fast what is good. Abstain from every form of evil."*  
9 *[1 Thess. 5:21-22, Bible, NKJV]*

10 *"Be diligent to [investigate and expose the truth for yourself and thereby] present yourself [and the public*  
11 *servants who are your fiduciaries and stewards under the Constitution] approved to God, a worker who does*  
12 *not need to be ashamed, rightly dividing the word [and the deeds] of truth. But shun profane babblings*  
13 *[government propaganda, tyranny, and usurpation] for they will increase to more ungodliness. And their*  
14 *message [and their harmful effects] will spread like cancer [to destroy our society and great Republic]."*  
15 *[2 Tim. 2:15-17, Bible, NKJV]*

16 *"...we should no longer be children, tossed to and fro and carried about with every wind of doctrine, by the*  
17 *trickery of men, in the cunning craftiness of deceitful plotting, but speaking the truth in love, may grow up in all*  
18 *things into Him who is the head—Christ."*  
19 *[Eph. 4:14, Bible, NKJV]*

20 Throughout this document, we will use all the following terms as though they are synonymous: "delusions", "flawed  
21 arguments", "thought viruses".

22 If you would like to learn more about why we should avoid presumptions, and especially in the legal field, see the following:

*Presumption: Chief Weapon for Unlawfully Enlarging Government Jurisdiction*, Form #05.017  
<http://sedm.org/Forms/FormIndex.htm>

#### 23 **4 The Big Picture on Corruption Within Modern Christianity**

24 We believe that the essence of what it means to be a Christian is that they regard God's word as "law" in their own personal  
25 case. The scriptures confirm that the essence of God is "love", and the essence of "love" is obedience to God's law:

26 *"Not everyone who says to Me, 'Lord, Lord,' shall enter the kingdom of heaven, but he who does the will of My*  
27 *Father in heaven."*  
28 *[Jesus in Matt. 7:21, Bible, NKJV]*

29 \_\_\_\_\_  
30 *"But why do you call Me 'Lord, Lord,' and not do the things which I say?"*  
31 *[Luke 6:46, Bible, NKJV]*

32 \_\_\_\_\_  
33 *"My mother and My brothers are these who hear the word of God and do it."*  
34 *[Luke 8:21, Bible, NKJV]*

35 \_\_\_\_\_  
36 *"He who has [understands and learns] My commandments [laws in the Bible] and keeps them, it is he who*  
37 *loves Me. And he who loves Me will be loved by My Father, and I will love him and manifest Myself to him."*  
38 *[John 14:21, Bible, NKJV]*

39 \_\_\_\_\_  
40 *"Now by this we know that we know Him [God], if we keep His commandments. He who says, 'I know Him,' and*  
41 *does not keep His commandments, is a liar, and the truth is not in him. But whoever keeps His word, truly the*

1 love of God is perfected in him. By this we know that we are in Him [His fiduciaries]. He who says he abides in  
2 Him [as a fiduciary] ought himself also to walk just as He [Jesus] walked."  
3 [[1 John 2:3-6](#), Bible, NKJV]

---

5 **And it shall come to pass, if thou shalt hearken diligently unto the voice of the LORD thy God, to observe and**  
6 **to do all his commandments which I command thee this day, that the LORD thy God will set thee on high**  
7 **above all nations of the earth [SOVEREIGN!];**

8 **And all these blessings shall come on thee, and overtake thee, if thou shalt hearken unto the voice of the**  
9 **LORD thy God.**

10 Blessed shalt thou be in the city, and blessed shalt thou be in the field.

11 Blessed shall be the fruit of thy body, and the fruit of thy ground, and the fruit of thy cattle, the increase of thy  
12 kine, and the flocks of thy sheep.

13 Blessed shall be thy basket and thy store.

14 Blessed shalt thou be when thou comest in, and blessed shalt thou be when thou goest out.

15 The LORD shall cause thine enemies that rise up against thee to be smitten before thy face: they shall come out  
16 against thee one way, and flee before thee seven ways.

17 The LORD shall command the blessing upon thee in thy storehouses, and in all that thou settest thine hand  
18 unto; and he shall bless thee in the land which the LORD thy God giveth thee.

19 **The LORD shall establish thee an holy [sanctified] people unto himself, as he hath sworn unto thee, if thou**  
20 **shalt keep the commandments of the LORD thy God, and walk in his ways.**

21 **And all people of the earth shall see that thou art called by the name of the LORD; and they shall be afraid**  
22 **of thee.**

23 And the LORD shall make thee plenteous in goods, in the fruit of thy body, and in the fruit of thy cattle, and in  
24 the fruit of thy ground, in the land which the LORD sware unto thy fathers to give thee.

25 The LORD shall open unto thee his good treasure, the heaven to give the rain unto thy land in his season, and  
26 to bless all the work of thine hand: and thou shalt lend unto many nations, and thou shalt not borrow.

27 **And the LORD shall make thee the head, and not the tail; and thou shalt be above only, and thou shalt not**  
28 **be beneath [SOVEREIGN!]; if that thou hearken unto the commandments of the LORD thy God, which I**  
29 **command thee this day, to observe and to do them:**

30 **And thou shalt not go aside from any of the words which I command thee this day, to the right hand, or to**  
31 **the left, to go after other [government/political] gods to serve them.**  
32 [[Deut. 28:1-14](#), Bible, NKJV]

33 The real problem among lukewarm Christians today is that they:

- 34 1. Refuse to recognize the Bible as a law book in their own lives and the ultimate, unchanging standard by which they
- 35 define their morality and their life.
- 36 2. Build a wall of separation between the Old Testament and the New Testament and try to exclude themselves from the
- 37 mandates of Old Testament law.
- 38 3. Have a disinterest in law and do not want to learn law.
- 39 4. Would rather substitute the commandments, laws, and traditions of men in the place of biblical law because it is more
- 40 "politically correct".

41 The above characteristics are summarized in one word: "antinomian":

42 ***Antinomian: Christian believing salvation depends on faith. A Christian who believes that faith and divine***  
43 ***grace bring about salvation and that it is therefore not necessary to accept established [BIBLICAL] moral laws***  
44 ***[Microsoft ® Encarta ® Reference Library 2008. © 1993-2007 Microsoft Corporation.]***

1 Consequently, lukewarm American Christians who as a collective are “antinomian” because they:

- 2 1. Have surrendered the civil order to the enemy.
- 3 2. Are the epitome of the biblical status of being "lawless" within the context of God. That relationship is the essence of
- 4 Satan's sin: Rebelling against God and His laws. There is NO PRACTICAL DIFFERENCE between REBELLING
- 5 and IGNORING God's laws, because the results for both alternatives are the same: lawlessness.
- 6 3. Have taken the path of the Pharisees, who substituted the “commandments of men” in place of God’s law. Their rules
- 7 were man-made and conflicted with God’s law.

8 For details on "antinomianism", see:

- 9 1. Section 10 later, for exhaustive treatment.
- 10 2. Wikipedia:
- 11 <http://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Antinomianism>

12 Here is how a Sovereign God treats the "lawless":

13 *"And then I will declare to them, 'I never knew you; depart from Me, you who practice lawlessness!'"*  
14 *[Matt. 7:23, Bible, NKJV]*

15 *"Even so you also outwardly appear righteous to men, but inside you are full of hypocrisy and lawlessness."*  
16 *[Matt. 23:28, Bible, NKJV]*

17 *"For the mystery of lawlessness is already at work; only He who now restrains will do so until He is taken out of*  
18 *the way. And then the lawless one will be revealed, whom the Lord will consume with the breath of His mouth*  
19 *and destroy with the brightness of His coming. **The coming of the lawless one is according to the working of***  
20 ***Satan, with all power, signs, and lying wonders, and with all unrighteous deception among those who perish,***  
21 ***because they did not receive the love of the truth,** that they might be saved. And for this reason God will send*  
22 *them strong delusion, that they should believe the lie, that they all may be condemned who did not believe the*  
23 *truth but had pleasure in unrighteousness."*  
24 *[2 Thess. 2:7-12, Bible, NKJV]*

25 One can obey man’s law and ignore God’s law and STILL be “lawless” within the biblical mandates above. By  
26 "unrighteousness" above is meant those things that VIOLATE God's law, both OLD and NEW testament. If Christianity is  
27 hostile to or not accountable to the law of God, why should society maintain it? The law is not the Savior, but it is God's Rule  
28 for kingdom people and only God's people can advance it and enforce it.

29 The Pharisees were "lawless" because they substituted "man's commandments" for God's Commandments (Mt. 15). That  
30 removal of the authority of God’s law removed our agency on behalf of God through God’s law from public life.

31 *"And we have known and believed the love that God has for us. **God is love, and he who abides in love [obedience***  
32 ***to God's Laws] abides in [and is a FIDUCIARY of] God, and God in him."***  
33 *[1 John 4:16, Bible, NKJV]*

34 Phariseeism leads to statism because they believe man-made law could save them and create an angelic society. If man-made  
35 law can create a perfect society, then men must support the "rule of law" or "total law" to be enforced by total government.  
36 God's law limited itself in that it was not man's savior nor the ultimate solution to the human problem. Modern  
37 liberals/congressmen are the modern Pharisees because they believe in total law and total government. Thus, they are lawless  
38 because they will not surrender to God's laws or its limitations. But, they are not free of legalism because they believe man-  
39 made statutes can create the perfect utopia. Thus, there is no need for the gospel or God's laws because man's laws are superior  
40 to and preferred above God's limited law.

41 Two problems:

- 42 1. Christians who because of a disinterest in the law of God that has led them to surrender God's ordained civil order to
- 43 the enemy . . . and
- 44 2. Modern Phariseeism in liberal Congress that believes more statutes, and law, and regulation can save humanity; that is
- 45 total law enforced by total government can lead to total utopia.



1 By "total government", we really mean "totalitarian government". Their "legislation" only advances a perfect society for  
2 "them" at the expense of everyone else and the people in general. Now that's legalism!! Scary, Harry! If you want to know  
3 more about "total government", watch the following video:

*Overview of America*, Form #12.011  
<http://sedm.org/Forms/FormIndex.htm>

4 The above is absolutely, 100% correct . .but there is not a genuine Christian in this country that will admit to being lawless.  
5 Dispensational Christians see themselves as dead to the law. And if so, why shouldn't the family, church, and state also be  
6 dead to the law? That is, because they see the law as abolished, the church has no moral vigor to defend it (in dispensational  
7 circles); thus, churchmen are lawless having surrendered civil authority to follow whatever their little humanistic hearts  
8 conceive to be law. Thus, the church is not only lawless, it is idolatrous for allowing an alien law order to take over this  
9 country.

10 We would also add that the essence of what it means to be a "lukewarm Christian" as described in Revelation is that one does  
11 NOT regard the Bible as a law book, but simply a history book. Hence, modern lukewarm 501(c)(3) churches are really just  
12 a mutual admiration society and an entertainment committee, rather than God's Dept. of Justice.

13 The modern interpretation of Eph. 6:12 is an example of how the misinterpretation of God's law and word games by pastors  
14 is used to escape accountability under God's law to apply that law to the real affairs of life. The following often quoted  
15 scripture and the interpretation of most bible commentaries on the subject conclude that evil is not an Earthly thing, but a  
16 Heavenly thing that is not relevant or real for the average Christian:

17 *"For we do not wrestle against flesh and blood, but against principalities, against powers, against the rulers of*  
18 *the darkness of this age, against spiritual hosts of wickedness in the heavenly places."*  
19 *[Eph. 6:12, Bible, NKJV]*

20 We think that pastors objectify rather than personify the evil described in this verse so that they and their church never have  
21 to take any social responsibility to fix what is wrong with society by applying God's law to the practical affairs of life. By  
22 objectify, we me to avoid connecting sin and the need for repentance with real people, real events, and real actions, and  
23 especially actions of secular leaders. This is the heart of the corruption in the church: Indifference to REAL evil in the world.  
24 We should always remember that the opposite of love is NOT hate, but indifference. The competition between God and Satan  
25 is a competition between love and indifference. Indifference toward real evil in the real world is satanic.

26 Today's Christians don't have the fizz of a seven day old coke. We've lost our snap, crackle, and pop. It was said of Amalek,  
27 the great enemy of God's people, that he cut off the tails of Israel's stragglers in the desert; that is, he castrated them. The  
28 Amalek liberals cut off the gonads of Christians during their public/government school de-education.<sup>23</sup> The point is the  
29 enemies of God express their hate by attacking and destroying God's people. To castrate a man is to render him powerless.  
30 Liberals by their constant cutting assaults on Christians have castrated a whole generation. Today's believers have "no balls"  
31 crudely speaking. They are political eunuchs who lack moral energy and vigor to procreate or encourage believers to be  
32 active in politics. They are slaves of political correctness. When is the last time you've heard a politician quote a Bible verse  
33 to advance a kingdom agenda?

34 The Amalekites of our day are godless, pagan liberals in the media and Congress and public education. These people are  
35 totally hostile to the gospel. Rosie O'Donnell stated that:

36 *"Radical Christianity is just as threatening as radical Islam in a country like America."*

37 Regarding Rosie O'Donnell, we don't take anything she says seriously. She is a hateful, lesbian, anti-Christian, intolerant  
38 bigot who despises anyone who disagrees with her liberal leanings.

---

<sup>23</sup> *Amalek's warfare*: Midrashic lore on how the Amalekites made themselves hateful to Israel by cutting off "the circumcised members of the Israelites (prisoners and corpses) tossing them into the air and shouting obscene curses a YHWH saying, "Take what you have chosen". This tradition is a deduction from Deuteronomy 25:18, and "cut off the tails of all your stragglers" alluding to Amalek's harassment of the Hebrews at Rephidim during the Exodus.

Allen Edwardes, *Erotica Judaica, A Sexual History of the Jews* (NY: Julian Press, 1967) p. 56. See also Exodus 17.

1 The point is Christian churches and churches in general have been feminized by the public school system indoctrination and  
2 no battle in history has been won by women!! None! Never! Every battle that has been fought has been won by men . . . and  
3 the church is no different. We need real men leading God's people! Christians aren't procreating Christ honoring politicians  
4 because they lack the testosterone to fight the Lord's political battles.

5 In defense against the previous paragraph, some might cite the exploits of Helen of Troy, but in fact, she motivated men but  
6 did not fight. Helen of Troy was merely a pawn in a war when she left her husband for the pretty boy Paris. (On the other  
7 hand, even real men fight over dumb things. The ten-year Trojan war was fought over the loss of Helen's sexual favors. And  
8 the perfumed Paris did little of the fighting. By the end of it she probably wasn't even that good looking. (So at times Men  
9 will be Men but also at times they fit the saying "boys will be boys").

10 Wars must be fought by men with gonads because only fertile men have the motivation to fight for the next generation. For  
11 this reason, eunuchs were not allowed to serve in political positions. Their only interest is here and now.

12 But Queen Elizabeth I...now there was a man! She rode into the field on a day when her scraggly troops needed encouragement  
13 and told them they would succeed. Her biography reports that she told them "I may have the body of a weak woman...but I  
14 have the heart and stomach of a King." The cheers must have been deafening. When Elizabeth died Mary Queen of Scots'  
15 son James came to the throne and spent much of his time dawdling with his boy paramour. The people shook their collective  
16 heads it is reported and the comment of one of them has come down through history..."Before we had King Elizabeth...now  
17 we have Queen James!"

18 The point is that honest stalwart courage and strength can be found in women as well as men. Women who do not spend their  
19 time and energy fighting to undermine men. And men need those women, not to stay home and knit socks for their husbands  
20 on the field of battle, but to join in and hurl their lances for God's law. They do so not usually, though, in a physical capacity  
21 and more in a moral and legal and/or political capacity. Unfortunately, these women are often more concerned about security  
22 than truth or justice, which may explain why the Bible refers to them as the weaker vessel in 1 Peter 3:7.

23 If 70-80% of the people claim to be Christians in this country, why isn't the church having more impact? Why are we NOT  
24 procreating legal warriors and generals who will fight, kick, and scratch in the nasty political arenas of our age? They've been  
25 emasculated by modern day Amaleks . . . so much so that most Christians don't have the strength of a potato chip. Modern  
26 day Christians are jousting against professional black knights on toy horses and toothpicks.

27 Here is what the Savior said on this important subject about "lukewarm" Christians and churches:

28 *The Lukewarm Church*

29 *"And to the angel of the church of the Laodiceans write,*

30 *"These things says the Amen, the Faithful and True Witness, the Beginning of the creation of God: "**I know your***  
31 ***works, that you are neither cold nor hot. I could wish you were cold or hot. So then, because you are lukewarm,***  
32 ***and neither cold nor hot, I will vomit you out of My mouth. Because you say, 'I am rich, have become wealthy,***  
33 ***and have need of nothing'—and do not know that you are wretched, miserable, poor, blind, and naked— I***  
34 ***counsel you to buy from Me gold refined in the fire, that you may be rich; and white garments, that you may***  
35 ***be clothed, that the shame of your nakedness may not be revealed; and anoint your eyes with eye salve, that***  
36 ***you may see. As many as I love, I rebuke and chasten. Therefore be zealous and repent.** Behold, I stand at the*  
37 *door and knock. If anyone hears My voice and opens the door, I will come in to him and dine with him, and he*  
38 *with Me. To him who overcomes I will grant to sit with Me on My throne, as I also overcame and sat down with*  
39 *My Father on His throne.*

40 *"He who has an ear, let him hear what the Spirit says to the churches."  
41 [Rev. 3:14-22, Bible, NKJV]*

42 Here is an illustration fresh from C.N.N. that illustrates Christian apathy:

43 *After President Obama nominated Solicitor General Elena Kagan to the Supreme Court today (5.10.2010),  
44 C.N.N. Cambell Brown queried his panel on this question:*

45 *If Kagan is accepted, this will be the first time in U.S. History we haven't had a Protestant on the Supreme Court.  
46 "What do you think," Cambell asked.*

1 "Linda Greenhouse, Yale Senior Law Professor spoke up and told Cambell Brown how the cow ate the cabbage:  
2 We are living in different times and "NO ONE REALLY CARES . . ." [Greenhouse wasn't being derogatory, she  
3 just spoke the truth]."

4 Interpretation: There is no Bible-believing, Christ exalting legal mind that believes in the Ten Commandments as the rules  
5 of life on the U.S. Supreme Court, and the majority of Christians in this country just don't have enough energy in their batteries  
6 to power a miniature light bulb because they don't read their Bible nor believe what it says.

7 This website, better than most, can challenge Christians to repent of their moral relativism and return to God's law-word as  
8 the source of law for all freedom loving people.

9 Lastly, the following excellent sermon by Reformed Theology Pastor Tim Keller explains WHY Christians have a duty to  
10 learn and obey God's law, how they shirk that duty, and the proper biblical motivations for treating that duty SERIOUSLY:

*Why We Should Obey God's Law*, Pastor Tim Keller  
<http://sedm.org/why-we-should-obey-the-law/>

## 11 **5 Corruption of the meaning of Biblical Terms**

12 A common theme within Christianity is to misinterpret key terms and their contexts in the New Testament. The following  
13 key terms are most susceptible to such misinterpretation:

- 14 1. "Israel"
- 15 2. "Israelite"
- 16 3. "Jerusalem"
- 17 4. "Gentile"
- 18 5. "Satan"
- 19 6. "Zion"
- 20 7. "Babylon"

21 An entire website is available to explain HOW and WHY the above terms are misinterpreted and misapplied by the vast  
22 majority of contemporary Christianity. Below is the website:

*Sheldon Emry Memorial Library*, Pastor Sheldon Emry  
<http://sheldonemrylibrary.famguardian.org/>

23 Specifically, you can find details on the correct Biblical definition and application of each of the above terms as follows on  
24 the above website:

- 25 1. "Israel"
  - 26 1.1. *New Testament Israel*, Pastor Sheldon Emry  
27 <http://sheldonemrylibrary.famguardian.org/Books/newtestamentisrael.pdf>
  - 28 1.2. *The Marks of Israel*, Pastor Sheldon Emry  
29 <http://sheldonemrylibrary.famguardian.org/Books/Marks%20of%20Israel.pdf>

- 30 2. "Israelite"

31 *Who Are Israelites*, Pastor Sheldon Emry  
<http://sheldonemrylibrary.famguardian.org/Books/Who%20Are%20Israelites.pdf>

- 32 3. "Jerusalem"

*The Old Jerusalem is not the New Jerusalem*, Pastor Sheldon Emry  
<http://sheldonemrylibrary.famguardian.org/Books/oldjerusalem.pdf>

- 33 4. "Gentile"

*A Study of the word Gentile*, Pastor Curtis Clair Ewing  
<http://sheldonemrylibrary.famguardian.org/Books/Gentile%20-%20Ewing.pdf>

- 34 5. "Satan"

*The Satan Controversy*, Pastor Sheldon Emry  
<http://sheldonemrylibrary.famguardian.org/Books/Satan%20Controversy.pdf>

6. "Zion"

- 1 6.1. *Zion in America*, Sermon 8315b, Pastor Sheldon Emry  
 2 <http://sheldonemrylibrary.famguardian.org/CassetteTapedMessages/1982/8212a.mp3>  
 3 6.2. *Zion of Bible Prophecy*, Pastor C.O. Stadklev  
 4 <http://sheldonemrylibrary.famguardian.org/TheCoStadklevLibraryAddition/Stadsklev%20-%20Zion%20of%20Bible%20Prophecy.pdf>  
 5 7. “Babylon”  
 6 

<i>What is Mystery Babylon?</i> , Pastor Sheldon Emry <a href="http://sheldonemrylibrary.famguardian.org/Books/MysteryBabylon/mysterybabylon.htm">http://sheldonemrylibrary.famguardian.org/Books/MysteryBabylon/mysterybabylon.htm</a>
--

7 The above list is by no means exhaustive and does not list all the resources available on each subject. We therefore encourage  
 8 you to visit the [Sheldon Emry Memorial Library](#) site on your own if you wish to delve further into the Biblical meaning and  
 9 context for all the above terms.

## 10 **6 Common Flawed Christian Arguments**

11 The statements listed in this section represent rebutted common flawed arguments advanced by both church clergy and their  
 12 parishioners.

### 13 **6.1 How Churches are Lying to You About What “Increase” means in The Biblical Requirement to Tithe**

14 The requirement to tithe is found in Deut. 14:22-20:

15 *Tithing Principles*

16  
 17 <sup>2</sup> “You shall truly tithe all the increase of your grain that the field produces year by year. <sup>23</sup>And you shall eat  
 18 before the Lord your God, in the place where He chooses to make His name abide, the tithe of your grain and  
 19 your new wine and your oil, of the firstborn of your herds and your flocks, that you may learn to fear the Lord  
 20 your God always. <sup>24</sup>But if the journey is too long for you, so that you are not able to carry the tithe, or if the place  
 21 where the Lord your God chooses to put His name is too far from you, when the Lord your God has blessed you,<sup>2</sup>  
 22 <sup>5</sup> then you shall exchange it for money, take the money in your hand, and go to the place which the Lord your God  
 23 chooses. <sup>26</sup> And you shall spend that money for whatever your heart desires: for oxen or sheep, for wine or similar  
 24 drink, for whatever your heart desires; you shall eat there before the Lord your God, and you shall rejoice, you  
 25 and your household. <sup>27</sup> You shall not forsake the Levite who is within your gates, for he has no part nor inheritance  
 26 with you.

27 <sup>28</sup> “At the end of every third year you shall bring out the tithe of your produce of that year and store it up within  
 28 your gates. <sup>29</sup> And the Levite, because he has no portion nor inheritance with you, and the stranger and the  
 29 fatherless and the widow who are within your gates, may come and eat and be satisfied, that the Lord your God  
 30 may bless you in all the work of your hand which you do.  
 31 [[Deut. 14:22-30](#), Bible, NKJV]

32 On the one hand, hyper-grace dispensationalist churches will tell you that the Old Testament is repealed, and yet when the  
 33 rubber meets the road and they need money, they will tell you that the above part of the Old Testament is still law FOR  
 34 THEM. Either the entire Old Testament is law for the modern Christian or NONE of it is law. You can’t have it both ways.  
 35 And you can’t essentially by whim turn that which you say ISN’T law into law. Only God, as the supreme Lawgiver can do  
 36 that. More on the lawlessness and anarchism of dispensational hypergrace churches at:

<a href="#">Laws of the Bible</a> , Form #13.001, Section 3 <a href="https://sedm.org/Litigation/09-Reference/LawsOfTheBible.pdf">https://sedm.org/Litigation/09-Reference/LawsOfTheBible.pdf</a>
--

37 Further, some Bible translations say “one tenth” is the tithe and others don’t quality it at all. The NIV version says one tenth  
 38 while the New King James version doesn’t. Which is more correct?

39 Then there is the problem of defining what “increase” means in Deut. 14:22. Does it mean PROFIT or GROSS? The intended  
 40 meaning seems to be PROFIT and not GROSS, just like the Sixteenth Amendment which even to this day authorizes an  
 41 income tax ONLY on Profit and not ALL EARNINGS or GROSS:

42 *“We must reject in this case, as we have rejected in cases arising under the Corporation Excise Tax Act of 1909*  
 43 *(Doyle, Collector, v. Mitchell Brothers Co., 247 U.S. 179, 38 Sup.Ct. 467, 62 L.Ed.–), the broad contention*

1 submitted on behalf of the government that all receipts—everything that comes in—are income within the proper  
2 definition of the term ‘gross income,’ and that the entire proceeds of a conversion of capital assets, in whatever  
3 form and under whatever circumstances accomplished, should be treated as gross income. Certainly the term  
4 “income’ has no broader meaning in the 1913 act than in that of 1909 (see Stratton’s Independence v. Howbert,  
5 231 U.S. 399, 416, 417 S., 34 Sup.Ct. 136), and for the present purpose we assume there is not difference in its  
6 meaning as used in the two acts.”  
7 [Southern Pacific Co., v. Lowe, [247 U.S. 330](#), 335, 38 S.Ct. 540 (1918)]

8 “The Sixteenth Amendment declares that Congress shall have power to levy and collect taxes on income, “from  
9 [271 U.S. 174] whatever source derived,” without apportionment among the several states and without regard  
10 to any census or enumeration. It was not the purpose or effect of that amendment to bring any new subject within  
11 the taxing power. Congress already had power to tax all incomes. But taxes on incomes from some sources had  
12 been held to be “direct taxes” within the meaning of the constitutional requirement as to apportionment. Art. 1,  
13 § 2, cl. 3, § 9, cl. 4; Pollock v. Farmers’ Loan & Trust Co., 158 U.S. 601. The Amendment relieved from that  
14 requirement, and obliterated the distinction in that respect between taxes on income that are direct taxes and  
15 those that are not, and so put on the same basis all incomes “from whatever source derived.” Brushaber v. Union  
16 P. R. Co., 240 U.S. 1, 17. “Income” has been taken to mean the same thing as used in the Corporation Excise  
17 Tax Act of 1909, in the Sixteenth Amendment, and in the various revenue acts subsequently passed. Southern  
18 Pacific Co. v. Lowe, 247 U.S. 330, 335; Merchants’ L. & T. Co. v. Smietanka, 255 U.S. 509, 219. After full  
19 consideration, this Court declared that income may be defined as gain derived from capital, from labor, or from  
20 both combined, including profit gained through sale or conversion of capital. Stratton’s Independence v.  
21 Howbert, 231 U.S. 399, 415; Doyle v. Mitchell Brothers Co., 247 U.S. 179, 185; Eisner v. Macomber, 252 U.S. 189,  
22 207. And that definition has been adhered to and applied repeatedly. See, e.g., Merchants’ L. & T. Co. v.  
23 Smietanka, supra; 518; Goodrich v. Edwards, 255 U.S. 527, 535; United States v. Phellis, 257 U.S. 156, 169;  
24 Miles v. Safe Deposit Co., 259 U.S. 247, 252-253; United States v. Supplee-Biddle Co., 265 U.S. 189, 194; Irwin  
25 v. Gavit, 268 U.S. 161, 167; Edwards v. Cuba Railroad, 268 U.S. 628, 633. In determining what constitutes  
26 income, substance rather than form is to be given controlling weight. Eisner v. Macomber, supra, 206. [271 U.S.  
27 175]”  
28 [Bowers v. Kerbaugh-Empire Co., [271 U.S. 170](#), 174, (1926)]

29 NOTE that if the income tax WAS UPON GROSS and included labor as property, then the tax would be a tax on PROPERTY  
30 and not PROFIT DERIVED from property, and thus UNCONSTITUTIONAL:

31 “As repeatedly pointed out by this court, the Corporation Tax Law of 1909..imposed an excise or privilege tax,  
32 and not in any sense, a tax upon property or upon income merely as income. It was enacted in view of the decision  
33 of Pollock v. Farmer’s Loan & T. Co., 157 U.S. 429, 29 L.Ed. 759, 15 Sup.St.Rep. 673, 158 U.S. 601, 39 L.Ed.  
34 1108, 15 Sup.Ct.Rep. 912, which held the income tax provisions of a previous law to be unconstitutional because  
35 amounting in effect to a direct tax upon property within the meaning of the Constitution, and because not  
36 apportioned in the manner required by that instrument.”  
37 [U.S. v. Whiteridge, [231 U.S. 144](#), 34 S.Sup.Ct. 24 (1913)]

38 So, LIKE the corrupt IRS, which insists that ALL earnings are “gross income”, even though it is only profit from labor by  
39 people OTHER than yourself that are “gross income”, churches are lying to you about what “increase” means in the context  
40 of tithing.

41 We conclude in the following that if you declare earnings from labor as profit, you are volunteering to make taxable that  
42 which is NOT taxable:

- 43 1. [How State Nationals Volunteer to Pay Income Tax](#), Form #08.024, pp. 94-96  
44 <https://sedm.org/Forms/08-PolicyDocs/HowYouVolForIncomeTax.pdf>
- 45 2. [Proof that Involuntary Income Taxes on Your Labor are Slavery](#), Form #05.055\*\* (Member Subscriptions)  
46 <https://sedm.org/product/proof-that-involuntary-income-taxes-on-your-labor-are-slavery-form-05-055/>

47 In the context of the Mormon Church (LDS), the following video proves how they are engaging in this fraud as well to  
48 maximize their revenues. This video is produced by an ex-Mormon lawyer about the law of tithing in the LDS church:

[Why Most Latter day Saints Are Over paying Their Tithing By 1000s Of Dollars](https://youtu.be/hIU0SmyVwtU), Mormon Discussion, Inc  
<https://youtu.be/hIU0SmyVwtU>

49 So what we have in truth is institutionalized covetousness in the Christian Church and the LDS church in violation of the Ten  
50 Commandments.

51 “For the love of money is a root of all kinds of evil, for which some have strayed from the faith in their greediness,  
52 and pierced themselves through with many sorrows.”  
53 [1 Tim. 6:10, Bible, NKJV]

1 Here is what NikeInsights says on the subject as a Pastor with over 50 years in Christian Ministry and a PhD in Theology:

2 *How can you tithe when you haven't earned a gold or silver dollar your entire life?*

3 *How do you tithe digits that depreciate the minute they are in your account?*

4 *How do you tithe during a period of rapid inflation when it everything doubles in value?*

5 *How does the average Christian tithe without destroying his future?*

6 *How do you tithe when the government takes 60% of your income in taxation?*

7 *How do you tithe something based on the "faith and credit" of the United States?*

8 *You're correct, we are being lied to by the State and by churchmen.*

9 *[Brook Stockton, Retired Christian Pastor with over 50 years in ministry;*

10 <http://nikeinsights.famguardian.org>]

11 According to Barna, the average Christian does not tithe 10% of their income to their church. In fact, only 21% of Christians  
12 said they give 10% or more of their income, while 25% said they do not give financially at all. The majority of Christians  
13 give in lower or less predictable amounts. [What Is a Tithe? New Data on Perceptions of the 10 Percent – Barna Group](#)

14 Learn more

15 [1barna.com](http://barna.com)

16 [2baptistpress.com](http://baptistpress.com)



17

18 If Christians shouldn't trust the government, should they believe a pastor who works for the government as a 501c3  
19 government corporation that has surrendered the headship of Christ to the government?

## 6.2 “Being a Christian means we will go to heaven”<sup>24</sup>

Perhaps the most universally misunderstood truth about the Bible is in regard to what happens when one dies, whether he goes to heaven or hell for eternity. Countless millions believe—and hear their ministers preach—that we must “believe in Jesus” so we can “enter heaven” or be “saved in the rapture.”

Conversely, it is said that all who do not “know Jesus in their hearts” will be, at death, instantly sent to hell, where they will suffer torment for eternity.

Is this concept biblical? Ask your minister to show you any passage that says you will go to Heaven. If he attempts to twist or force Old Testament scriptures to say that Moses and Elijah are in heaven, then ask him why Jesus Christ so clearly stated, “And no man has ascended up to heaven” (John 3:13). Ask: Was Christ confused? Did Jesus Christ, as He worked with the Father, just never happen to bump into Moses and Elijah in heaven? Of course, this is ridiculous!

Then what does happen when you die? Examine how it is described in the book of Psalm:

*“His [man’s] breath goes forth, he returns to his earth; in that very day his thoughts perish.”*  
[Psalm 146:4]

Yes, when man dies, he stops breathing. His body returns to the earth. He has no thoughts—he knows absolutely nothing (Ecc. 9:5)!

To die means to be dead—the opposite of life. You have no thoughts, no concept of time; you are dead. Do not allow your minister to explain away these verses by simply saying that being in hell means being “cut off from God.” The book of Isaiah shows that sin, of which we are all guilty (Rom. 3:23), already cuts us off from God while we are alive (Isa. 59:2).

In God’s eyes, human beings simply fall asleep when they die. However, like Christ, true Christians who die will be resurrected:

*“For if we believe that Jesus died and rose again, even so them also which sleep in Jesus [died in Christ] will God bring with Him [at His Second Coming]”*  
[I Thes. 4:14]

At Christ’s Return, the saints will be raised from the dead and receive their reward. Until then, they are waiting to be resurrected.

The oft-quoted “beatitudes” describe this reward:

*“Blessed are the meek: for they shall inherit the earth.”*  
[Matt. 5:5]

This is quoted from Psalm 37:11. Space does not permit listing all the passages that explain a Christian’s reward.

A loving, merciful God has a plan to offer salvation to all people who ever lived, but according to His timetable (Rev. 20:11-13). The true God wants everyone to make it into His kingdom. He is a caring God, who wants the best for mankind.

God is not some “cruel monster” who sends people to an eternally burning hell for being ignorant of Him and His Way. What kind of God would say He is described as love (I John 4:8), and then horribly torture billions because they had never heard of Him or the name of Christ through no fault of their own—in essence, refusing to give the masses a chance at salvation?

You should question the concept of the brutal god you hear described each week at church services—the one referred to as a trinity, a mystery that you cannot—and should not try to—understand!

<sup>24</sup> Source: <http://www.realtruth.org/articles/525-sq.html>.

### 6.3 “We are saved by grace. No works are necessary”<sup>25</sup>

Most assume that grace and works are mutually exclusive. The Bible says no such thing. In fact, you may be surprised that God’s Word demonstrates *both* are required.

Think of it this way. When one is born in the United States, he is an American citizen. It does not matter the national origin of his parents, how much money he has, or any other factor; the process is automatic. However, what one does with that citizenship is up to him. How hard he will work in school and how diligent he will be in the workforce will determine how successful he will be. It simply comes down to his works!

Grace and works are similar. Christians are saved by grace. There is nothing any person can do to earn salvation. It is wholly and completely a gift from God. No amount of commandment-keeping can make up for or atone for violating the Law. Only Jesus Christ’s blood can do this.

However, your reward (John 14:2-3) in God’s kingdom, after receiving salvation, is determined by your works. The commandments are ten laws that describe personal responsibility. That part you must do. Yet it is not you doing this, but Christ in you; and Christ in you will keep the same commandments He kept when He was in the flesh almost 2,000 years ago!

Again, do not believe any reasoning of man, but look directly into the pages of your Bible. Tying two passages together makes this clear:

*“But God, who is rich in mercy, for His great love wherewith He loved us, even when we were dead in sins, has quickened us together with Christ, (by grace you are saved;) and has raised us up together, and made us sit together in heavenly places in Christ Jesus: that in the ages to come He might show the exceeding riches of His grace in His kindness toward us through Christ Jesus. For by grace are you saved through faith; and that not of yourselves: it is the gift of God: not of works, lest any man should boast. For we are His workmanship, created in Christ Jesus unto good works, which God has before ordained that we should walk in them”*  
[Eph. 2:4-10]

Clearly, Christians are not saved by works—but works are required:

*“Even so faith, if it has not works, is dead, being alone...You have faith, and I have works: show me your faith without your works, and I will show you my faith by my works...But will you know, O vain man, that faith without works is dead?...See you how faith wrought [worked] with his works, and by works was faith made perfect?”*  
[Jms. 2:17-18, 20, 22]

The entire chapter goes into detail about how works and faith work together to perfect Christians. Christians demonstrate their faith in God by keeping His Law, yet it requires faith in Christ’s power at work in the person for him to succeed. Peter, for instance, explained that we should not use Christian liberty, meaning grace, as a license to sin, which is another way of saying that we should still produce much good fruit:

*“For this is the will of God, that by doing good you may put to silence the ignorance of foolish men— as free, yet not using liberty as a cloak for vice, but as bondservants of God. Honor all people. Love the brotherhood. Fear God. Honor the king.”*  
[1 Peter 2:15-17, Bible, NKJV]

Jesus also affirmed the view of this section when he used the parable of the vine dresser to illustrate that the kingdom of heaven is like a vine, that we are the branches, and that those vines that do not produce much fruit, meaning good works, will be cast into the fire:

*“I am the vine, you are the branches. He who abides in Me, and I in him, bears much fruit; for without Me you can do nothing. **If anyone does not abide in Me, he is cast out as a branch and is withered; and they gather them and throw them into the fire, and they are burned. If you abide in Me, and My words abide in you, you will ask what you desire, and it shall be done for you. By this My Father is glorified, that you bear much fruit; so you will be My disciples.**”*  
[John 15:1-8, Bible, NKJV]

<sup>25</sup> Source: <http://www.realtruth.org/articles/525-sq.html>



## 6.4 “The God of the old testament is a different god than the new testament”<sup>26</sup>

Perhaps the easiest question to prove is the identity of the God of the Old Testament. You may be surprised to find the answer in the New Testament. So, without doubt, your preacher is familiar with it.

Regarding ancient Israel, the apostle Paul wrote,

*“And did all eat the same spiritual meat; and did all drink the same spiritual drink: for they drank of that spiritual Rock that followed them: and that Rock was Christ.”*  
[I Cor. 10:3-4]

How plain! Jesus Christ is the God of both the Old and New Testaments.

In both New and Old Testaments, Christ is described as the God who never changes (Mal. 3:6; Heb. 13:8). Given what you have read thus far, this makes perfect sense. The New Testament teachings reflect the Old. The Law of God—the Ten Commandments—is still binding on Christians today. What happens when we die, what sin is and so many more doctrines are in complete agreement when compared to the Old Testament.

Again ask: Why have you been deceived? What causes your minister to hide these easily provable truths?

If these truths were taught, they would point to the true God of the Bible and, in turn, would point to the primary purpose of the New Testament—the establishment and building of Christ’s Church.

## 6.5 “My church or faith is the only true church”<sup>27</sup>

Every major metropolis, city, village or one-stoplight town has something in common. They all have churches sprinkled throughout. Thousands of disagreeing and competing organizations seemingly cannot agree on anything.

Is Jesus part of the mass confusion that is professing Christianity? In the book of Amos, Christ, the God of the Old Testament, stated,

*“Can two walk together, except they be agreed?”*  
[Amos 3:3]

In Matthew 16, Jesus stated,

*“I will build My Church; and the gates of hell shall not prevail against it.”*  
[Matt. 16:18]

Christ said He would build His Church—singular! Not thousands of fighting and competing churches. Jesus further stated His Church would never disappear.

Your “job,” as one striving to be a Christian, is to seek out and find that Church! It is only from that Church you will receive true spiritual nourishment, which will allow you to develop and grow in perfect godly character.

Again, ask yourself: Why are you reading the truths here?

Christ built one—and only one—Church to carry out the commissions He set forth. There is only one Church that fulfills all the requirements found throughout the New Testament. It is that Church from which you are learning these and many more Bible truths.

Finally, ask yourself why you are following ministers who are deceiving you—when you can learn God’s Way, complete and unabridged?

<sup>26</sup> Source: <http://www.realtruth.org/articles/525-sq.html>

<sup>27</sup> Source: <http://www.realtruth.org/articles/525-sq.html>

## 6.6 “Christians aren’t allowed to judge”

Webster’s dictionary defines the word "judge" as follows:

*"To form an opinion about through careful weighing of evidence and testing of premises."*<sup>28</sup>

The book of Leviticus says we should not only judge, but that we should judge righteously:

*"Ye shall do no unrighteousness in judgment; thou shalt not respect the person of the poor, nor honor the person of the mighty; but in righteousness shalt thou judge thy neighbor."  
[Lev. 19:15]*

Some people would say that quotes like this from the old testament don't apply, because grace was not operative before Jesus died for our sins. However, Jesus himself said:

*"Do not think that I came to destroy the Law or the Prophets. I did not come to destroy but to fulfill."  
[Matt. 5:17]*

Proverbs makes it very clear that we need to judge to survive:

*"The lips of the righteous nourish many, but fools die for lack of judgment."  
[Prov. 10:21, NIV]*

*"Open your mouth for the speechless, in the cause of all who are appointed to die. Open your mouth, judge righteously, and plead the cause of the poor and the needy. "  
[Prov. 31:8-9]*

Jesus also said about judging (Matt. 7:1-7):

*"JUDGE not, that you not be judged. For with what judgment you judge, you will be judged; and with the measure you use, it will be measured back to you. And why do you look at the speck in your brother's eye, but do not consider the plank in your own eye? Or how can you say to your brother 'Let me remove the speck from your eye'; and look, a plank is in your own eye? Hypocrite! First remove the plank from your own eye, and then you will see clearly to remove the speck from your brother's eye. Do not give what is holy to the dogs; nor cast your pearls before swine, lest they trample them under their feet, and turn you in pieces. "*

What Jesus was saying here is *not* that we shouldn't judge, but rather that we need to exercise *righteous judgment* by continually examining ourselves, our hearts, and be in constant communication with God through prayer. We need the influence of the Holy Spirit in our lives in order to be a righteous judge. Jesus is saying that we need to apply the same standard to ourselves that we apply to others, and we need to do it BEFORE others have an opportunity, so we won't look like hypocrites. Only by doing this will we have a basis for judging and correcting others around us in love and grace and without hypocrisy.

The apostle Paul said *"For if we would judge ourselves, we should not be judged"* (1 Corinthians 11:31). Since the very word "judgment" has developed a negative connotation within professed Christianity, is it any wonder that professed Christians do not practice judgment, or realize what it is when they do?

*"My people are destroyed for lack of knowledge"  
[Hosea 4:6]*

*A trick of Satan has been to rob the people of God of righteous judgment in the name of love, i.e., "We ought to be loving and not judgmental." "We are not ignorant of his devices" (2 Corinthians 2:11). By divorcing God's attribute of being the "Righteous Judge" (2 Timothy 4:8) from His attribute of being the "God of Love" (2 Corinthians 13:11), "false teachers" (2 Peter 2:1) have robbed the Church of the Godly conduct of "righteous judgment" (John 7:24). Instead, an anemic form of love is held forth as the correct alternative for Christian conduct, not caring that the LORD Jesus has given the correct view of love and judgment to the Body of Christ in His letters to the Seven Churches of the Book of Revelation, i.e., "As many as I love, I rebuke and chasten: be zealous therefore, and repent" (Revelation 3:19).*

<sup>28</sup> Webster's Ninth New Collegiate Dictionary, 1983, ISBN 0-87779-510-X, p. 653.

1 Without the correct conduct of righteous judgment, the professed Church is paving the way for the acceptance of the  
2 Antichrist. This will not only result in the Backslidden Foolish Virgins (Matthew 25) being left at the Pre-Tribulational  
3 Rapture, but the perishing world will consequently be punished by God by allowing them to be deceived by the Antichrist.  
4 "And for this cause God shall send them strong delusion, that they should believe a lie" (2 Thessalonians 2:11). What lie?  
5 That Antichrist is God. "Let no man deceive you by any means: for that day shall not come, except there come a falling away  
6 first, and that man of sin be revealed, the son of perdition; Who opposeth and exalteth himself above all that is called God,  
7 or that is worshipped; so that he as God sitteth in the Temple of God, showing himself that he is God" (2 Thessalonians 2:3-  
8 4).

9 And, all of this because the Church has been taught a false standard of not exercising judgment. The church has been sold  
10 this lie by the popular liberal media and contemporary culture, which emphasizes diversity and tolerance. Diversity and  
11 tolerance *do* have a rightful place within the church, but only insofar as race, religion, national origin, age, sex, and marital  
12 status are concerned. Beyond these nondiscretionary characteristics or attributes of people, character and the choices people  
13 make *do* matter and the Bible teaches us that we *should* righteously judge how people behave. But, "when the enemy shall  
14 come in like a flood, the Spirit of the LORD shall lift up a standard against him" (Isaiah 59:19).

15 Some Christians who have been sold the false idea that we shouldn't judge by our popular culture and the media, however,  
16 will try to make judgment more politically correct by using such words as "discernment" and "discretion" to describe it, but  
17 we need to remember that these words are types of judgment and are synonyms for judgment. Remember that we can lie to  
18 ourselves simply by the words we use to communicate or describe things. Our culture has taken this lie one step further by  
19 attempting to deglamorize, denigrate, and criticize those who judge or discriminate. They have in effect criminalized the use  
20 of the words "judge" and "discriminate". But remember that you can't criticize, deglamorize, or denigrate people without  
21 judging them! What they are doing is judging those who judge, and if judging is wrong, then using judgment to fight judgment  
22 is just as wrong!

23 We can use words to hide from the truth, or we can speak the unadulterated truth in love and with mercy. The latter is  
24 preferable. Therefore, for occasions where we are dealing with a person who stubbornly refuses to admit that they have a  
25 duty to judge righteously, consider the following roles and stewardships that we fulfill every day as members of society and  
26 how we can righteously fulfill the stewardship we have without judging:

### 27 1. Christian

- 28 1.1 How can you reprove, rebuke, and correct wrongdoers if you can't judge their behavior? (see Leviticus 19:17,  
29 Prov. 24:25, Prov. 28:23, and Prov. 8:13)
- 30 1.2 How can you abstain from sexual immorality and "flee fornication" unless you can judge these behaviors? (see 1  
31 Cor. 6:18, 1 Thess. 4:3-6)
- 32 1.3 How can you discern right from wrong as a Christian and whether what your pastor or others say or do is  
33 consistent with God's word and commands if you can't judge?
- 34 1.4 How can you determine if a person is Christ or the Anti-Christ if you can't judge righteously?
- 35 1.5 How can you have the fear of the Lord we are commanded to have and hate evil, pride, arrogance, and the evil  
36 way as demonstrated by behaviors of people around you if you can't judge those behaviors? (see Prov. 8:13)
- 37 1.6 How can we ensure that we are demonstrating our faith with works and glorifying our father in heaven with those  
38 works if we can't judge our own behavior and motives?

### 39 2. Marriage

- 40 2.1 How can you decide (judge) if you should get married if you aren't allowed to judge the character or the behavior  
41 or your prospective spouse? (see 2 Cor. 6:14)
- 42 2.2 How can you discern whether you should divorce biblically unless you can judge for yourself whether your  
43 spouse has committed adultery?

### 44 3. Parenthood

- 45 3.1 How can you discipline your children if you can't judge their behavior and whether they are telling you the truth?
- 46 3.2 How can you protect your children from harmful influences if you can't judge those influences? For instance,  
47 how can you regulate your child's television viewing habits and prevent them from watching certain harmful  
48 shows unless you can judge those shows as morally depraved and defend that judgment in front of your children  
49 when they dispute it with you?

### 50 4. Management/vocation

- 51 4.1 How can you trust your employee or your boss if you can't judge their character and whether they are telling the  
52 truth?

- 1 4.2 How can you know what you have been ordered to do by your superior unless you can judge his intent in the  
2 absence of feedback from him?
- 3 4.3 How can you know if you are obeying work rules unless you can judge the intent of those work rules and whether  
4 you are complying with both the spirit and the letter of those rules?
- 5 4.4 How can you know if you are entering into a business relationship with a dishonest client unless you can judge  
6 the character of that person?
- 7 5. Voting
- 8 5.1 How can you vote for godly candidates if you can't judge their character or their qualifications?
- 9 5.2 If you can't judge the character of candidates, then why vote at all because character and behavior in that scenario  
10 become completely irrelevant? Is it any wonder then that voters have become politically passive and voter  
11 participation is down in an environment where our society criticizes those who judge?
- 12 6. Jury Duty
- 13 6.1 How can you discern guilt or innocence of the defendant as a juror if you can't judge? As a juror, you are not  
14 allowed to let others make your decision for you.
- 15 6.2 How can determine and apply both the facts and the law to a specific case and come to a conclusion if you can't  
16 judge?

17 Can you see how silly it is to say that we can't judge or shouldn't judge based on the above? The Apostle Paul was the most  
18 vocal critic in the bible of judging people. But we emphasize that Paul was talking about judging people, not behavior.

19 All Christians therefore have a duty not only to judge, but to judge righteously. This is a subject often misunderstood within  
20 Christianity which we would like to elaborate on further. Below are some biblical authorities on the subject of the requirement  
21 to judge and discern good and evil:

22 *"Judge not according to appearance, but judge righteous judgment."*  
23 *[Jesus in John 7:24, Jesus speaking in the Bible]*

24 *"The lips of the righteous nourish many, but fools die for lack of judgment."*  
25 *[Prov. 10:21, Bible, NKJV]*

26 *"I can of Myself do nothing. As I hear, I judge; and My judgment is righteous, because I do not seek My own*  
27 *will, but the will of the Father who sent Me."*  
28 *[Jesus in John 5:30, Bible, NKJV]*

29 *"Take heed to yourselves. If your brother sins against you, rebuke him; and if he repents, forgive him."*  
30 *[Luke 17:3, Bible, NKJV. QUESTION: How can you rebuke as Jesus commands here if you can't first judge or*  
31 *discern bad behavior?]*

32 *"And have no fellowship with the unfruitful works of darkness, but rather expose [judge/discern and rebuke]*  
33 *them."*  
34 *[Eph. 5:11, Bible]*

35 *"The violence of the wicked will destroy them because they refuse to do justice [by judging and rebuking*  
36 *wickedness]."*  
37 *[Prov. 21:7, Bible, NKJV]*

38 Why would Jesus command us to judge righteously if we weren't supposed to judge, as some Christians falsely accuse the  
39 Apostle Paul of saying by quoting Romans 14:13 out of context?

40 The U.S. Supreme Court echoed the requirement to judge, confront, and rebuke evil by stating that one of the purposes of the  
41 Constitution was to "allow rebellion to remain as our Heritage":

42 ***"The First Amendment was designed to allow rebellion to remain as our Heritage. The Constitution was***  
43 ***designed to keep the government off the backs of the people. The Bill of Rights was added to keep the precincts***  
44 ***of belief and expression, of the press, of political and social activities free from surveillance.*** *The Bill of Rights*  
45 *was designed to keep agents of government and official eavesdroppers away from Assemblies of People. The aim*  
46 *was to allow men to be free and independent to assert their rights against government. **There can be no influence***  
47 ***more paralyzing of that objective than Army [government] surveillance.** When an intelligence officer looks over*  
48 *every nonconformist's shoulder in the library, or walks invisibly by his side in a picket line, or infiltrates his club*  
49 *[or forces him to submit an income tax return and then scrutinizes it for personal information or illegal activity],*  
50 *the America once extolled as the voice of liberty heard around the world no longer is [408 U.S. 1, 29] cast in*

1 the image which Jefferson and Madison designed, but more in the Russian [Communist!] image, depicted in  
2 Appendix III to this opinion.”  
3 [Laird v. Tatum, 408 U.S. 1; 92 S.Ct. 2318 (1972) ]

4 The U.S. Supreme Court also implied that the greatest enemy of our freedom in America is a people who are not educated or  
5 equipped to judge or rebuke or confront evil in their government:

6 “Where would we really find the principal danger to civil liberty in a republic? Not in the governors as  
7 governors, not in the governed as governed, but in the governed unequipped to function as governors. The  
8 chief enemies of republican freedom are mental sloth, conformity, bigotry, superstition, credulity, monopoly  
9 in the market of ideas, and utter, benighted ignorance. Relying as it does on the consent of the governed,  
10 representative government cannot succeed unless the community receives enough information to grasp public  
11 issues and make sensible decisions. As lights which may have been enough for the past do not meet the needs of  
12 the present, so present lights will not suffice for the more extensive and complex problems of the future. Heretofore  
13 public enlightenment may have been only a manifest desideratum; today it constitutes an imperative necessity.  
14 The First Amendment, says Justice Black, ‘reflects the faith that a good society is not static but advancing,  
15 and that the fullest possible interchange of ideas and beliefs is essential to attainment of this goal.’ (From  
16 Feldman v. United States, 322 U.S. 487, 501, 64 S.Ct. 1082, 1088, 88 L.Ed. 1408 (dissenting opinion).)’ Cahn,  
17 supra, p. 102.”  
18 [Adderley v. State of Fla., 385 U.S. 39, 87 S.Ct. 242 (U.S.Fla. 1966), Footnote 1]

19 “...the greatest menace to freedom is an inert [passive, ignorant, and uneducated] people [who refuse, as jurists  
20 and voters and active citizens, to expose and punish evil in our government]!”  
21 [Whitney v. California, 274 U.S. 357 (1927)]

22 Even the Apostle Paul, who some people *falsely* say told us not to judge, rebuked those who taught falsehoods, and his words  
23 below pretty much sum up *exactly* the state that the legal profession and courts are in today and what they are doing to pervert  
24 our country. Here are Paul’s strong words of rebuke, from [Titus 1:10-16](#):

25 “For there are many unruly and vain talkers and deceivers,  
26 specially they of the circumcision:

27 Whose mouths must be stopped, who subvert whole houses  
28 [and families], teaching [and saying] things which they ought  
29 not, for filthy lucre’s [money’s] sake.

30 *One of themselves, [even] a prophet of their own, said, The Cretians [are] always liars, evil beasts, slow bellies*  
31 *[the tax protesters].*

32 *This witness is true. Wherefore rebuke them sharply, that they may be sound in the faith;*

33 *Not giving heed to Jewish fables, and commandments of men, that turn from the truth.*

34 *Unto the pure all things [are] pure: but unto them that are defiled and unbelieving [is] nothing pure; but even*  
35 *their mind and conscience is defiled.*

36 *They profess that they know God [and at least PRETEND that they love their brother and the people they serve];*  
37 *but in [EVIL] works they deny [Him], being abominable, and disobedient, and*  
38 *unto every good work reprobate.”*  
39 [Titus 1:10-16, Bible, NKJV]

40 Does it sound like the Apostle Paul above was NOT *judging* above, and if he was, then why shouldn’t we also? He was  
41 *rebuking EVIL*, which is exactly what God commands us to do throughout the Bible. This same apostle Paul also said:

42 “*But actually, I wrote to you not to associate with any so-called brother if he is an immoral person, or covetous,*  
43 *or an idolater, or a reviler, or a drunkard, or a swindler--not even to eat with such a one.*

44 *For what have I to do with judging outsiders? Do you not judge those who are within the church?*

45 *But those who are outside, God judges. REMOVE THE WICKED MAN FROM AMONG YOURSELVES.”*

1 [1 Cor. 5:11-13, Bible, NASB]

2 As a matter of fact, the only purpose of our criminal justice system is to rebuke and punish evil, and our police get their  
3 delegated authority from us, the sovereign people, so we must have that authority to begin with. Paul's approach derives  
4 from the following scriptures:

5 "For the commandment is a lamp, and the law [God's law] the light; Reproofs of instruction are a way of life."  
6 [Prov. 6:23, Bible, NKJV]

7 "Rebuke one who has understanding and he will discern knowledge."  
8 [Prov. 19:25, Bible, NKJV]

9 "You shall love your neighbor as yourself."  
10 [Romans 13:9, Bible, NKJV]

11 "As many as I love, I rebuke and chasten. Therefore be zealous and repent."  
12 [Rev. 3:18, Bible, NKJV]

13 If our faith be not evidenced by such righteous works of reproof and rebuke, then of what political good or relevance can we  
14 as Christians be in a lost world with such DEAD faith (see [James 2:17-20](#))? How can we as Christians be sanctified as the  
15 salt and light of the world and the blessing to the world that God intended with no such works? How can we have the "fruit",  
16 which is God's blessing of peace and prosperity, without the "root", which is courage and faith and morality evidenced by  
17 our works and obedience to God's laws found in the Bible? Remember the parable that Jesus used about how we as Christians  
18 are trees and must bear fruit or be cast into the fire?:

19 "Abide in Me, and I in you. As the branch [you] cannot bear fruit of itself, unless it abides in the vine, neither  
20 can you, unless you abide in Me. I am the vine, you are the branches. He who abides in Me, and I in him,  
21 bears much fruit; for without Me you can do nothing. If anyone does not abide in Me, he is cast out as a  
22 branch and is withered; and they gather them and throw them into the fire, and they are burned. If you abide  
23 in Me, and My words abide you, you will ask what you desire, and it shall be done for you. By this My  
24 Father is glorified, that you bear much fruit; so you will be My disciples. As the Father loved  
25 Me, I also have loved you; abide in My love. If you keep [DO, not just hypocritically talk about] My  
26 commandments, you will abide in My love, just as I have kept my Father's commandments and abide in His  
27 love. These things I have spoken to you, that My joy may remain in you, and that your joy may be full."  
28 [John 15:4-11, Bible, NKJV]

29 **We can't be one of God's followers if we don't bear the fruit of righteousness and mercy and truth by rebuking evil**  
30 **behavior, folks!** Doing these things is the essence of justice.

31 "Woe to you, scribes and Pharisees, hypocrites! For you pay tithes of mint and anise and cummin, and have  
32 neglected the weightier matters of the law: justice and mercy and faith. These you ought to have done, without  
33 leaving the others undone."  
34 [Jesus in Matt. 23:23, Bible, NKJV]

35 The purpose of the courts is to rebuke and punish evil, and if we are the sovereigns and masters over our servant government,  
36 then we are just as entitled as the servant courts to rebuke evil. How can the servant be greater than the master?<sup>29</sup> The only  
37 reason for any Christian to think otherwise is ignorance of what God's word says and ignorance of the basis for our  
38 Constitutional government. Ignorance and sin are our biggest enemy, folks, and the only way to eliminate these two evils  
39 are rebuke and education of those who perpetrate them to inform them of their error and encourage them to remedy it. Based  
40 on the scriptures above, those who would accuse the author of spreading a message of hate:

- 41 1. Must also be advocating the elimination of the police and the courts, whose only function is to hate evil. This would  
42 only encourage lawlessness and anarchy.
- 43 2. Are committing blasphemy against a sovereign God by telling Him that He is wrong. In the process of doing this, they  
44 risk suffering His wrath on judgment day.

45 If you would like to know more about why you must rebuke and reprove and judge in order to do justice as the Lord  
46 commands, read the series of articles below:

---

<sup>29</sup> In John 15:20, Jesus said: "Remember the word that I said to you: 'A servant is not greater than his master'."

1 May we therefore, the professed people of God, conduct ourselves as we ought and according to the command of the Lord  
2 Jesus.

3 *"Judge not according to the appearance, but judge righteous judgment."*  
4 *[John 7:24]*

5 After all, it takes love to obey the LORD Jesus' command to "judge righteous judgment".

6 *"He that hath My Commandments, and keepeth them, he it is that loveth Me: and he that loveth Me shall be loved*  
7 *of My Father, and I will love him, and will manifest Myself to him."*  
8 *[John 14:21, Bible, NKJV]*

9 Accordingly, may the LORD Jesus Christ, Who is the Judge of All the Earth, be able to manifest Himself to us.

## 10 **6.7 "Hate is not a Christian value"<sup>30</sup>**

11 In Prov. 6:16-19, we learn about what God hates. Below is a list of the things God hates compiled from this scripture:

- 12 1. **Pride:** God hates "haughty eyes," because he knows just how ridiculous it is when any person thinks he or she is better  
13 than another person. In God's eyes, we are all of equal value.
- 14 2. **Lying:** God is Truth, and He hates it when we tell big lies, "little" lies, or any lies.
- 15 3. **Murder:** God hates "hands that shed innocent blood." We see a lot of this today—drive-by shootings, terrorist acts,  
16 bombings. God hates such senseless destruction of human life.
- 17 4. **Conspiracy:** God hates a "heart that devises wicked schemes," or that plots and plans to do evil.
- 18 5. **Willingness to do evil:** God hates "feet that are quick to rush into evil." feet that act out the wicked plans of the heart.
- 19 6. **Betrayal:** God hates it when people lie so that other individuals will be hurt.
- 20 7. **Dissension:** This sin could include gossiping, cheating, stealing, lying—anything that pits one person against another  
21 and takes their focus off their identity as God's children.

22 Here we have a very clear list of actions and activities that God hates or finds detestable. They all have to do with things that  
23 distance us from himself and from living peacefully with others. These seven things can be summed up with one little word:  
24 sin. As a perfect being, God abhors anything that rebels against His perfection, and this listing contains several types of  
25 rebellion. As we are careful to avoid doing the things on this list, we will find ourselves being drawn closer to God and to  
26 others.

27 The Bible teaches us that we should hate all the same things God hates. Psalm 97:10 says: "*Let those who love the LORD*  
28 *hate evil, for he guards the lives of his faithful ones and delivers them from the hand of the wicked.*". An interesting  
29 consequence of following this command to hate evil is that we can't hate what we can't discern. Therefore, we must discern  
30 and judge a behavior as being evil before we can hate it. Jesus commands us to exercise righteous judgment in the process  
31 of doing this. However, we are commanded to hate sin and evil but never hate the sinner, or the person who does the evil.

32 Contemporary society tries to distort the Christian approach towards hating sinful *behavior*, and this is especially true of  
33 homosexual activists. Homosexual activists, for instance look at the Christian attitude about hating *bad behavior* and try to  
34 confuse, distort, and lie about it by saying that *all* Christians hate *them as people instead of hate just the bad behavior*. This  
35 tactic provides a convenient excuse to promote the homosexual agenda in the name of "human rights" and tolerance. It also  
36 makes them into "helpless victims" deserving of state protection. Christians should believe that human rights are a noble  
37 goal insofar as they relate to race, gender, and religious beliefs, for instance. However, homosexuality is *not* a religion: it is  
38 a discretionary physical preference that is a product of *choice* and upbringing and conditioning. When it comes to  
39 discretionary preferences, and especially abnormal and harmful preferences, there is no basis to approach these issues as  
40 human rights issues at all. There is plenty of science behind this idea. For instance:

<sup>30</sup> *Family Constitution*, Form #13.003, Section 2.3.6; <http://famguardian.org/Publications/FamilyConst/FamilyConst.htm>.

1. A large number of people who end up being homosexual were sexually abused as children by members of their same sex. This creates low self-esteem in them during a vulnerable point in their youth that leads them to avoid the opposite sex out of shame, which predisposes them to associate with people they are most comfortable with of their same sex.
2. Homosexuality and gender-conflicts are much higher among single-parent families where divorce has occurred. This is because boys who grow up with single moms will resent and hate their mothers more often than in two-parent families when a father figure is not present to administer discipline. This anger and resentment will predispose them to alienate themselves against all females and pursue homosexual relationships. The story is similar for girls who are raised by their divorced fathers in a single parent home.

If science suggests that homosexuality is a preference or a behavior, and not an inherited trait, then it should not be treated as a human right, in the same way that murder or rape are sinful preferences or behaviors that we willingly choose that are also harmful. However, homosexual activists have tried very hard to deceive heterosexual population to have them believe that there is science behind the idea that homosexuals are genetically different from other people, in order to perpetuate the idea that their choice of lifestyle is an inherited trait that is a product of their physical makeup. This promotes the convenient idea that they are victims of their circumstances who don't have to assume responsibility for their sin. That way, they don't deserve to be criticized or scorned or judged for their sinful choices. It also removes the moral justification of the state to condemn them because of their bad choices and behaviors.

Even though homosexuals make up a small minority of the overall population, currently about only 2%, they have maliciously tried to oppress and suppress the rights of the rest of the 98% of us heterosexuals by forcing us to accept and condone their lifestyle at the expense of our sacred personal and deeply-held religious and moral beliefs, which is not something that people should ethically be forced to do. You could say that they have used hate and discrimination on the part of the state to eliminate hate and discrimination. Clearly, two wrongs don't make a right here. Either hate and discrimination is wrong, or it is right. If it is wrong, then no one, including the state, should be using or promoting it. However, we also can't expect to legislate morality, which is what this clearly is an attempt to do. Here are some of the unscrupulous tactics that homosexuals have used in this pursuit of their selfish political agenda:

1. Homosexuals have tried to pass laws that would make it illegal not to hire someone for ANY kind of job based on their sexual preference. This includes teachers, who are supposed to be an example of good behavior for our children and who spend more time with our children giving moral instruction than we do as parents.
2. In Boy Scouts of America v. Dale, 120 S.Ct. 2446, homosexuals filed a lawsuit that went all the way up to the Supreme Court in order to make it illegal for private organizations such as the Boy Scouts to not allow homosexuals to be scout leaders. Fortunately, the lawsuit affirmed the right of privately funded groups like the Boy Scouts to decide who should be in the group. The response of homosexuals in August of 2000 was to petition all U.S. state, city, and county governments to eliminate public funding of the Boy Scouts. They also petitioned the United Way, an alliance of charitable organizations, to terminate support of the Boy Scouts. It was a malicious attack on an otherwise very honorable group that has existed for centuries, all in the name of "tolerance". Hypocrisy!
3. Because many homosexuals are intelligent middle-class citizens that are actively involved in the media, they have tried to publicize the idea that homosexuality is a genetically inherited trait and therefore it is not a choice or a discretionary behavior, but a characteristic of people. One doctor did a study on this, who by the way refused to disclose that he too was homosexual, which of course biased his study. His study was eventually dismissed after several years as self-serving nonsense, but it did succeed for a short time in convincing some people with lies in the name of science that homosexuality was an inherited trait. However, when homosexuals are proved wrong on this point by the testimony of former homosexuals who turned straight and renounce their former lifestyle, the response of the homosexual community is a kind of intolerant, rude, hateful, and obsessive contradiction of the facts and science of that situation in pursuit of selfish ends. There is no science behind the idea that homosexuality is a genetic trait and there never will be, but lies and misinformation about this situation abound because the liberal media has a political agenda that they want to relentlessly and selfishly promote.
4. Lobbying for legislation to force public schools and schoolteachers to promote their lifestyle in the schools. They have tried, for instance, to get school textbooks and curricula that portray their lifestyle as acceptable and ethical among young children. This may be behind the desire of parents for vouchers, so they can remove their kids from this kind of godless, morally bankrupt environment.
5. Trying to pass "hate crime" laws that make it a criminal offense to say or think things that could contribute to violence against people of a certain race or homosexuals. This gives rise to "thought police" who then have state sanctioned broad discretion to invade the lives of law-abiding citizens and maliciously prosecute them all in the name of "tolerance," which instead is really a form of legislated malicious *intolerance* toward people based on their nonviolent, moral and religious beliefs. In our opinion, no one but God should ever have the right to evaluate or judge our thoughts and it sets a very



1 dangerous precedent to allow the state to be in this position. Such laws could eventually be used as a means to institute  
2 political persecution of people based on their religious or moral beliefs.

3 Once again, we wish to emphasize that there is *nothing* rude, intolerant, obsessive, or radical about hating, punishing, judging,  
4 or preventing wrong, harmful, sinful, or illegal behavior, including homosexuality. As a matter of fact, that is precisely the  
5 foundation of all law, which is based on the public interest. The public interest clearly isn't well-served by promoting  
6 homosexuality and the oppression of the 98% majority for the selfish advancements of the 2% minority, and it is a *big lie* on  
7 the part of Satan to label doing this as tolerance or the advancement of human rights. It is clearly wrong to label or hate  
8 people, but not to label or hate their behavior. As Christians, we should follow Jesus' command to love everyone, love people  
9 (but not their behavior) and love our neighbor, including homosexuals, but we can still hate the bad behavior and make it  
10 illegal.

11 The thing we also should remember as we emulate God in hating sin and evil in our lives is that as we mature spiritually as  
12 Christians, there should be a continual effort to eliminate sin in our lives and sin should lessen. "*He that hath My*  
13 *Commandments, and keepeth them, he it is that loveth Me: and he that loveth Me shall be loved of My Father, and I will love*  
14 *him, and will manifest Myself to him*" (John 14:21). However, the little sin we have at the end of that maturity process we  
15 should hate more than the larger amount of sin we had when we weren't Christians or were less mature Christians. This  
16 attitude should be a natural consequence of the process of learning about and knowing God, becoming more like Him, and  
17 being perfected in our faith in the tribulations that He puts us through.

18 As we mature spiritually and become more like God for His sake, we are also told in no uncertain terms that the world will  
19 *hate* us as Christians. As a matter of fact, the more like God we become, the more likely it is that non-Christians in the world  
20 will hate us:

21 *"And you will be hated by all for My name's sake. But he who endures to the end will be saved."*  
22 *[Matt 13:13]*

23 Another natural consequence of becoming more like God is that we will become more selective about the friends we keep as  
24 we will talk about in the next section. One consequence of not becoming friends with everyone or being very discerning  
25 about our selection of friends will be that some of the people we won't be friends with will hate us. We wish to emphasize,  
26 however, that we are just as bad as them if we hate them back. Instead, we are commanded by God:

27 *"Do not seek revenge or bear a grudge against one of your people, but love your neighbor as yourself. I am the*  
28 *LORD."*  
29 *[Lev. 19:18]*

30 The Bible requires Christians to hate evil behavior but not evil people. God loves the repentant sinner, but he hates the sin.  
31 This section will highlight what the Bible says about "hate" and why hating evil and sinful behavior is not only not harmful  
32 or sinful, but why God's Holy Word calls us to do so as enforcers of His Divine Law within our own personal lives.

33 Those Christians intent on imposing not their view but the views of God's Holy Laws upon secular society may be met with  
34 strong resistance, and this is especially true within the legal field, where man's law has become a license for politicians to  
35 buy favors by the legalization of various sinful behaviors. The most frequent attitude of secular society towards Christians  
36 who wish to apply God's laws to the practical affairs of life is that they are likely to be branded as "hate mongers" or  
37 advocating a hate mentality. In some jurisdictions such as Canada, the legislature has branded it a hate crime to enforce  
38 God's laws even within churches as it pertains to homosexual practices. What these false slanderers and accusers will not do  
39 is admit what the object of the hate is, which is sinful behaviors, and that the main function of police and government is to  
40 "hate evil", not by the objective standard of God's Holy law, but by a subjective politically defined standard. Liberals of  
41 today are intent on making us Christians appear to actually hate specific people, instead of just sinful and therefore illegal  
42 behaviors that violate God's laws.

43 Reformed theologians are more likely to preach about hatred than dispensationalists. The dichotomy of dispensationalism  
44 causes them to avoid controversial or divisive topics or subjects which politically impact on society. A.W. Tozier, former  
45 president of Moody Bible Institute, said the following:

46 *"Men perform according to their theology whether it is right or wrong."*

47 The Holy Bible frequently uses the term "fearing the Lord":

1 "You shall **fear the LORD** your God and serve Him, and shall take oaths in His name."  
2 [Deut. 6:13, Bible, NKJV]

3 "And the LORD commanded us to observe all these statutes, to **fear the LORD** our God, for our good always,  
4 that He might preserve us alive, as it is this day."  
5 [Deut. 6:24, Bible, NKJV]

6 "And now, Israel, what does the LORD your God require of you, but to **fear the LORD** your God, to walk in all  
7 His ways and to love Him, to serve the LORD your God with all your heart and with all your soul, and to keep  
8 the commandments of the LORD and His statutes which I command you today for your good?"  
9 [Deut. 10:11-13, Bible, NKJV]

10 "You shall **fear the LORD** your God; you shall serve Him, and to Him you shall hold fast, and take oaths in His  
11 name."  
12 [Deut. 10:20, Bible, NKJV]

13 "Only **fear the LORD**, and serve Him in truth with all your heart; for consider what great things He has done  
14 for you."  
15 [1 Sam. 12:24, Bible, NKJV]

16 "Let all the earth **fear the LORD**; Let all the inhabitants of the world stand in awe of Him."  
17 [Psalm 33:8, Bible, NKJV]

18 Most Christians aren't aware and are even surprised to find that "fearing the Lord" is a synonym for "hating evil" behavior!:

19 "**The fear of the LORD is to hate evil**; Pride and arrogance and the evil way And the perverse mouth I hate.  
20 [Prov. 8:13, Bible, NKJV]

21 "**You who love the LORD, hate evil!** He preserves the souls of His saints; He delivers them out of the hand of  
22 the wicked."  
23 [Psalm 97:10, Bible, NKJV]

24 "**Hate evil, love good**; Establish justice in the gate."  
25 [Amos 5:15, Bible, NKJV]

26 We therefore cannot love God in a true biblical sense unless and until we hate His opposite, which is evil behavior. We  
27 define evil behavior as all things that occur in violation of God's holy laws and statutes.

28 "For the Lord is our Judge, the Lord is our Lawgiver, The Lord is our King; He will save [and protect] us."  
29 [Isaiah 33:22, Bible, NKJV]

30 The Bible says in no uncertain terms that we should hold evil behavior contemptible and abominable and rebuke it publicly  
31 and frequently, as you will see below. Those who think that **hating** what evil does to destroy our liberties is not a biblical or  
32 family value or is wrong are encouraged to read the following scriptures contradicting such a misinformed conclusion. Notice  
33 also that the focus of the hatred is not **people**, but bad and evil **behavior** and the organizations and laws that foster it (God  
34 **loves** the sinner, but he **hates** the sin because sin hurts our brother and separates us from God and the people around us):

35 "If God had been a Liberal, we wouldn't have had the Ten **Commandments**, we'd have had the Ten **Suggestions**."  
36 [Malcolm Bradbury]

37 "Let love be without hypocrisy. **Abhor what is evil**. Cling to what is good."  
38 [Romans 12:9, Bible, NKJV]

39 "You who love the Lord, **hate** evil! He preserves the souls of His saints; He delivers them out of the hand of the  
40 wicked."  
41 [Psalm 97:10]

42 "An unjust man is an abomination to the righteous: and he who is upright in the way is an abomination to the  
43 wicked."  
44 [Prov. 29:27, Bible, NKJV]

45 "The boastful shall not stand in your sight: You hate all workers of iniquity."  
46 [Psalm 5:5, Bible, NKJV]

1 “Through Your precepts I get understanding: **therefore I hate every false way.**  
2 [Psalm 119:104, Bible, NKJV]

3 “Let us hear the conclusion of this whole matter: **Fear [respect] God and keep His commandments, for this is**  
4 **man’s all.** For God will bring every work into judgment, including every secret thing, whether good or evil.”  
5 [Eccl. 12:13-14]

6 “**The fear of the Lord is to hate evil;** Pride and arrogance and the evil way And the perverse mouth I hate.”  
7 [Proverbs 8:13]

8 “Do not let your heart envy sinners, but **be zealous for the fear of the Lord** all the day; for surely there is a  
9 hereafter, and your hope will not be cut off.”  
10 [Prov. 23:17]

11 “By humility and **fear of the Lord** are riches and honor and life.”  
12 [Prov. 22:4]

13 “These six things **the Lord hates**, yes seven are an abomination to Him:  
14 A proud look.  
15 A **lying tongue.**  
16 Hands that shed innocent blood,  
17 A **heart that devises wicked plans,** [IRS revenue agents]  
18 Feet that are swift in running to evil,  
19 A **false witness** who speaks lies, [IRS]  
20 And **one who sows discord among brethren.**” [illegally imposed income taxes and the financial problems they  
21 create destroy families, and the number one cause of divorce is disputes over money]  
22 [Prov. 6:16-19]

23 “Do I not **hate** them, O Lord, who hate You? And do I not loathe those who rise up against You? **I hate them**  
24 **with perfect hatred; I count them my enemies.**”  
25 [Psalm 139:21-22]

26 “**I hate and abhor lying.** But I love Your law.”  
27 [Psalm 119:163]

28 “**A righteous man hates lying.** But a wicked man is loathsome and comes to shame.”  
29 [Prov. 13:5]

30 “For everything there is a season, a time for every purpose under heaven: ..... A time to **love**, and a time to **hate.**”  
31 [Ecclesiastes 3:1-8]

32 “But **those who rebuke the wicked will have delight, and a good blessing will come upon them.**”  
33 [Prov. 24:25]

34 “The ear that hears the rebukes of life will abide among the wise. He who disdains instruction despises his own  
35 soul, but he who heeds rebuke gets understanding.”  
36 [Prov. 15:31-32, Bible, NKJV]

37 “**He who rebukes a man will find more favor afterward than he who flatters with the tongue.**”  
38 [Prov. 28:23]

39 God’s Holy word should be the only basis for our rebuke of the evil and sin of others in the world:

40 “**All Scripture is given by inspiration of God, and is profitable for doctrine, for reproof, for correction, for**  
41 **instruction in righteousness,** that the man of God may be complete, thoroughly equipped for every good work.”  
42 [2 Tim. 3:16-17, Bible, NKJV]

43 Below is a summary of research on the subject of what character this biblical hate of evil behavior must take in order to be  
44 completely consistent with the scriptures and to be executed in righteousness and love.

## 45 I. **INTRODUCTION**

- 46 A. Hatred is a very politically incorrect thing to talk about in churches.  
47 B. We looked through four Bible dictionaries and found only one that mentioned “hate” or “hatred”! That  
48 dictionary was the New Bible Dictionary. Apparently, not too many preachers like to write about hatred  
49 either. Could it be that they hate hate? :-)

- C. People don't like talking about hate because they don't want to appear prideful or dogmatic to outsiders of the Christian religion. Those who are pushy and controlling don't make good evangelizers.
- D. Hate, however, is an important aspect of our faith, because it is also an aspect of God's behavior, as we will learn shortly.

**II. WHAT IS HATE?**

**QUESTION: What does hate mean to you? (ask several members)**

A. Now let's see what the Bible says about this.

B. Hate:

1. Is forbidden. Lev. 19:17, Col. 3:8
2. Is a work of the flesh. See Gal. 5:20
3. Leads to deceit: Prov. 10:18, Prov. 26:24-26
4. Stirs up strife: Prov. 10:12.
5. Embitters life: Prov. 15:17.
6. Is a behavior of the wicked. Rom. 1:30, Ps. 25:19, Prov. 29:10, Titus 3:3
7. Is inconsistent with the knowledge of God: 1 John 2:9, 1 John 2:11.
8. Is inconsistent with the love of God: 1 John 4:20.
9. Was experienced by Christ: Ps. 36:19, John 7:7, John 15:18, John 15:24-25.
10. Is inevitable and expected against Christians: Matt. 10:22, John 15:18-19

C. When Hate is expressed as an action, it is called:

1. Wrath.

a). Definition:

**wrath**, a word denoting the active feeling of God against sin, expressing in human categories an important attribute of God: that he is holy and righteous and rejects everything that is not. This rejection is real, manifesting itself in actual situations such as the destruction of Sodom and Gomorrah (Deut. 29:23), the chastisement of Moses for his reluctance to obey (Exod. 4:14), and even the death of Uzzah for touching with profane hand the Ark of God (2 Sam. 6:7). The wrath of God is thus a divine reaction to human provocation, not an arbitrary passion or animosity. Even in this reaction God is 'slow to anger'; the OT emphasizes that he is 'merciful and gracious...abounding in steadfast love' (Ps. 103:8; Joel 2:13). In the NT, the angry reaction of Jesus against those who desecrated the Temple (John 2:13-17) bears the characteristics of divine wrath. Wrath is also an essential part of Paul's theology: he often mentions that human disobedience and transgression result in the coming of the wrath of God (Rom. 1:18; 2:5; 2:8; 5:9; 9:22; Eph. 2:3; 5:6; Col. 3:6; 1 Thess. 1:10). The overpowering theme of the NT, however, is the love of God, not his anger. The NT can say that 'God is love' (1 John 4:8); the mission of Jesus was to take the wrath of God upon himself. That is the meaning of salvation in the NT: since the time when Jesus was sent into the world, only those who do not believe and do not obey have to worry about the wrath of God. See also Judgment, Day of; Mercy.<sup>31</sup>

b). Righteous wrath is only justified against unrighteousness and ungodliness: Romans 1:18.

c). Reward for wickedness is and should be wrath: Prov. 11:23 "...the expectation of the wicked is wrath."

d). Those who show wrath will invite and suffer punishment: Prov. 19:19.

e). Wise men avoid or turn away wrath: Prov. 29:8.

f). We should avoid wrath: Eph. 4:31, Col. 3:8, 1 Tim. 2:8.

g). We invite God's wrath if we allow ourselves to be deceived: Eph. 5:6.

h). As Christians, we are to yield to and suffer the wrath of others: Paul said in Romans 12:19 that: "Beloved, do not avenge yourselves, but rather give place to wrath; for it is written, 'Vengeance is Mine, I will repay,'" says the Lord....Do not be overcome by evil, but overcome evil with good."

**QUESTION: What does this mean to you? See Rom. 12:9**

i). Examples of wrath:

- (1). The War in Iraq
- (2). Exodus 32:7-14: the Lord was angry with Israel for their idolatry in worshipping golden calves.
- (3). Deuteronomy 29:28 says that God uprooted the Israelites from Moab in anger and wrath because they would not make a covenant with Him.
- (4). 2 Chron. 24:18: Wrath came upon Judah because they worshipped wooden images and idols

<sup>31</sup> Achtemeier, P. J. 1985. *Harper's Bible dictionary*. Includes index. (1st ed.) (Page 1147). Harper & Row: San Francisco

- (5). 2 Chron. 29:8: The house of Judah and Jerusalem turned their backs on God and would not worship Him, so the
- (6). 2 Chron. 32:24-26: King Hezekiah avoided God’s wrath by humbling himself.
- (7). Esther: Haman’s plot against the Jews generated wrath in the King, after it was exposed by Esther. That wrath caused the King to have Haman hanged by the gallows.
- j). Humility Pacifies God’s wrath: 2 Chron. 12:12 describes how King Hezekiah deflected God’s wrath by humbling himself.
2. Anger. Psalm 78:49 says “He cast on them the fierceness of His anger, Wrath, indignation, and trouble, but sending angels of destruction among them.”
3. Judgment.
- a). Judgment is the decision by God to execute His wrath as a recompense for sin.
- b). Judgment is a reminder that there is a consequence for every one of our sins.
- c). Heb. 9:27: “And as it is appointed for men to die once, but after this the judgment”
- d). Paul said in Romans 14:10 and 2 Cor. 5:10 that we will all stand before the judgment seat of Christ.
- e). Book of Revelation: Describes how that judgment will be meted out. “Here comes the judge!”

**QUESTION: Can you think of any other behaviors that are manifestations of hate?**

- D. Abomination: In the Bible, the word “abomination” is a synonym for “hate” in the context of God. We will also describe later all of the things that the Lord thinks are abominable.

**ABOMINATION.** Four Hebrew words are translated thus. **1.** *piggûl* is used of sacrificial flesh which has been left too long (Lv. 7:18, etc.). **2.** *šiqqûš* refers to idols (‘Milcom the abomination of the Ammonites’, 1 Ki. 11:5), and to customs derived from idolatry (Je. 16:18). **3.** The related word *šeqeš* is used in much the same way, a notable extension of meaning being its application to food prohibited for Israelites being ‘unclean’ (Lv. 11:10f.). **4.** *tô‘ebâ* is the most important word of the group. This may denote that which offends anyone’s religious susceptibilities: ‘every shepherd is an abomination to the Egyptians’ (Gn. 46:34; so with eating with foreigners, Gn. 43:32). Or it may be used of idols (in 2 Ki. 23:13 *šiqqûš* is used of Ashtoreth and Chemosh and *tô‘ebâ* of Milcom). It denotes practices derived from idolatry, as when Ahaz ‘burned his son as an offering, according to the abominable practices of the nations whom the Lord drove out’ (2 Ki. 16:3), and all magic and divination (Dt. 18:9–14). But the word is not confined to heathen customs. Sacrifice offered to Yahweh in the wrong spirit is ‘abomination’ (Pr. 15:8; Is. 1:13). So is sexual sin (Lv. 18:22). And the word attains a strongly ethical connotation when such things as ‘lying lips’ and ‘diverse weights’ are said to be an abomination to the Lord (Pr. 12:22; 20:23, cf. also 6:16ff., etc.). L.M.<sup>32</sup>

God says in Lev. 18:29 says “For whoever commits any of these abominations, the persons who commit them shall be cut off [separated] from among their people.”

**QUESTION: In today’s contemporary terms, what do you think this means in practical terms?**

A: The only way to “cut off” someone in our society is to put them in jail or banish them from society, right? Which one do they men here?

- E. Webster’s New Collegiate Dictionary: man’s vain interpretation of hate.

**Hate. 1:** Feel extreme enmity toward **2:** to have a strong aversion to: find very distasteful. **syn** HATE, DETEST, ABHOR, ABOMINATE, LOATH mean to feel strong aversion or intense dislike for. HATE implies an emotional aversion often coupled with enmity or malice; DETEST suggests violent antipathy; ABHOR implies a deep often shuddering repugnance; ABOMINATE suggests strong detestation and often moral condemnation; LOATH implies utter disgust and intolerance.

- F. New Bible Dictionary, Third Edition

1. In the Old Testament

- a). Hatred between brothers (Gn. 27:41; 37:4f., 8; 2 Sa. 13:22) or fellow-Israelites (Ps. 55:12f.; Pr. 14:20) is condemned (Lv. 19:17).
- b). Dt. 4:42; 19:4, 6, 11, and Jos. 20:5 distinguish between accidental and malicious manslaughter.
- c). Sexual love (2 Sa. 13:15; Dt. 22:13–16; 24:3; cf. Jdg. 14:16, see 3, below) may turn to hatred. [adultery can do this]
- d). Personal enmity is sometimes tempered with mercy (Ex. 23:5; Jb. 31:29), but the enemies of Israel (2 Sa. 22:41; Ps. 129:5; Ezk. 23:28) or of the godly (Ps. 34:21; Pr. 29:10) are God’s enemies too (Nu. 10:35; cf. Ex. 20:5; Dt. 5:9; 7:10).

<sup>32</sup> Wood, D. R. W. 1996. *New Bible dictionary* (3rd ed.) (Page 4). InterVarsity Press: Leicester, England; Downers Grove, Ill.

- e). God hates both evil (Pr. 6:16; Am. 6:8) and evil-doers (Dt. 32:41): so therefore do the righteous (Ps. 101:3; 139:21f.; 119:104, 113).
- f). God hates:
- (1). idolatry (Dt. 12:31; 16:22),
  - (2). injustice (Is. 61:8),
  - (3). worship that is inconsistent with conduct (Is. 1:14), and even sinful Israel herself (Ho. 9:15; cf. Je. 12:8).
2. In the New Testament
- a). The Father (Jn. 15:24), Jesus (Jn. 7:7; 15:18, 24f.), and all Christians (Mk. 13:13; Lk. 6:22; Jn. 15:18–20; 17:14; 1 Jn. 3:13) are hated by the world;
  - b). but believers must not hate either fellow-Christians (1 Jn. 4:20) or enemies (Mt. 5:43f.).
  - c). Hatred of evil (Heb. 1:9 = Ps. 45:7; Rev. 2:6; cf. Mk. 3:5), though not of persons, is attributed to Christ. (\*WRATH.)
3. Contrasted with hope
- a). ‘Hate’ as opposed to ‘love’ in Gn. 29:31, 33 (cf. 30, ‘loved ... more’);
  - b). Dt. 21:15–17; Mt. 6:24 = Lk. 16:13, implies the choice or preference of another rather than active hatred of what is not chosen or preferred. Cf. Mal. 1:2f. = Rom. 9:13 of God’s election of Israel; Lk. 14:26 (cf. Mt. 10:37, ‘loves.. more’);
  - c). Jn. 12:25 of the overriding claims of discipleship.

**QUESTION: What does this mean?**

III. **BEHAVIORAL MANIFESTATIONS OF PEOPLE WHO HATE:**

- A. Passive
1. Avoidance. God said he would avoid us if we hate knowledge. See Prov. 1:28-29.
- B. Active
1. Deceit. Prov. 26:24 says those who hate disguise it with their tongue.
  2. Anger and Wrath. When God turned Sodom and Gomorrah into dust, He was hating evil. Gen. 10:18. Gen. 13:13 says the men of Sodom were exceedingly wicked and sinful.
  3. Violence. Men hated Christ because He brought them the truth. They did the ultimate violence to him by nailing Him to a cross.
  4. Denigration. When we hate something, we say evil things about it.

IV. **OBJECTS OF HATE:**

- A. Our Life: Jesus said we should love Him enough to actually hate our family and our life. See Luke 14:26.

*“But If anyone comes to Me and does not hate his father and mother, wife and children, brothers and sisters, yes, and his own life also, he cannot be my disciple.”*

- B. People. Cain hated Abel in Gen. 4 and killed him over jealousy. Esau hated Jacob in Gen. 27:41.
- C. Behavior. God said there are seven things he hates, and they are all behaviors. See Prov. 6:16-19. Behavior that God hates is called “sin”. Throughout the Bible, harlotry is denigrated as the most despicable behavior which people were stoned and cursed for, and yet Jesus loved the harlots who did it.
- D. Things. Idols. God says in Exodus 20:4-5 that we shall not have idols, serve them, or worship them. In Ezekial 9, God actually commanded the killing of people who were worshipping idols.
- E. Races: In Esther, Haman hated the Jews and tried to retaliate against them.
- F. Christians. Mark 13:13 “And you will be hated by all for My name’s sake.” John 16:18, Luke 21:17. John 15:19.

**QUESTION: Why are Christians hated?** See John 17:15. “the world has hated them because they are not of this world”

**QUESTION: What does it mean to not be of this world?** We don’t rely on man’s laws, or civil government, but govern ourselves and stick to our own group.

V. **HOW DOES HATE MAKE ITS RECIPIENTS FEEL?**

If we look up the word “wrath” and how it is responded to, we find the following reactions to it in the Bible:

- A. Fear. Throughout the bible, the term “fear of the Lord” is used.

**QUESTION: What is really meant by this?**

I believe it “fear of the Lord” means “respect and obedience”. Prov. 8:13 says “The fear of the Lord is to hate evil.”

- B. Terror. The apostle Paul says in Rom. 13:3-5 that governments are there to be a “terror” to evil works. In that context, our the bible says our government is a terrorist organization with a very specific goal of terrorizing only criminals!

**QUESTION: Would anyone care to comment on this aspect of the bible?**

- C. Avoidance of the behavior that is hated. When we know we will be punished for bad behaviors, we avoid them, mostly out of the fear we have of the punishment and consequences of the act.
- D. Anger. Prov. 15:1 “A soft answer turns away wrath, but a harsh word stirs up anger.”
- E. Strife. Prov. 15:18. “A wrathful man stirs up strife.”

**VI. TYPES OF HATE:**

- A. Righteous hate: 1 John 4:8-16 tells us that God is love. The essence of love is unselfishness. Righteous hate and/or wrath that is justified is based only on love. It is accomplished with the goal of defending and protecting and helping our neighbors, relatives, and fellow citizens rather than out of desire to help only ourselves.

Example: People who serve in the military hate and fight against the enemy, but they do so more for love of fellow citizens than out of personal gain.

Eccl. 3:8 tells us that there is a time to love and a time to hate, but it never reveals that if we are hating for righteous reasons, then we are accomplishing both at the same time!

Example: When a parent has a child who is being openly defiant and is likely to hurt him or herself in the process, they spank the child. In so doing, they are “hating evil” because the child is demonstrating pride, which the Bible identifies as one of the seven deadly sins/evils. At the same time, they are demonstrating love, because the result of the discipline is beneficial to the long-term happiness and well-being of the child. Most people wouldn’t call it hate, but the consequence of the discipline on the child has exactly the same effect as hate and loathing: fear and respect for the parent. Over time, as the child matures, what began as fear and respect for the parent matures into love as their knowledge and education increases.

- B. Unrighteous hate: Done for selfish reasons and usually out of lust, envy, or greed. Esau, Cain, and Jacob’s brothers all demonstrated unrighteous hate because they hated their brothers only for selfish personal gain.

**VII. THINGS WE ARE SUPPOSED TO HATE:**

Eccl. 3:1,8 says “To everything there is a season, a time for every purpose. ...A time to love, and a time to hate.”

**QUESTION: What, if anything, should we hate and when should we do it?**

- A. Evil: Prov. 8:13 says “The fear of the Lord is to hate evil.” See also Psalm 97:10. Rom. 12:9 also says we should abhor what is evil.
- B. Lying: Prov. 13:5 says a righteous man hates lying. See also Psalm 119:163.
- C. Men of wicked intentions: Prov. 14:17
- D. Bribes: Prov. 15:27
- E. Surety: Prov. 11:15
- F. Covetousness: Prov. 28:16
- G. False ways: Ps. 119:104, Ps. 119:163
- H. Perverse mouth: Prov. 8:13
- I. Those who oppose God: Ps. 139:21-22.

**VIII. THINGS WE SHOULDN’T HATE:**

**QUESTION: What kinds of things should we not hate?**

- A. Correction: Prov. 12:1. Prov. 15:10.
- B. God: Prov. 8:36 “..those who hate me love death”
- C. Knowledge: Prov. 1:22 “And fools hate knowledge”.
- D. People: 1 John 3:15: “Whoever hates his brother is a murderer, and you know no murderer has eternal life abiding in him”.
- E. The righteous: Psalm 34:21
- F. Our brother: Lev. 19:17

**IX. THINGS GOD HATES**

- A. Wickedness. Psalm 45:7.
- B. Seven Deadly Sins:
  - 1. Pride: See Prov. 6:17
  - 2. Lying tongue: Prov. 6:17.
  - 3. Murder of innocent: Prov. 6:17
  - 4. People who devise wickedness: Prov. 6:18.
  - 5. Seeking evil: Prov. 6:18
  - 6. Liars: Prov. 6:19.
  - 7. Contentious: Prov. 6:19.
- C. Profaning the name of the Lord: Lev. 18:21.
- D. Esau. Mal. 1:3

E. Ungodliness and unrighteousness: Romans 1:18 “*For the wrath of God is revealed from heaven against all ungodliness and unrighteousness of men, who suppress the truth in unrighteousness.*”

F. Divorce: Mal. 2:16

G. That which is highly esteemed among men: Luke 16:15 “*For what is highly esteemed among men is an abomination in the sight of God.*”

**QUESTION: Does this mean that everything that man doesn't esteem is not an abomination to God?**

H. Prayer of those who don't know or read or try to understand the law: Prov. 28:9 “*One who turns away his ear from hearing the law, Even his prayer is an abomination.*”

**QUESTION: What law do you think God is talking about here? Man's law or God's law or both?**

I. Sexual sin: God wiped out Sodom and Gomorrah at least in part because of their grievous sexual sin. 1 Cor. 6:18.

1. Adultery: Exodus 20:14, Leviticus 18:20.

2. Fornication: Mark 7:21

3. Homosexuality: Lev. 18:22, Lev. 20:13. (uses the word “abomination”)

4. Bestiality: Lev. 18:23.

X. THINGS GOD THINKS ARE “ABOMINABLE”, WHICH IS THE EQUIVALENT OF “HATE”:

A. Evil minded people: Prov. 3:22, 11:20

Matthew Henry's Commentary on the Whole Bible: It concerns us to know what God hates and what He loves, that we may govern ourselves accordingly, may avoid his displeasure and recommend ourselves to his favour. Now here we are told, 1. ***That nothing is more offensive to God than hypocrisy and double-dealing, for these are signified by the word which we translate frowardness, pretending justice, but intending wrong, walking in crooked ways, to avoid discovery.*** Those are of a froward heart who act in contradiction to that which is good, under a profession of that which is good, and such are, more than any sinners, an *abomination to the Lord*, Isa. 65:5. 2. That nothing is more pleasing to God than sincerity and plain-dealing: *Such as are upright in their way, such as aim and act with integrity, such as have their conversation in the world in simplicity and godly sincerity, not with fleshly wisdom*, these God delights in, these he even boasts of (*Hast thou considered my servant Job?*) and will have us to admire. *Behold an Israelite indeed!*<sup>33</sup>

B. False balance/Dishonest scales: Prov. 11:1, 10:10, 20:23

Matthew Henry's Commentary on the Whole Bible As religion towards God is a branch of universal righteousness (he is not an honest man that is not devout), so righteousness towards men is a branch of true religion, for he is not a godly man that is not honest, nor can he expect that his devotion should be accepted; for, 1. ***Nothing is more offensive to God than deceit in commerce. A false balance is here put for all manner of unjust and fraudulent practices in dealing with any person, which are all an abomination to the Lord, and render those abominable to him that allow themselves in the use of such accursed arts of thriving.*** It is an affront to justice, which God is the patron of, as well as a wrong to our neighbour, whom God is the protector of. Men make light of such frauds, and think there is no sin in that which there is money to be got by, and, while it passes undiscovered, they cannot blame themselves for it; a blot is no blot till it is hit, Hos. 12:7, 8. But they are not the less an abomination to God, who will be the avenger of those that are defrauded by their brethren. 2. Nothing is more pleasing to God than fair and honest dealing, nor more necessary to make us and our devotions acceptable to him: *A just weight is his delight.* He himself goes by a just weight, and holds the scale of judgment with an even hand, and therefore is pleased with those that are herein followers of him. A balance cheats, under pretence of doing right most exactly, and therefore is the greater abomination to God.<sup>34</sup>

**QUESTION: How does this apply in practical terms to our daily lives? Can you give some examples?**

C. Sacrifices of the wicked: Prov. 16:8

D. The way of the wicked: Prov. 15:9

E. Thoughts of the wicked: Prov. 15:26

F. Carved images: Deut. 7:25, Deut. 27:15.

G. Foreign or false gods: Deut 32:16

H. Justification of the wicked and condemnation of the just: Prov. 17:15

I. Donating the wages of a harlot to the house of the Lord: Deut. 23:18.

J. Perverse people: Prov. 3:32

**QUESTION: What do you think this is?**

K. Sexual sin: Jer. 13:27

1. Adultery: Exodus 20:14, Leviticus 18:20.

2. Homosexuality: Lev. 18:22, Lev. 20:13. (uses the word “abomination”)

<sup>33</sup> Henry, M. 1996, c1991. *Matthew Henry's commentary on the whole Bible : Complete and unabridged in one volume* (Pr 11:20). Hendrickson: Peabody

<sup>34</sup> Henry, M. 1996, c1991. *Matthew Henry's commentary on the whole Bible : Complete and unabridged in one volume* (Pr 11:20). Hendrickson: Peabody



3. Beastiality: Lev. 18:23.

XI. HOW ARE WE SUPPOSED TO MANIFEST HATE OF EVIL AS GOD COMMANDS?

- A. We don't allow evil into our house: Deut. 7:26.
- B. We put people who practice evil in jail and separate them from society: Lev. 18:29
- C. If it is a carved image, we are supposed to burn and destroy it: Deut. 7:25
- D. If people in your city are enticing others to follow false god and commit idolatry, they must be killed by the sword and their city burned to the ground: Deut. 13:12-18

**QUESTION: Does this apply to our lives today? Why not?**

XII. CAN OR SHOULD GOVERNMENTS HATE?

- A. The preceding section talked about how we are supposed to respond to abominations in the sight of the Lord. Since we can't respond personally as described in many cases, then the response must come instead from the government, who are our agents and servants. Once again:
- B. The Bible says we should hate evil: Psalm 97:10, Prov. 8:13; Amos 5:15.
- C. Hating Evil works. Romans 13:3-5.

“For *rulers are not a terror to good works, but to evil*. Do you want to be unafraid of the authority? Do what is good, and you will have praise from the same.<sup>35</sup> For he is God's minister to you for good. But if you do evil, be afraid; for he does not bear the sword in vain; for he is God's minister, an avenger to *execute* wrath on him who practices evil. Therefore *you* must be subject, not only because of wrath but also for conscience' sake.”<sup>36</sup>

- D. Definition of “terror” in the dictionary,

**ter•ror** \ter-ər\ *noun* [Middle English, from Middle French *terreur*, from Latin *terror*, from *terrēre* to frighten; akin to Greek *trein* to be afraid, flee, *tremein* to tremble — more at TREMBLE] (14th century)

**1** : a state of intense fear

**2 a** : one that inspires fear : SCOURGE

**b** : a frightening aspect <the *terrors* of invasion

**c** : a cause of anxiety : WORRY

**d** : an appalling person or thing; *especially* : BRAT

**3** : REIGN OF TERROR

**4** : violence (as bombing) committed by groups in order to intimidate a population or government into granting their demands <insurrection and revolutionary *terror*> *synonymy* see FEAR

---**ter•ror•less** \-ləs\ *adjective*

...we find out that terror produces all the same feelings in its object as hating, which is fear, anxiety fright, and/or panic.

- E. The existence of civil government is a fulfillment of the requirement to love our neighbor by preventing him from being harmed. Civil governments are delegated authority to protect us. They have the full-time job of “hating evil” delegated to them. It is delegated to them from their Master, the Sovereign People, through the United States Constitution and our State Constitutions.

**QUESTION: What part of government does the “hating of evil” or produces the “fear” that is characteristic of both “terror” and “hate” which Paul mentioned in Rom. 13:3-5?**

- F. To answer the question of who in government does the hating of evil, we have to look at what part of government we fear or respect the most.

**QUESTION: Would you agree?**

- G. The police and the courts, who are the enforcers of the law, are the *only* part of government that we really fear, right?
  - 1. When you see a policeman on the road, don't you slow down out of *fear* of getting a ticket?
  - 2. When you see people getting tickets or being arrested, don't you want to know what for so you can reduce your fear and anxiety that you might be doing the same thing?
  - 3. When people are sentenced to jail, don't we want to know why so we don't repeat their mistake?

<sup>35</sup> Henry, M. 1996, c1991. *Matthew Henry's commentary on the whole Bible : Complete and unabridged in one volume* (Pr 11:1). Hendrickson: Peabody.

<sup>36</sup> *The New King James Version*. 1996, c1982 (Ro 13:3-5). Thomas Nelson: Nashville.

4. Aren't law shows popular on TV in part because people want to know how to stay out of trouble so they can reduce their fear and anxiety? Would you agree?

H. Purpose of law

1. Paul said the purpose of law is to bring about wrath: Romans 4:15: "For if those who are of the law are heirs, faith is made void and the promise made of no effect, **because the law brings about wrath**"
2. We said earlier that wrath occurs when hatred manifests itself as a behavior.
3. The wrath involved in enforcing the law produces fear and anxiety, as we said earlier.
4. The purpose of law and the fear it produces in us all is to *prevent harm*, not to *promote good*. The absence of harm is the *only* public good that law can produce. Romans 13:10: "*Love does no **harm** to a neighbor; therefore love is the fulfillment of the law.*"
5. Therefore law is essentially righteous hate or wrath directed against evil and ungodliness: It is undertaken for the sole purpose of public protection. That public protection is a satisfaction of the great commandment to love our neighbor.
6. God and hate: God *hates* the sin but loves the sinner. God also hates not just evil, but evil doers who hate him. See Deut. 32:41. The only time God ever hates people, is when those people hate Him. Otherwise, he loves us as his children and family members. See Mark 3:35:

*"For whoever **does** the will of God is My brother and My sister and mother."*  
[Jesus, in Mark 3:35, NKJV]

- a). Not all sins are "evil". The reason God hates evil is because he opposes anything that either separates us from Him or separates us from each other.
- b). The first Four commandments in the ten commandments are laws that relate to things that separate us from Him. See Exodus 2:2-11.
- c). The last six commandments deal with behaviors that separate us from each other. See Exodus 20:12-17. One of the seven deadly sins is the person who "sows discord among brethren" Prov. 6:19.

I. Police and the courts:

1. By enforcing the law, the police and the courts are "hating" and punishing evil behavior and thereby preventing or deterring future harm to all.
2. Police are just like God: The police hate crime but try to honor and reform and rehabilitate the criminal so he can be reintroduced into society as a productive member.
3. Most people are afraid of the IRS more than any other part of the government. They are the tax police, aren't they?

J. In summary, the law enforcement powers of the government are the vehicle that government uses for "hating evil".

**QUESTION: From where does the government get the authority to write laws? From God? From us?**

A: See Rom. 13:1 "Let every soul be subject to the governing authorities. For there is **no authority** except from God, and the authorities that exist are appointed by God."

**QUESTION: Where do government enforcement powers come from?**

A: See Rom. 13:5. They come indirectly from God, and flow through us and are delegated to government.

XIII. EXAMPLES OF HATE IN THE BIBLE:

- A. Cain: Gen 4:5, 4:8. Cain hated his brother Abel and killed him out of jealousy.
- B. Esau: Gen 27:41. Esau hated Jacob because Jacob bought his birthright for pennies on the dollar.
- C. Joseph's brothers: Gen 37:4, Judg. 11:7. They threw him into a pit and sold him into slavery, because they were jealous of him.
- D. Saul: 1 Sam. 18:8-9. Saul hated David and tried to kill him several times. He and all of his sons were eventually killed.
- E. Haman: Esth. 3:5-6. Haman hated the Jews. Esther rescued them.
- F. The enemies of the Jews: Esth. 9:1, 9:5, Ezek. 35:5-6.
- G. The Chaldeans. Dan 3:12

XIV. THINGS WE SHOULD LOVE:

- A. God: Prov. 8:36 "...those who hate me love death"
- B. God's law, the Bible: See Psalm 119:97, 113, 163, 165.
- C. Our neighbor: See Lev. 19:18, Matt. 5:43, Matt. 19:19, Matt. 22:39, Mark 12:31, Romans 13:9, Gal. 5:14, James 2:8

1 D. Good: Amos 5:15.

2 E. Correction: Prov. 12:1. Prov. 15:10.

3 **XV. CONCLUSIONS**

4 A. Hate and love are opposites. Since God is the source of all love and since we are commanded to love him with  
5 all our heart, mind, and soul, then we cannot love him without hating and opposing everything that is his  
6 opposite.

7 B. Hate and wrath are the instruments of God's judgment, and God is a fair judge. The focus of the Old  
8 Testament is primarily the hate and wrath and judgment of God against a rebellious and disobedient people,  
9 done for righteous reasons and in satisfaction of His law.

10 C. The essence of God is love, not hate.

11 1. 1 John 4:8: "He who does not love does not know God, for God is love."

12 2. 1 John 4:16: And we have known and believed the love that God has for us. God is love, and he who abides  
13 in love abides in God, and God in him.

14 D. When Jesus came and died for our sins, he became the object of and substitute for all of God's wrath against  
15 our sin. By Jesus' act of love towards us, he pacified God's wrath. What we are left with is God's love.

16 E. Those who love want and enjoy relationships. There are only two types of relationships mentioned in the  
17 Bible:

18 1. Our vertical relationship with God.

19 2. Our horizontal relationship with our neighbor.

20 F. God has only two great and simple commandments and both of them are meant to enhance and edify and  
21 improve these two types of relationships:

22 1. Loving God: See Exodus 20:2-11, Mark 12:29-30.

23 2. Love our neighbor: See Exodus 20:12-17, Mark 12:31, Gal 5:14.

24 G. The result of not following God's laws is:

25 1. Separation from God.

26 2. Separation from society and our neighbor.

27 H. The ultimate result of violating man's law is separation from society. The police and the courts and the jails  
28 put criminals behind bars, which separates them from their fellow man so they cannot harm anyone further.

29 I. The ultimate result of violating God's law is separation from God. At the final judgment documented in the book  
30 of Revelation, God says that He will send all those who are disobedient and do not have faith in Him to hell. Hell  
31 is the place of ultimate and final separation from God.

32 **QUESTION: The other day we saw a bumper sticker that said "Hate is not a family value?" If God commands us to**  
33 **hate evil, is this bumper sticker accurate in the case of Christians?**

34 If you would like to learn more about the Biblical doctrine of hatred, we recommend the following resources:

35 1. The Biblical Doctrine of Hatred, Pastor John Weaver, Item 5.3:

36 <http://sedm.org/Sermons/Sermons.htm>

37 2. The Kiss of Death:

38 <http://famguardian.org/Subjects/Spirituality/Articles/KissofDeath.htm>

39 **6.8 "Everyone is equal in God's Kingdom and will receive the same reward regardless of**  
40 **works"<sup>37</sup>**

41 The Bible describes not "Heaven", but a new Earth (Isaiah 65:16, Isaiah 66:22, 2 Peter 3:13, Rev. 21:1) as a place of eternal  
42 fellowship with God. Hell is a place of eternal separation from God. The goal of salvation is to achieve eternal fellowship  
43 with God. Christ's death and resurrection guarantees basic salvation to all those who believe and profess faith in Him.

44 *Jesus said to him, "I am the way, the truth, and the life. No one comes to the Father except through Me."*  
45 *[John 14:6, Bible, NKJV]*

46 However, once we achieve basic salvation in what Jesus describes as his "house of many mansions" (John 14:1-6) and join  
47 the Father and the rest of our spiritual Christian family, are our rewards *unequal*? Do some believers get a greater or better  
48 reward than others, and is that reward based on their obedience and works? This section will prove that the answer to this

<sup>37</sup> Source: Delegation of Authority Order from God to Christians, Form #13.007, Section 4.5; <http://sedm.org/Forms/FormIndex.htm>.

1 question is an emphatic YES! In that sense, The Kingdom of Heaven becomes a “franchise” where our rewards beyond basic  
2 salvation are measured by our works of obedience to His Laws. We allege that all believers have a room reserved in the  
3 “house of many mansions” that Jesus described, but that those who produce much fruit, obedience, and works will receive  
4 the “presidential suite” while those who don’t will get the “broom closet”.

5 *The True Vine*

6 *“I am the true vine, and My Father is the vinedresser. Every branch in Me that does not bear fruit He takes*  
7 *away; and every branch that bears fruit He prunes, that it may bear more fruit. You are already clean because*  
8 *of the word which I have spoken to you. **Abide in Me, and I in you. As the branch cannot bear fruit of itself,***  
9 ***unless it abides in the vine, neither can you, unless you abide in Me.**”*

10 *“I am the vine, you are the branches. He who abides in Me, and I in him, bears much fruit; for without Me you*  
11 *can do nothing. If anyone does not abide in Me, he is cast out as a branch and is withered; and they gather them*  
12 *and throw them into the fire, and they are burned. If you abide in Me, and My words abide in you, you will ask*  
13 *what you desire, and it shall be done for you. By this My Father is glorified, that you bear much fruit; so you will*  
14 *be My disciples.*  
15 *[John 15:1-8, Bible, NKJV]*

16 “Abiding in the vine” above refers to basic salvation, but there is still an obligation AFTER achieving said  
17 salvation/fellowship to glorify the Father with committed, valiant, faithful works of obedience to His Holy Laws. The vines  
18 that produce more fruit and which thereby honor and enrich the Father will be the ones that will be most honored by the  
19 Father.

20 The subjects covered in this section are something that few pastors or theologians are willing to talk about because it can be  
21 divisive, and they typically like to avoid conflict. Conflict “scares the sheep away, thins out the flock, and reduces the tithes”.  
22 In that sense, pastors are effectively bribed to “keep quiet” about this subject.

23 As we discussed in the last few sections, Christ paid the ultimate price of obedience, and He is our role model and leader.  
24 His behavior, the Bible says, is something we must emulate:

25 ***“And he who does not take his cross and follow after Me is not worthy of Me.”***  
26 *[Matt. 10:38, Bible, NKJV]*

27 ***“If anyone desires to come after Me, let him deny himself, and take up his cross, and follow Me.”***  
28 *[Matt. 16:24, Bible, NKJV]*

29 ***“If you want to be perfect, go, sell what you have and give to the poor, and you will have treasure in heaven; and***  
30 ***come, follow Me.”***  
31 *[Matt. 19:21, Bible, NKJV]*

32 ***“Assuredly I say to you, that in the regeneration, when the Son of Man sits on the throne of His glory, you who***  
33 ***have followed Me will also sit on twelve thrones, judging the twelve tribes of Israel.”***  
34 *[Matt. 19:28, Bible, NKJV]*

35 ***“My sheep hear My voice, and I know them, and they follow Me.”***  
36 *[John 10:27, Bible, NKJV]*

37 ***“For whoever does the will of My Father in heaven is My brother and sister and mother.”***  
38 *[Matt. 12:50, Bible, NKJV]*

39 Notice that the scriptures above:

- 40 1. Say that those who don’t follow His example are not worthy of the basic salvation they received.
- 41 2. Establish that those who are obedient will have greater rewards than those who don’t. Namely: The right to sit on the  
42 throne in judgment of the twelve tribes of Israel.
- 43 3. Say that we’re not a member of Jesus’ flock of sheep unless we not just believe in, but actually follow Him.
- 44 4. Say that we’re not a member of God’s family (brother, sister, mother) if we aren’t obedient.
- 45 5. Do not say that we DON’T have to follow Christ or that His death and resurrection did away with the need for obedience  
46 to any of the laws or covenants found in the Bible.

1 Many of the parables taught by Christ within the Bible establish that Heaven is a place where our rewards are commensurate  
2 with our works and performance. See:

- 3 1. Laborers in the Vineyard. Matt. 20:1-16. The laborers received DIFFERENT rewards for the same work.
- 4 2. The Wise and Foolish Virgins. Matt. 25:1-13. Some virgins were rewarded with attendance at the wedding while others  
5 were not.
- 6 3. The Talents. Matt. 25:14-30. Stewards over the master's money who performed better received a better reward.
- 7 4. A Friend in Need. Luke 11:5-13. Those who are more persistent with the Father will receive a greater reward.
- 8 5. The Faithful and Wise Servant. Luke 12:35-40. The faithful servant will receive a greater reward from the father.

9 Consequently, works and obedience are STILL important to those who want greater rewards AFTER they get to Heaven by  
10 being saved. Even those who are saved will still undergo the final judgment, and one of the purposes of that judgment is to  
11 decide the degree of reward given to us in Heaven for our works of obedience and the degree of glory we bring to our God  
12 as a consequence of those works of obedience:

13 *The Great White Throne Judgment*

14 *"Then I saw a great white throne and Him who sat on it, from whose face the earth and the heaven fled away.  
15 And there was found no place for them. And I saw the dead, small and great, standing before God, and books  
16 were opened. And another book was opened, which is the Book of Life. And the dead were judged according to  
17 their works, by the things which were written in the books. The sea gave up the dead who were in it, and Death  
18 and Hades delivered up the dead who were in them. And they were judged, each one according to his works.  
19 Then Death and Hades were cast into the lake of fire. This is the second death. And anyone not found written  
20 in the Book of Life was cast into the lake of fire."*  
21 *[Rev. 20:11-15, Bible, NKJV]*

22 Notice in the above that "the dead were judged", not just the unbelieving dead, which means ALL were judged, including  
23 Christians. Other than to determine the reward earned in Heaven for our works, why else would there be a need to judge  
24 Christians who have already been saved? The book of Ecclesiastes says EVERY work will be brought into judgment, not  
25 just the sinful works of unbelievers:

26 *"Because for every matter there is a time and judgment. Though the misery of man increases greatly."*  
27 *[Eccl. 8:6, Bible, NKJV]*

28 *"Let us hear the conclusion of this whole matter: Fear [respect] God and keep His commandments [Laws found  
29 in the Bible], for this is man's all. For God will bring every work into judgment, including every secret thing,  
30 whether good or evil."*  
31 *[Eccl. 12:13-14, Bible, NKJV]*

32 Not everyone will receive the same rewards as a consequence of this judgment. Those who enter Heaven but DO NOT do  
33 the will of the Father won't be able to sit on the throne with Him and won't become a "pillar" of His temple:

34 *"To him who overcomes I will grant to sit with Me on My throne, as I also overcame and sat down with My  
35 Father on His throne."*  
36 *[Rev. 3:21, Bible, NKJV]*

37 *"He who overcomes, I will make him a pillar in the temple of My God, and he shall go out no more. I will write  
38 on him the name of My God and the name of the city of My God, the New Jerusalem, which comes down out of  
39 heaven from My God. And I will write on him My new name."  
40 *[Rev. 3:12-13, Bible, NKJV]**

41 The term "overcome" is not synonymous with "faith" or "salvation". It implies valiant action, commitment, and obedience  
42 far beyond that of simply "believing" in Jesus. The Parable of the Faithful Servant and the Evil Servant proves that the  
43 rewards received from our Lord will be unequal. Not everyone among those in Heaven can be master over the Father's  
44 household or kingdom, but only those whose works prove they are faithful.

45 *The Faithful Servant and the Evil Servant*

46 *"Let your waist be girded and your lamps burning; and you yourselves be like men who wait for their master,  
47 when he will return from the wedding, that when he comes and knocks they may open to him immediately. Blessed  
48 are those servants whom the master, when he comes, will find watching. Assuredly, I say to you that he [the  
49 Master] will gird himself and have them sit down to eat, and will come and serve them. And if he should come*

1 in the second watch, or come in the third watch, and find them so, blessed are those servants. But know this, that  
2 if the master of the house had known what hour the thief would come, he would have watched and not allowed  
3 his house to be broken into. Therefore you also be ready, for the Son of Man is coming at an hour you do not  
4 expect.”

5 Then Peter said to Him, “Lord, do You speak this parable only to us, or to all people?”

6 And the Lord said, “**Who then is that faithful and wise steward, whom his master will make ruler over his**  
7 **household, to give them their portion of food in due season? Blessed is that servant whom his master will find**  
8 **so doing when he comes. Truly, I say to you that he will make him ruler over all that he has.** But if that servant  
9 says in his heart, ‘My master is delaying his coming,’ and begins to beat the male and female servants, and to eat  
10 and drink and be drunk, the master of that servant will come on a day when he is not looking for him, and at an  
11 hour when he is not aware, and will cut him in two and appoint him his portion with the unbelievers. And that  
12 servant who knew his master’s will, and did not prepare himself or do according to his will, shall be beaten with  
13 many stripes. But he who did not know, yet committed things deserving of stripes, shall be beaten with few. For  
14 everyone to whom much is given, from him much will be required; and to whom much has been committed, of him  
15 they will ask the more.

16 [Luke 12:35-48, Bible, NKJV]

17 Notice that the evil, inattentive servant will be *punished*, not *rewarded*. The above parable also implies that the *unequal*  
18 rewards we receive in Heaven that are commensurate with our *diligent works of obedience* to God’s Laws will bring division  
19 and strife, even within the church, because the above parable is followed by another parable:

20 *Christ Brings Division*

21 “I came to send fire on the earth, and how I wish it were already kindled! But I have a baptism to be baptized  
22 with, and how distressed I am till it is accomplished! **Do you suppose that I came to give peace on earth? I tell**  
23 **you, not at all, but rather division.** For from now on five in one house will be divided: three against two, and  
24 two against three. Father will be divided against son and son against father, mother against daughter and  
25 daughter against mother, mother-in-law against her daughter-in-law and daughter-in-law against her mother-  
26 in-law.”

27 [Luke 12:49-53, Bible, NKJV]

28 The following scripture establishes that those who are obedient to God’s laws will receive a blessing above and beyond the  
29 basic salvation guaranteed by faith and trust in God. Note the key phrase “doer of the work”, thus proving that there will be  
30 a reward for our works that is proportional to those works.

31 *Doers—Not Hearers Only*

32 *Therefore lay aside all filthiness and overflow of wickedness, and receive with meekness the implanted word,*  
33 *which is able to save your souls.*

34 **But be doers of the word, and not hearers only, deceiving yourselves.** For if anyone is a hearer of the word and  
35 not a doer, he is like a man observing his natural face in a mirror; for he observes himself, goes away, and  
36 immediately forgets what kind of man he was. **But he who looks into the perfect law of liberty and continues in**  
37 **it, and is not a forgetful hearer but a doer of the work, this one will be blessed in what he does.**

38 [James 1:21-25, Bible, NKJV]

39 Heaven is a family of God’s believers. Like any family, some members will receive greater rewards than others from the  
40 Father and Mother based on works. When that happens, strife within families inevitably occurs. The best example of that is  
41 when people draw up wills or living trusts that convey unequal portions of their inheritance to their children. After parents  
42 die, families can and often do break apart over arguments caused by unequal distribution of the inheritance of their deceased  
43 parent(s). Priests within the old testament, for instance, received NO INHERITANCE, and therefore were treated unequally,  
44 just as believers will be treated unequally after they get to Heaven:

45 *The Portion of the Priests and Levites*

46 “**The priests, the Levites—all the tribe of Levi—shall have no part nor inheritance with Israel;** they shall eat  
47 the offerings of the LORD made by fire, and His portion. **Therefore they shall have no inheritance among their**  
48 **brethren; the LORD is their inheritance, as He said to them.**”

49 [Deuteronomy 18:1-2, Bible, NKJV]

50 Every person that God got excited about in the Bible was a *faithful* and *obedient* servant. All the people who God blessed  
51 were parties to a covenant and were faithful “trustees” under the covenant:

1 And the LORD appeared to him the same night and said, "I am the God of your father Abraham; do not fear, for  
2 I am with you. I will bless you and multiply your descendants for My servant Abraham's sake."  
3 [Gen. 26:24, Bible, NKJV]

4 "I speak with him face to face, Even plainly, and not in dark sayings; And he sees the form of the LORD. Why  
5 then were you not afraid To speak against My servant Moses?"  
6 [Numbers 12:8, Bible, NKJV]

7 "But My servant Caleb, because he has a different spirit in him and has followed Me fully, I will bring into the  
8 land where he went, and his descendants shall inherit it."  
9 [Numbers 14:24, Bible, NKJV]

10 "Then it shall be, if you heed all that I command you, walk in My ways, and do what is right in My sight, to keep  
11 My statutes and My commandments, as My servant David did, then I will be with you and build for you an  
12 enduring house, as I built for David, and will give Israel to you."  
13 [1 Kings 11:38, Bible, NKJV]

14 Thus says the LORD God of Israel: "Because I exalted you from among the people, and made you ruler over My  
15 people Israel, and tore the kingdom away from the house of David, and gave it to you; and yet you have not been  
16 as My servant David, who kept My commandments and who followed Me with all his heart, to do only what  
17 was right in My eyes; but you have done more evil than all who were before you, for you have gone and made  
18 for yourself other gods and molded images to provoke Me to anger, and have cast Me behind your back—  
19 therefore behold! I will bring disaster on the house of Jeroboam, and will cut off from Jeroboam every male  
20 in Israel, bond and free; I will take away the remnant of the house of Jeroboam, as one takes away refuse until  
21 it is all gone. 11 The dogs shall eat whoever belongs to Jeroboam and dies in the city, and the birds of the air  
22 shall eat whoever dies in the field; for the LORD has spoken!" Arise therefore, go to your own house. When  
23 your feet enter the city, the child shall die. And all Israel shall mourn for him and bury him, for he is the only  
24 one of Jeroboam who shall come to the grave, because in him there is found something good toward the LORD  
25 God of Israel in the house of Jeroboam.  
26 [1 Kings 14:7-13, Bible, NKJV]

27 "If anyone serves Me, let him follow Me; and where I am, there My servant will be also. If anyone serves Me, him  
28 My Father will honor."  
29 [John 12:26, Bible, NKJV]

30 "Well done, good and faithful servant: you have been faithful over a few things, I will make you ruler over many  
31 things. Enter into the joy of your lord."  
32 [Matt. 25:23, Bible, NKJV]

33 Those who are not faithful, obedient servants under God's Sovereign Law may inherit basic salvation, but they will not  
34 achieve glory and will not be trusted with anything important within the Kingdom of Heaven. Would you trust YOUR  
35 business to an employee who can't even show up to work on time and who refuses to do any work for the money or "benefits"  
36 you pay him? Heaven is NOT a place where there are no rewards or punishments or where God does not continue to be a  
37 Master over us all. How can the Father "honor" those who serve Him if He can't reward them for their efforts? How can  
38 there be winners and people who are rewarded without also being losers? The following joke helps illustrate what we mean:

39 "There is nothing wrong with being SECOND in a competition. That just means you're first in a long line of  
40 LOSERS."

41 Modern Christianity in America suffers from the disease of socialism or communism, in which believers have been deceived  
42 into thinking that everyone gets the same reward in Heaven and that everyone is equal in Heaven, which is simply not the  
43 case. Socialism is based on collective ownership and on the abolition of private property. Under socialism, the rewards for  
44 good performance cannot be unequal because no one can own anything, which means that everyone ends up equal and  
45 oppressed.

46 "socialism n (1839) 1: any of various economic and political theories advocating collective or governmental  
47 ownership and administration of the means of production and distribution of goods 2 a: a system of society or  
48 group living in which there is no private property b: a system or condition of society in which the means of  
49 production are owned and controlled by the state 3: a stage of society in Marxist theory transitional between  
50 capitalism and communism and distinguished by unequal distribution of goods and pay according to work done."  
51 [Webster's Ninth New Collegiate Dictionary, 1983, ISBN 0-87779-510-X, p. 1118]

52 If you would like to learn more about the effect of franchises such as the Bible upon your legal status and standing, please  
53 read:

## 6.9 “We must obey all governments. Even evil governments”<sup>38</sup>

*“The reward of energy, enterprise and thrift is taxes.” -- William Feather*

*“I beseech you therefore, brethren, by the mercies of God, that you present your bodies a living sacrifice, holy, acceptable to God, which is your reasonable service. **And do not be conformed to this world, but be transformed by the renewing of your mind, that you may prove what is the good and acceptable and perfect will of God.**”  
[Romans 12:1-2, Bible, NKJV]*

There are several new testament verses that are quoted out of context by alleged government authorities and false churches in order to deceive people into believing that they should support their man-made governments and obey their man-made law. This, however, is not the case, as God has never given His people authority to make their own law or to walk in the statutes of men.

Therefore, a more detailed look is necessary regarding these scriptures so that the deception can clearly be seen. One verse that is relentlessly misquoted is “...render unto Caesar!” found in Mark 12:14-17, where Jesus said:

*“Render unto Caesar the things that are Caesar's and unto God the things that are God's.”  
[Mark 12:14-17, Bible, NKJV].*

When Jesus said this, he was totally aware of God’s Law, and we can be sure that he was not telling the teachers of the law to do contrary to God’s Law. Let’s see just exactly what Jesus meant by “the things which are Caesar’s” when he said this.

First of all, who was this “Caesar” that Jesus was referring to, but the equivalent of a king? Let’s see who the king is in our society according to the supreme Court:

*“Sovereignty itself is, of course, not subject to law, for it is the author and source of law; but **in our system, while sovereign powers are delegated to the agencies of government, sovereignty itself remains with the people, by whom and for whom all government exists and acts.**”  
[Yick Wo v. Hopkins, [118 U.S. 356](#); 6 S.Ct. 1064 (1886)]*

*“The people of this State, as the successors of its former sovereign, are entitled to all the rights which formerly belonged to the King by his prerogative. **Through the medium of their Legislature they may exercise all the powers which previous to the Revolution could have been exercised either by the King alone,** or by him in conjunction with his Parliament; subject only to those restrictions which have been imposed by the Constitution of this State or of the U.S.”  
[Lansing v. Smith, 21 D. 89., 4 Wendel 9 (1829) (New York)]*

The real “king” in our society is *not* the government or anyone *serv*ing the sovereign people in the government, but the PEOPLE! That’s you! So even if you misinterpret Jesus’ words to mean that we should render to corrupt government “servants” that which it illegally asks for and demands, since your own government calls *you* the king, then *your* public servants are the ones who should be “rendering”! Render to the king (Caesar, that’s you) his due, which is everything that is his property and his right, including 100% of his earned wage.

*“Remember the word that I said to you, ‘A servant is not greater than his master.’”  
[Jesus in the Bible, John 15:20]*

Why does the IRS insist on arguing with the King and violating this scripture? Therefore, covetous public servants in the government, from a Biblical perspective, simply can’t be greater than the sovereigns they *serve* in the public at large or they are violating God’s law. Plain and simple, isn’t it?

The context for the “Render to Caesar” quote above was that the Pharisees wanted to trap Jesus. They were the teachers of the Law, and knew full well what God’s word says about laws and governments other than God’s. The Pharisees knew ALL of the following:

<sup>38</sup> *Family Constitution*, Form #13.003, Section 7.4.7; <http://famguardian.org/Publications/FamilyConst/FamilyConst.htm>.



1 They knew that even their own Israelite kings could not make any law, but could only administer God’s law, not turning aside  
2 from God’s commandments, to the right hand, or to the left:

3 *[Deut 17:14] [The word of the Lord through his servant Moses]: When thou [Israel] art come unto the land which*  
4 *the LORD thy God gives thee, and shalt possess it, and shalt dwell therein, and shalt say, I will set a king over*  
5 *me, like as all the nations that are about me;*

6 *[Deut 17:18] And it shall be, when he sitteth upon the throne of his kingdom, that he shall write him a copy of*  
7 *this law in a book out of that which is before the priests the Levites: [17:19] and it shall be with him, and he*  
8 *shall read therein all the days of his life: that he may learn to fear the LORD his God, to keep all the words of*  
9 *this law and these statutes, to do them: [17:20] That his heart be not lifted up above his brethren, and that he*  
10 *turn not aside from the commandment, to the right hand. Or to the left: to the end that he may prolong his days*  
11 *in his kingdom, he, and his children, in the midst of Israel.*

12 Not adding to it, or diminishing from it:

13 *[Deut 12:32] What thing soever I command you [all Israel], observe to do it: thou shalt not add thereto, nor*  
14 *diminish from it.*

15 The Pharisees knew that it was a sin to walk in the statutes of the heathen, and that if their OWN ISRAELITE KINGS made  
16 any statutes, it was a SIN to walk in their statutes as well:

17 *[2 Ki 17:6] In the ninth year of Hoshea the king of Assyria took Samaria, and carried Israel away into Assyria,*  
18 *and placed them in Halah and in Habor by the river of Gozan, and in the cities of the Medes. [17:7] for so it*  
19 *was, that the children of Israel had sinned against the LORD their God, which had brought them up out of the*  
20 *land of Egypt, from under the hand of Pharaoh king of Egypt, and had feared other gods, [17:8] And walked in*  
21 *the statutes of the heathen, whom the LORD cast out from before the children of Israel, and of the kings of Israel,*  
22 *which they had made. [2Ki 17:18] Therefore the LORD was very angry with Israel, and removed them out of*  
23 *his sight: there was none left but the tribe of Judah only. [17:19] Also Judah kept not the commandments of the*  
24 *LORD their God, but walked in the statutes of Israel which they made.*

25 The Pharisees knew that God’s people have laws that are different from all other people’s [God’s Laws] and that even in  
26 foreign lands they do not keep the king’s laws:

27 *[Est 3:8] Then Haman [the highest prince in the kingdom of the Medes and the Persians] said to King Hauser’s*  
28 *[the king of the Medes and the Persians who reigned from India to Ethiopia], “There is a certain people [The*  
29 *Jews; Judeans who were obedient to God’s Law] scattered and dispersed among the people in all the provinces*  
30 *of your kingdom; their laws are different from all other people’s, and they do not keep the king’s laws. . .”*

31 The Pharisees knew the principle that consenting with a thief, be he king or commoner, makes one a partaker with that thief  
32 –and an apostate:

33 *[Ps 50:18] When thou sawest a thief then thou consentedst with him, and hast been partaker with adulterers.*

34 *Adulterers—Strong’s reference number: 5003*

35 *Hebrew: na’aph*

36 *Definition: to commit adultery; fig. to apostatize*

37 The Pharisees knew that those who participate in evil through the use of an agent are guilty of the act themselves:

38 *[2 Sa 11:14] And it came to pass in the morning, that David wrote a letter to Joab [his agent], and sent it by the*  
39 *hand of Uriah. [11:15] And he wrote in the letter, saying, Set ye Uriah in the forefront of the hottest battle, and*  
40 *retire ye from him, that he may be smitten, and die. [11:16] And it came to pass, when Joab observed the city,*  
41 *that he assigned Uriah unto a place where he knew that valiant men were. [11:17] And the men of the city went*  
42 *out, and fought with Joab: and there fell some of the people of the servants of David; and Uriah the Hittite died*  
43 *also.*

44 *[2 Sa 11:26] And when the wife of Uriah heard that Uriah her husband was dead, she mourned for her husband.*  
45 *[11:27] And when the mourning was past, David sent and fetched her to his house, and she became his wife, and*  
46 *bare him a son. But the thing that David had done displeased the LORD.*

1 [2 Sa 12:9] [Then Nathan said to David] Wherefore hast thou despised the commandment of the LORD, to do  
2 evil in his sight? thou hast killed Uriah the Hittite with the sword, [through the use of an agent] and hast taken  
3 his wife to be thy wife, and hast slain him with the sword of the children of Ammon.

4 Therefore, by the same principle, the Pharisees knew that participating in a heathen government by financing someone else  
5 [an agent] to enforce heathen laws makes the one who pays the tribute guilty of the acts of the heathen government.

6 The Pharisees knew that those who are obedient to God will not pay toll, tribute, and custom to a heathen king [“Caesar”]:

7 [Ezr 4:6] Now in the reign of Ahasuerus [a heathen king (“Caesar”)], in the beginning of his reign, they [the  
8 king’s people through their agents, the counselors] wrote an accusation [to the king] against the inhabitants of  
9 Judah and Jerusalem. [saying the following:] [4:12] Let it be known to the king that the Jews [who obey God’s  
10 law, not the king’s law] who came up from you have come to us at Jerusalem, and are building the rebellious and  
11 evil city, [from the king’s point of view only; righteous and obedient from God’s point of view] and are finishing  
12 its walls and repairing the foundations. [4:13] Let it now be known to the king that, if this city is built and the  
13 walls completed, they will not pay tax, tribute, or custom, and the king’s treasury will be diminished. [They will  
14 pay no tribute to “Caesar”]. [NKJ]

15 [4:16] We certify the king that, if this city be builded again, and the walls thereof set up, by this means thou shalt  
16 have no portion [no tribute to “Caesar”] on this side the river. [KJV]

17 The Pharisees knew that the throne of iniquity cannot have fellowship with God:

18 [Ps 94:20] Shall the throne of iniquity [wicked rulers] have fellowship with thee, which frameth mischief by a  
19 law? [make enactments or decrees which condemn innocent blood by adding to or diminishing from God’s Law]

20 The Pharisees knew that the people in whose heart is God’s law are to obey His Law and are not to fear the reproach of men:

21 [Is 51:7] Hearken unto me [the Lord], ye that know righteousness, the people in whose heart is my law; fear ye  
22 not the reproach of men, neither be ye afraid of their revilings.

23 [Is 51:12] I, even I, am he that comforteth you: who art thou, that thou shouldest be afraid of a man that shall  
24 die, and of the son of man which shall be made as grass...”

25 The Pharisees knew God’s admonition about doing after the manners of the heathen:

26 [Eze 11:10] Ye [Israel] shall fall by the sword; I [the Lord] will judge you in the border of Israel; and ye shall  
27 know that I am the LORD.

28 [Eze 11:12] And ye shall know that I am the LORD: for ye have not walked in my statutes, neither executed my  
29 judgments, but have done after the manners of the heathen that are round about you.

30 Note: The Hebrew word translated to “manners” speaks specifically of governmental and judicial activity. Here,  
31 Ezekiel is not speaking of “ways or customs” of the heathen, he is speaking about the “statutes, ordinances,  
32 judgments, laws and government” of the heathen.

33 Manners—Strong’s reference number: 4941

34 Hebrew: mishpat

35 Derivation: Derived from 8199

36 Definition: prop. a verdict (favorable or unfavorable) pronounced judicially, espec. A sentence or formal decree  
37 (human or [partic.] divine law, individual or collect.) include. The act, the place, the suit, the crime, and the  
38 penalty; abstr. justice, include. right, or privilege (statutory or customary), or even a style

39 Manners—Strong’s reference number: 8199

40 Hebrew: shaphat

41 Derivation: A primary word.

42 Definition: to judge, i.e., pronounce sentence (for or against); impl. vindicate or punish; by extens. To govern;  
43 pass. To litigate (lit. or fig.)

1 The Pharisees knew that God’s people do not obey wicked governments that have other gods even if they are thrown into a  
2 fiery furnace:

3 *[Dan 3:16] Shadrach, Meshach and Abednego replied to the king, “O Nebuchadnezzar, we do not need to defend*  
4 *ourselves before you in this matter. [3:17] If we are thrown into the blazing furnace, the God we serve is able to*  
5 *save us from it, and he will rescue us from your hand, O king.*

6 *[3:18] But even if he does not, we want you to know, O king, that we will not serve your gods or worship the*  
7 *image of gold you have set up.” [NIV]*

8 *[3:19] Then Nebuchadnezzar was full of fury, and the expression on his face changed toward Shadrach, Meshach,*  
9 *and Abed-Nego. Therefore he spoke and commanded that they heat the furnace seven times more than it was*  
10 *usually heated. [3:20] And he commanded certain mighty men of valor who were in his army to bind Shadrach,*  
11 *Meshach, and Abed-Nego, and cast them into the burning fiery furnace. [NKJ]*

12 The Pharisees knew that God’s people do not obey wicked governments even if they are thrown into a lion’s den:

13 *[Dan 6:7] All the presidents of the kingdom, the governors, and the princes, the counselors, and the captains,*  
14 *have consulted together to establish a royal statute, and to make a firm decree, that whosoever shall ask a petition*  
15 *of any god or man for thirty days, save of thee, O king, he shall be cast into the den of lions. [Dan 6:10] Now*  
16 *when Daniel knew that the writing was signed, he went into his house; and his windows being open in his chamber*  
17 *toward Jerusalem, he kneeled upon his knees three times a day, and prayed, and gave thanks before his God, as*  
18 *he did aforetime.*

19 *[Dan 6:16] Then the king commanded, and they brought Daniel, and cast him into the den of lions. . . .”*

20 The Pharisees knew that those who have set up kings and princes [governments] but not by God’s hand, have trespassed  
21 against His law:

22 *[Hos 4:1] [The word of the LORD through the prophet Hosea]: Hear the word of the LORD, ye children of*  
23 *Israel: for the LORD hath a controversy with the inhabitants of the land, because there is no truth, nor mercy,*  
24 *nor knowledge of God in the land.*

25 *[Hos 8:1] Set the trumpet to thy mouth. He [the enemy] shall come as an eagle against the house of the LORD,*  
26 *because they [Israel] have transgressed my covenant, and trespassed against my law.*

27 *[Hos 8:4] They have set up kings, but not by me: they have made princes, and I [the Lord] knew it not: of their*  
28 *silver and their gold have they made them idols, that they may be cut off.*

29 The Pharisees knew that it is a sin to keep statutes made by Israelite kings, let alone a heathen “Caesar”:

30 *[Mic 6:13] [The warning of the Lord through his servant Micah]: Therefore also will I [the Lord] make thee*  
31 *[Israel] sick in smiting thee, in making thee desolate because of your sins.*

32 *[Mic 6:16] For the statutes of Omri are kept, and all the works of the house of Ahab [kings of Israel who made*  
33 *their own statutes], and ye walk in their counsels; that I should make thee a desolation, and the inhabitants thereof*  
34 *an hissing: therefore ye shall bear the reproach of my people.*

35 The Pharisees were fully aware that God only allowed “Caesar” to be in power to prove Israel to see whether they would  
36 keep the way of the LORD to walk therein, as their fathers did keep it, or not:

37 *[Jdg 2:21] I [the Lord] also will not henceforth drive out any from before them [Israel] of the nations [heathen*  
38 *Caesars, etc.] which Joshua left [unvanquished] when he died: [2:22] That through them [the heathen*  
39 *governments] I may prove Israel, whether they will keep the way of the LORD to walk therein, as their fathers*  
40 *did keep it, or not.*

41 *[Jdg 3:4] and they [the nations which the LORD left] were to prove Israel by them, to know whether they [Israel]*  
42 *would hearken unto the commandments of the LORD, which he commanded their fathers by the hand of Moses.*

43 And the Pharisees were aware of the conclusion of the whole matter:

44 *[Ecc 12:13] Let us hear the conclusion of the whole matter: Fear God, and keep his commandments: for this is*  
45 *the whole duty of man.*

1 And finally, the Pharisees knew that when a people, and especially believers, refuse to correct or rebuke sin in their society,  
2 then the unrebuked sin of even one evil man could curse the whole society and separate that society from the blessings of the  
3 Lord. In the Pharisees time, the evil was that of the King named Caesar, which they could not and would not rebuke and thus  
4 became hypocrites, as Jesus called them.

5 *[Matt. 23:23, Bible] “**Woe to you, scribes and Pharisees, hypocrites! For you pay tithes of mint and anise and***  
6 ***cumin, and have neglected the weightier matters of the law: justice and mercy and faith. These you ought to***  
7 ***have done, without leaving the others undone.”***

8 The Pharisees knew their hypocrisy in the matter of rebuking sin at the time they asked the question of Jesus about rendering  
9 taxes to Caesar because the Book of Joshua, Chapter 7, written 1400 years earlier, tells the story about Moses’ successor  
10 Joshua, who lost a war with the Amorites and the blessings of God because one of his men illegally stole a treasure that was  
11 the spoils of war and hid it under his tent and would not confess or right his wrong before God and his people, and preferred  
12 to lie about it. The result was that the people felt guilty and cowardly in battle and ran away from the enemy to become the  
13 laughing stock of the land. They were cursed by God because they would not confront and correct this evil in their society,  
14 which consisted of theft and deceit:

15 *[Joshua 7:11-13] “**Israel has sinned**, and they have also transgressed My covenant which I commanded them.*  
16 ***For they have even taken some of the accursed things, and have both stolen and deceived** [the IRS]; and they*  
17 ***have also put it among their own stuff.***

18 *“Therefore, the children of Israel could not stand before their enemies, but turned their backs before their*  
19 *enemies, because they have become doomed to destruction. **Neither will I be with you anymore, unless you***  
20 ***destroy the accursed [the IRS and the Federal Reserve in our day and age] from among you.***

21 *Get up, sanctify the people [clean up this mess!], and say ‘Sanctify yourselves for tomorrow, because thus says*  
22 *the Lord God of Israel; “There is an accursed thing in your midst, O Israel; you cannot stand before your enemies*  
23 *until you take away the accursed thing from among you.”.*

24 Therefore, knowing all of the above scriptures, the Pharisees laid a trap for Jesus similar to the question: “Have you stopped  
25 beating your wife yet?” They were certain that they could trap Jesus into affirming that either: it was lawful to pay tribute  
26 to “Caesar”, which they knew to be against God’s Law, and thereby condemning him under God’s Law to pay tribute to a  
27 heathen government [Caesar], thereby condemning him under “Caesar’s” “law”. Then the Pharisees could go tell “Caesar”,  
28 and thereby get rid of Jesus with the sword of Caesar:

29 *[Mat 22:17] [The Pharisees sent their disciples to Jesus, who said,] Tell us therefore, What thinkest thou? Is it*  
30 *lawful to give tribute unto Caesar, or not?*

31 Jesus was also versed in the above scriptures. He was fully aware that it is against God’s Law to give tribute to a heathen  
32 “Caesar”. He also knew that it would enrage “Caesar” for him to say so. Jesus knew that giving the correct answer was a  
33 trap laid for him by the Pharisees, and he evaded their trap by the following: He didn’t define what was or was not “Caesar’s”.  
34 He didn’t even affirm that the penny with “Caesar’s” image and superscription was to be rendered to “Caesar”. Jesus’ answer  
35 was that the Pharisees should render to “Caesar”, a heathen who did not know or obey God’s Law, exactly what was due to  
36 any heathen or Israelite who did not obey God’s Law:

37 *[Num 15:15] One ordinance shall be both for you of the congregation [of Israel], and also for the stranger*  
38 *[foreigner; non Israelite] that sojourneth with you, an ordinance for ever in your generations: as ye are, so shall*  
39 *the stranger be before the LORD. [15:16] One law and one manner shall be for you, and for the stranger that*  
40 *sojourneth with you. (i.e.: death for breaking God’s Law:*

41 *[Deu 27:26] Cursed be he that confirmeth not all the words of this law [God’s Law, not Caesar’s law] to do*  
42 *them. And all the people shall say, Amen.)*

43 Therefore, the Pharisees knew that what they had just been told was to render unto ”Caesar” what God’s Law required: death,  
44 and since they were declining to carry out the sentence of the law, they were hypocrites, since they were the enforcement  
45 officials of God’s Law and knew what “Caesar” was due under God’s Law. They had also been told that they were doing  
46 presumptuously by not harkening to carry out the sentence of the law and they themselves should be put to death along with  
47 “Caesar” in order to put their own evil away from Israel:

48 *[Deu 17:11] According to the sentence of the law which they shall teach thee, and according to the judgment*  
49 *which they shall tell thee, thou shalt do: thou shalt not decline from the sentence which they shall shew thee, to*

1 *the right hand, nor to the left. [17:12] And the man that will do presumptuously, and will not hearken unto the*  
2 *priest that standeth to minister there before the LORD thy God, or unto the judge, [and render unto Caesar what*  
3 *Caesar was due, death in this particular case] even that man shall die [the Pharisees, for not carrying out the*  
4 *sentence in this particular case]: and thou shalt put away the evil from Israel.*

5 This is obviously why the Pharisees marveled at him. They were not about to tell “Caesar” that God’s Law required him to  
6 be put to death, because “Caesar” would have then come after the Pharisees. In addition, Jesus had just rebuked both “Caesar”  
7 and the Pharisees by stating publicly that both “Caesar” and the Pharisees should be put to death, and the Pharisees who hated  
8 Jesus knew it but couldn’t go tell “Caesar” in order to get Jesus in trouble. Also, “Caesar” and his agents didn’t know enough  
9 about God’s Law to realize that Jesus said that “Caesar” should be put to death, and “Caesar” thinks to this very day that  
10 Jesus was saying to pay tribute. Checkmate. Jesus will, incidentally, render to “Caesar” what is “Caesar’s” at His coming:

11 *[Luk 19:27] [Jesus, speaking of himself in a parable said,] but those mine enemies, which would not that I should*  
12 *reign over them [kings, “Caesars”, judges of the earth and their followers at His coming], bring hither, and slay*  
13 *them before me.*

14 *[Psalm 2:7] [The psalmist foretelling that Jesus will “render unto Caesar what is Caesar’s at his coming]: I will*  
15 *declare the decree: the LORD hath said unto me, Thou art my Son [Jesus]; this day have I begotten thee.*

16 *[2:9] Thou [Jesus] shalt break them [the heathen kings (Caesars) and judges] with a rod of iron; thou shalt dash*  
17 *them in pieces like a potter’s vessel. [2:10] Be wise now therefore, O ye kings: [“Caesars”] be instructed, ye*  
18 *judges of the earth. [Note: These verses in Psalm 2 are confirmed to be about Jesus in Acts 13:33; Heb 1:1-5;*  
19 *Heb 5:5, and by Jesus Himself in Rev 2:26-27].*

20 *[Zec 14:9] [Zechariah prophesying that Jesus will “render unto Caesar what is Caesar’s” at His coming]: And*  
21 *the LORD [Jesus] shall be king over all the earth: in that day shall there be one LORD, and his name one.*

22 *[14:12] And this shall be the plague wherewith the LORD [Jesus] will smite all the people [kings, “Caesars”,*  
23 *judges of the earth and all who follow them] that have fought against Jerusalem [Jesus’ capital city when He*  
24 *comes with his saints]; Their flesh shall consume away while they stand upon their feet, and their eyes shall*  
25 *consume away in their holes, and their tongue shall consume away in their mouth. [Note: These verses can be*  
26 *seen to be about Jesus in Mat 25:31-32; Mat 28:18; Joh 18:37; 1Ti 6:13-15; Rev 11:15; Rev 19:14; Rev 20:4-*  
27 *6].*

28 Continuing with Jesus’ answer to the Pharisees:

29 *[Mat 22:18] But Jesus perceived their wickedness, and said, Why tempt ye me, ye hypocrites? [22:19] Shew me*  
30 *the tribute money. And they brought unto him a penny. [22:20] And he saith unto them, Whose is this image and*  
31 *superscription? [22:21] They say unto him, Caesar’s. Then saith he unto them, Render therefore unto Caesar*  
32 *the things which are Caesar’s, and unto God the things that are God’s.*

33 *[Mar 12:14] And when they [certain of the Pharisees and of the Herodians] were come, they say unto him,*  
34 *Master, we know that thou art true, and carest for no man: for thou regardest not the person of men, but teachest*  
35 *the way of God in truth: Is it lawful to give tribute to Caesar, or not? [12:15] Shall we give, or shall we not*  
36 *give? But he, knowing their hypocrisy, said unto them, Why tempt ye me? Bring me a penny, that I may see it.*  
37 *[12:16] and they brought it. And he saith unto them, Whose is this image and superscription? And they said*  
38 *unto him, Caesar’s [12:17] and Jesus answering said unto them, Render to Caesar the things that are Caesar’s*  
39 *and to God the things that are God’s. And they marveled at him.*

40 *[Luke 20:22] [The chief priests and scribes asked Jesus,] Is it lawful for us to give tribute unto Caesar, or no?*  
41 *[20:23] but he perceived their craftiness, and said unto them, Why tempt ye me? [20:24] shew me a penny.*  
42 *Whose image and superscription hath it? They answered and said, Caesar’s. [20:25] and he said unto them,*  
43 *Render therefore unto Caesar the things which be Caesar’s, and to God the things that are God’s.*

44 From that day forward, the Pharisees and the Sadducees would not ask Jesus any further questions:

45 *[Mat 22:46] And no one was able to answer Him a word, nor from that day on did anyone dare question Him*  
46 *anymore. [NKJ]*

47 *[Luk 20:39] Then some of the scribes answered and said, “Teacher, You have spoken well.” [20:40] but after*  
48 *that they dared not question Him anymore. [NKJ]*

49 Jesus was not calling for revolution against Rome, even though it was an oppressive conqueror of Israel. On the other hand,  
50 his apostles refused to obey a government order not to preach and teach in Jesus’ name (Acts 5:27-29). On that occasion,  
51 one of Jesus’ apostles said:

1 "We ought to obey God rather than men."

2 The same admonition to obey God rather than man is found in Psalm 118:8-9

3 "It is better to trust the Lord  
4 Than to put confidence in man.  
5 It is better to trust in the Lord  
6 Than to put confidence in princes."  
7 [Psalm 118:8-9, Bible, NKJV]

8 Finally, the Apostle Paul agreed with and reiterated these conclusions by saying that that it is scandalous for Christians to use  
9 civil rather than ecclesiastical courts in order to settle our disputes:

10 1 Corinthians 6:1 Dare any of you, having a matter against another, **go to law** before the unjust, and not before  
11 the saints?

12 1 Corinthians 6:7 Now therefore **there is utterly a fault among you, because ye go to law [in a civil rather than**  
13 **ecclesiastical court] one with another.** Why do ye not rather take wrong? why do ye not rather [suffer yourselves  
14 to] be defrauded?

### 15 The Roman Tribute Coin

16 5. Tiberius; 14 - 37 A.D.; AR denarius; the "Tribute Penny" of the Bible. In Mark 12:14-17 the Temple priests, testing  
17 Jesus, asked Him:

18 *And when they were come, they say unto him, "Master, we know that thou art true, and carest for no man: for*  
19 *thou regardest not the person of men, but teachest the way of God in truth: Is it lawful to give tribute to Caesar,*  
20 *or not? Shall we give, or shall we not give?"*

21 *But he, knowing their hypocrisy, said unto them, "Why tempt ye me? bring me a penny (denarius), that I may see*  
22 *[it]."*

23 *And they brought [it]. And he saith unto them, "Whose [is] this image and superscription?" And they said unto*  
24 *him, "Caesar's."*

25 *And Jesus answering said unto them, "Render to Caesar the things that are Caesar's, and to God the things that*  
26 *are God's." And they marveled at him.*

27 Obv: Laureate head of Tiberius, r. Rev: Livia, as Pax, seated on the reverse.



1

2 The account of the Tribute to Caesar is more extensively covered in Matthew, chapter 22. In this account, and others, the  
3 bible clearly shows that as soon as the Herodians understood the answer that they received, they marveled at the answer, and  
4 went on their way. After that time, they ceased to question Him anymore.

5 When you research out the origin and lineage of the term “Pontifus Maximus”, you find the Babylonian origin. Essentially,  
6 it is saying that “Caesar is God.” This title was later adopted by the Roman Popes.

7 **Conclusions**

8 Aren't we supposed to obey the authority over us? Yes, as long as there is no conflict with God's law. Blind obedience to all  
9 civil authority dictates, wishes, whims etc. is not always necessary though. Furthermore, if blind obedience to civil authority  
10 is really the rule to live by, I have some thought-provoking questions for those who preach that false doctrine to answer:

- 11 1. Was it right for Moses' parents to disobey the civil authority over them and not kill their baby? The Hebrew  
12 midwives disobeyed the civil authority and God blessed them. See Ex. 1.
- 13 2. Was it right for Peter and the disciples to disobey civil authority and keep preaching Christ? See Acts 5.
- 14 3. Was it right for Samson to disobey the civil authority (the Philistines ruled the land)? See Judges 16.
- 15 4. Was it right for the prophets to disobey the civil authority and proclaim their message at the risk of life, limb and  
16 property? See Hebrews 11.
- 17 5. Was it right for Daniel to disobey the civil authority and pray to God in spite of the command by the absolute dictator  
18 not to do so? See Daniel 6.
- 19 6. Was it right for the founding fathers like Patrick Henry, George Washington, etc. to disobey King George, the civil  
20 authority over them, and begin this great land we now freely enjoy? I suggest you re-read the Declaration of  
21 independence and try to see the motive of those great and godly men.
- 22 7. If tyranny is not the government ordained by God, is it right to resist tyranny? See the entire history of the nation of  
23 Israel in their struggle against various tyrants.
- 24 8. Was it right for the Germans at the concentration camps to obey their elected or appointed civil authority and kill  
25 the Jews?
- 26 9. Have the IRS's chains of slavery become comfortable to you, and you prefer them and the peace and safety of not  
27 standing for what is right over liberty? See Patrick Henry's famous speech. It applies very well here.
- 28 10. Was it right for the French underground to disobey the civil authority and blow up German tanks, bridges etc during  
29 WW II?
- 30 11. Was it right for the men in the book of Judges to disobey the civil authority over them and rebel against their rulers?
- 31 12. Was it right for the united States to oppose the aggression of Hitler? Sadam Hussein? Japan at Pearl Harbor? Etc.

- 1 13. If someone steals your car, kidnaps your kids or rapes your wife will you call the police (use the civil authorities and  
2 legal system) and/or defend your family physically and legally?  
3 14. If the pacifist position is what some are now preaching, should Bible colleges and churches expel students and  
4 church members who go into the military or refuse entrance or membership to those who are in or have been in the  
5 military in order to be consistent?  
6 15. Was it right for Shadrach, Meshach, and Abednego to disobey the civil authority by not bowing on command? See  
7 Daniel 3.  
8 16. In Acts 5 and 12 Peter disobeyed the civil authorities over him. He walked past the sleeping guards, out of jail and  
9 fled the country. This was illegal for him to do. Is this the same Peter who wrote the I Peter passage we preach from  
10 about obeying authority?

11 When one understands that the answer Jesus gave to whether we should pay taxes was given under Hebrew law, then they  
12 understand that the same fate awaits all who pay the tribute to Caesar that God will mete out for Caesar, then we can see that  
13 Jesus was clearly saying, “Do not pay taxes unto Caesar”, as was alleged at His trial. See Luke 23:2, where the people  
14 accused Jesus of forbidding the payment of taxes to Caesar, which said:

15 *[Luke 23:2, KJV] And they began to accuse him, saying, We found this [fellow] perverting the nation, and*  
16 *forbidding to give tribute to Caesar, saying that he himself is Christ a King.*

17 See also: First Samuel 8:7-19 in which we learn God’s displeasure with those who refused to be governed by Him and instead  
18 decided to elect their own King [government], who God said would oppress them.

19 *And the Lord said to Samuel, “Heed the voice of the people in all that they say to you; for they have not rejected*  
20 *you, but they have rejected Me, that I should not reign over them.*

21 *“According to all the works which they have done since the day that I brought them up out of Egypt, even to this*  
22 *day—with which they have forsaken Me and served other gods—so they are doing to you also.*

23 *“Now therefore heed their voice, **However, you shall solemnly forewarn them, and show them the behavior of***  
24 ***the king who will reign over them.**”*

25 *So Samuel told all the words of the Lord to the people who asked him for a king. And he said, “This will be the*  
26 *behavior of the king who will reign over you: He will take your sons and appoint them for his own chariots and*  
27 *to be his horsemen, and some will run before his chariots.*

28 *“He will appoint captains over his thousands and captains over his fifties, will set some to plow his ground and*  
29 *reap his harvest, and some to make his weapons of war and equipment for his chariots.*

30 *“He will take your daughters to be perfumers, cooks, and bakers.*

31 *“And he will take the best of your fields, your vineyards, and your olive groves, and give them to his servants.*

32 *“He will take a tenth of your grain and your vintage, and give it to his officers and servants.*

33 *“And he will take your male servants, your female servants, your finest young men, and your donkeys, and put*  
34 *them to his work.*

35 *“He will take a tenth of your sheep. **And you will be his servants.***

36 *“And you will cry out in that day because your king whom you have chosen for yourselves, and the Lord will not*  
37 *hear you in that day.”*

38 *Nevertheless the people refused to obey the voice of Samuel; and they said, “No, but we will have a king over us,*  
39 *that we also may be like all the nations and that our king may judge us and go out before us and fight our battles.”*

40 What God was saying is that we should not appoint our government to rule over us, but to have them servicing us and for God  
41 to rule over us as the sovereigns in charge of the government.

42 *“Away with you, Satan! For it is written, ‘You shall worship the Lord your God, and Him **ONLY** [NOT the*  
43 *government!] you shall serve.’”*  
44 *[Matt. 4:10]*



1 He was saying this because he knew that tyranny and a dictatorship would be the ultimate result, which would be oppressive  
2 and sinful.

3 *“You know that the rulers of the Gentiles lord it over them, and those who are great exercise authority over them.  
4 Yet it shall not be so among you; but whoever desires to become great among you, let him be your servant.  
5 And whoever desires to be first among you, let him be your slave---just as the Son of Man did not come to be  
6 served, but to serve, and to give His life a ransom for many.”  
7 [Matthew 20:25-28, Bible, NKJV]*

8 Is our present government our *servant*? Does the Internal Revenue **SERVICE** serve you? Our founding fathers ensured that  
9 the U.S. government started out in 1776 as our servant by limiting its power with a masterful system of checks and balances.  
10 They did this because the abuses and tyranny of the British king were fresh in their minds. But since then, we have forgotten  
11 what God told us and looked the other way while our Congress [who has unlawfully made itself into the equivalent of the  
12 king in biblical times] and its henchmen in the IRS [the king's tax collectors] have transformed themselves from servants to  
13 tyrannical dictators by slowly but systematically rewriting the laws because the apathetic populace they created using the  
14 public education system let them get away with it. Revelation 18:3-8 describes what the reward is to be for those who seek  
15 to be part of such a corrupt government or those who trust in and do not rebel against such a government: God is talking  
16 below about Babylon, which is a metaphor for all the graft and corruption that results from human government unrestricted  
17 by the checks and balances that our founding fathers put into the U.S. Constitution and unaccountable to God. Earlier in  
18 Revelation 17, Babylon the Great is described as “The Great Harlot who sits on many waters with whom the kings of the  
19 earth committed fornication” (Rev. 17:1-2). We believe that this great Harlot is really the bride of Christ (his church/people)  
20 described by Paul in Eph. 5:22-24 which never married her husband, Christ, and therefore becomes a harlot and commits  
21 fornication with Satan. Here’s Rev. 18:3-8:

22 *“For all the nations have drunk of the wine of the wrath of her fornication, the kings of the earth have committed  
23 fornication with her, and the merchants of the earth have become rich through the abundance of her luxury.”*

24 *And I heard another voice from heaven saying, “Come out of her, my people, lest you share in her sins, and lest  
25 you receive of her plagues.”*

26 *“For her sins have reached to heaven, and God has remembered her iniquities.*

27 *“Render to her just as she rendered to you, and repay her double according to her works; in the cup which she  
28 has mixed, mix double for her.”*

29 *“In the measure that she glorified herself and lived luxuriously, in the same measure give her torment and  
30 sorrow; for she says in her heart, ‘I sit as queen, and am no widow, and will not see sorrow.’”*

31 *“Therefore her plagues will come in one day—death and mourning and famine. And she will be utterly burned  
32 with fire, for strong is the Lord God who judges her.”*

33 Look above again at what is REALLY supposed to be “rendered to Caesar [Babylon]” in Revelation 18:6-8:

34 *“Render to her just as she rendered to you, and repay her double according to her works; in the cup which she  
35 has mixed, mix double for her.”*

36 *“In the measure that she glorified herself and lived luxuriously, in the same measure give her torment and  
37 sorrow; for she says in her heart, ‘I sit as queen, and am no widow, and will not see sorrow.’”*

38 *“Therefore her plagues will come in one day—death and mourning and famine. And she will be utterly burned  
39 with fire, for strong is the Lord God who judges her.”*

40 So the reward for trusting government to rule us or allowing a king to rule over us instead of God is *death and famine*.

41 *“For the wages of sin is death, but the gift of God is eternal life in Christ Jesus our Lord.”  
42 [Romans 6:23, NKVJ]*

43 Why is this the reward to be rendered to Caesar? Because the idolatry represented by making Caesar into a false god violates  
44 the first and most important commandment!:

45 *You shall have no other gods before Me. You shall not make for yourself a carved image—any likeness of anything  
46 that is in heaven above, or that is in the earth beneath, or that is in the water under the earth; you shall not bow*

1 down or serve them. For I, the Lord your God, am a jealous God, visiting the iniquity of the fathers upon the  
2 children to the third and fourth generations of those who hate Me, but showing mercy to thousands, to those who  
3 love Me and keep My commandments.  
4 [Exodus 20:3-6, NKVJ]

5 The Bible is replete with examples of those who were killed at the command or with the blessing of God for the idolatry of  
6 worshipping other gods, including government. Below are just a few examples:

7 **Ezekiel 9:5** "And I heard God say to the other men, 'Follow him through the city and kill. Spare no one.'"

8 **Ezekiel 9:6** "Kill the old men, young men, young women, mothers and children."

9 **Ezekiel 9:7** "God said to them, 'Defile the Temple. Fill its courtyards with corpses. Get to work!' So they began  
10 to kill the people in the city."

11 **Ezekiel 9:11** "Then the man wearing linen clothes returned and reported to the Lord, 'I have carried out your  
12 orders.'"

### **CONTEXT FOR WHY GOD COMMANDED THE KILLING IN THE ABOVE FOUR VERSES:**

Ezekiel 8:17: "Have you seen this, O son of man? Is it a trivial thing to the house of Judah to commit the **abominations** which they commit here? For **they have filled the land with violence**; then they have returned to provoke Me to anger. Indeed they put the branch to their nose. Therefore I also will act in fury. My eye will not spare nor will I have pity: and though they cry in My ears with a loud voice, I will not hear them."

The people were:

- Committing acts of violence (Ezekiel 8:17)
- Worshipping idols (Eze. 8:10-12)
- Women were weeping for an idol called Tammuz (Ezekiel 8:14)
- Priests were worshipping the sun God. (Ezekiel 8:16)

The killing was God's judgment and wrath *against His own people*, not those of other races in a Zionist plot. God disciplined his own children in this case for violating the greatest and the first of the ten commandments found in Exodus 20:3-11.

God simply fulfilled justice by punishing his own people for violating the first commandment and committing idolatry. If he hadn't done this, He would not have maintained the sanctity of His children at the time (His family now includes everyone, not just Israel) or allowed the truth of His word, recorded in their writings, to be passed down through the generations so we could enjoy it today. The greater good was thereby accomplished, because God through the Israelites allowed His word and His truth to be revealed to us in what later became the Bible. No other culture or race has been able, through so many generations, to record the history and divine intervention of God in the lives of men better or in a more inspiring way than the writings of the Jews about God, and God apparently wanted to protect this, or His message of truth to us, and His love letter to the world, the Holy Bible, would be lost forever if he allowed His messenger, the Israelites, to be corrupted and to renounce their heritage and their history and the writings of the Bible they authored.

"As many as I love, I rebuke and chasten. Therefore be zealous and repent."  
[Rev. 3:19]

13 **The only thing the Bible says is to be rendered to Caesar is death and mourning and famine. Render to him his due!**  
14 **Now do you understand what Jesus was saying and why both the Government and the Pharisees wanted to crucify**  
15 **Him?** We aren't suggesting here that you should take the law into your own hands and subvert the sovereignty of God  
16 through vigilante justice in fulfilling Jesus' command above, but we are showing you what Caesar really deserves and what  
17 only God in His righteousness can give him. Note that Jesus also took the trouble here to hide or encrypt His subtle message,  
18 so that it would survive the ages and time and appear in the version of the Bible we have today. Otherwise, the government  
19 would have destroyed the Bible message long ago.

1 *Luke 10:21, "In that hour Jesus rejoiced in spirit, and said, **I thank thee, O Father, Lord of heaven and earth,***  
2 ***that thou hast hid these things from the wise and prudent** [of the world], and hast revealed them unto babes:*  
3 *even so, Father; for so it seemed good in thy sight."*

4 The Bible is radical and revolutionary when the Holy Spirit illuminates for us what God is really saying. Is it any wonder  
5 our Christian founding fathers rebelled against Britain so they could restore God to His rightful role over them? Those who  
6 truly believe that we should "render unto Caesar that which is Caesar's" can't in good conscience support the notion of the  
7 American Revolution, which at the time accomplished the opposite goal and was an armed rebellion against "Caesar".

## 8 **6.10 "The Bible is a history book, not a law book. The new testament repealed the old** 9 **testament"**<sup>39</sup>

10 The Bible is a Law book. That's what God intended it to be, otherwise he wouldn't have called it His ordinances, His statutes,  
11 His judgments, His precepts, His commandments, His Law. All these are Law terms. Here are some examples of God's Law  
12 in action, and keep in mind that "commandments" and "His Word" are synonymous with His Law:

13 *"One that turneth his ear from hearing the law, even his prayer is an abomination."*  
14 [[Proverbs 28:9](#), Bible, NKJV]

15 *"Those who forsake the law praise the wicked, but such as keep the law contend with them."*  
16 [[Prov. 28:4](#), Bible, NKJV]

17 *"And **thou shalt teach them ordinances and laws**, and shalt shew them the way wherein they must walk, and  
18 the work that they must do."*  
19 [[Exodus 18:20](#), Bible, NKJV]

20 *"**Ye shall do My judgments, and keep Mine ordinances**, to walk therein: I [am] the LORD your God."*  
21 [[Leviticus 18:4](#), Bible, NKJV]

22 *"**And the statutes, and the ordinances, and the law, and the commandment, which he wrote for you, ye shall***  
23 ***observe to do for evermore**; and ye shall not fear other gods."  
24 [[2 Kings 17:37](#), Bible, NKJV]*

25 *"And I will give them one heart, and I will put a new spirit within you; and I will take the stony heart out of  
26 their flesh, and will give them an heart of flesh: **That they may walk in My statutes, and keep Mine***  
27 ***ordinances, and do them: and they shall be My people, and I will be their God.**"*  
28 [[Ezekiah 11:19-20](#), Bible]

29 And here are two inspirational examples of what we are talking about from Psalm:

30 ***The law of the Lord is perfect converting the soul;***  
31 ***The testimony of the Lord is sure, making wise the simple;***  
32 ***The statutes of the Lord are right, rejoicing the heart.***  
33 ***The commandment of the Lord is pure, enlightening the eyes.***  
34 ***The fear of the Lord is clean, enduing forever;***  
35 ***The judgments of the Lord are true and righteous altogether.***  
36 ***More to be desired are they than gold.***  
37 ***Yea, than much fine gold;***  
38 ***Sweeter also than honey and the honeycomb.***  
39 ***Moreover **by them Your servant is warned,*****  
40 ***And in keeping them there is great reward.***  
41 ***Who can understand his errors?***  
42 ***Cleanse me from secret faults.***  
43 ***Keep back Your servant from presumptuous sins;***  
44 ***Let them not have dominion over me.***  
45 ***Then I shall be blameless,***  
46 ***And I shall be innocent of great transgression.***  
47 ***Let the words of my mouth and the meditation of my heart***  
48 ***Be acceptable in Your sight,***  
49 ***O Lord, my strength and my Redeemer.***  
50 [[Psalm 19:7-14](#), Bible, NKJV]

<sup>39</sup> Source: Delegation of Authority Order from God to Christians, Form #13.007, Section 3.6; <http://sedm.org/Forms/FormIndex.htm>.

1 How can a young man cleanse his way?  
2 By taking heed according to Your word.  
3 With my whole heart I have sought You;  
4 Oh, let me not wander from Your commandments!  
5 Your word I have hidden in my heart,  
6 That I might not sin against You.  
7 Blessed are You, O Lord!  
8 **Teach me Your statutes.**  
9 With my lips I have declared  
10 All the judgments of Your mouth.  
11 I have rejoiced in the way of Your testimonies.  
12 As much as in all riches.  
13 I will meditate on Your precepts.  
14 And contemplate Your ways.  
15 **I will delight myself in Your statutes.**  
16 I will not forget Your word.  
17 [[Psalm 119:9-16](#), Bible, NKJV]

18 The founding fathers referred to God’s Holy Laws as Natural Law:

19 “When in the Course of human events, it becomes necessary for one people to dissolve the political bands which  
20 have connected them with another, and to assume among the powers of the earth, the separate and equal station  
21 to which the Laws of Nature and of Nature’s God entitle them, a decent respect to the opinions of mankind requires  
22 that they should declare the causes which impel them to the separation.”  
23 [Declaration of Independence]

24 The U.S. Supreme Court furthermore has said that all laws which violate these natural laws are void ab initio and  
25 unenforceable:

26 If, then, a government, composed of Legislative, Executive and Judicial departments, were established, by a  
27 Constitution, which imposed no limits on the legislative power, the consequence would inevitably be, that  
28 whatever the legislative power chose to enact, would be lawfully enacted, and the judicial power could never  
29 interpose to pronounce it void. **It is true, that some speculative jurists have held, that a legislative act against**  
30 **natural justice must, in itself,** be void; but I cannot think that, under such a government, any Court of Justice  
31 would possess a power to declare it so. Sir William Blackstone, having put the strong case of an act of Parliament,  
32 which should \*399 authorise a man to try his own cause, explicitly adds, that even in that case, ‘there is no court  
33 that has power to defeat the intent of the Legislature, when couched in such evident and express words, as leave  
34 no doubt whether it was the intent of the Legislature, or no.’ 1 Bl. Com. 91.

35 In order, therefore, to guard against so great an evil, it has been the policy of all the American states, which have,  
36 individually, framed their state constitutions since the revolution, and of the people of the United States, when  
37 they framed the Federal Constitution, to define with precision the objects of the legislative power, and to restrain  
38 its exercise within marked and settled boundaries. If any act of Congress, or of the Legislature of a state, violates  
39 those constitutional provisions, it is unquestionably void; though, I admit, that as the authority to declare it void  
40 is of a delicate and awful nature, the Court will never resort to that authority, but in a clear and urgent case. **If,**  
41 **on the other hand, the Legislature of the Union, or the Legislature of any member of the Union, shall pass a**  
42 **law, within the general scope of their constitutional power, the Court cannot pronounce it to be void, merely**  
43 **because it is, in their judgment, contrary to the principles of natural justice. The ideas of natural justice are**  
44 **regulated by no fixed standard: the ablest and the purest men have differed upon the subject; and all that the**  
45 **Court could properly say, in such an event, would be, that the Legislature (possessed of an equal right of**  
46 **opinion) had passed an act which, in the opinion of the judges, was inconsistent with the abstract principles of**  
47 **natural justice.** There are then but two lights, in which the subject can be viewed: 1st. If the Legislature pursue  
48 the authority delegated to them, their acts are valid. 2nd. If they transgress the boundaries of that authority, their  
49 acts are invalid. In the former case, they exercise the discretion vested in them by the people, to whom alone they  
50 are responsible for the faithful discharge of their trust: but in the latter case, they violate a fundamental law,  
51 which must be our guide, whenever we are called upon as judges to determine the validity of a legislative act.  
52 [Calder v. Bull, 3 U.S. 386 (1798)]  
53

54 “In Hooker v. Canal Co.,<sup>40</sup> a Connecticut case, the court say: ‘The fundamental maxims of a free government  
55 require that the right of personal liberty and \*\*private property should be held sacred.\*\*’

56 “They cite and approve the expressions of Marshall, C. J., in Fletcher v. Peck:<sup>41</sup> ‘And it may well be doubted  
57 whether the nature of society and of government does not prescribe some limits to the legislative power,’ &c.

<sup>40</sup> 14 Connecticut 152; and see Gas Co. v. Gas Co., 25 Id. 38, and Hotchkiss v. Porter, 30 Id. 418.

<sup>41</sup> 5 Cranch, 185.

1           *"This whole subject is fully treated in the late decision of Booth v. Woodbury,<sup>42</sup> where it is expressly held that*  
2 *the \*\*legislature can pass no laws contrary to the 'principles of natural justice.'\*\*"*

3           *"All these cases, and the jurisprudence of Connecticut on this subject, are in harmony with and in fact founded*  
4 *upon the case of \*Calder v. Bull\*,<sup>43</sup> a case which went from Connecticut to this court; and the expressions in*  
5 *Goshen v. Stonington are almost identical with those of Mr. Justice Chase, where he says: 'I cannot subscribe to*  
6 *the omnipotence of a State legislature, or that it is absolute and without control, \*\*although its authority should*  
7 *not be expressly restrained by the constitution or fundamental law of the State.\*\*'"*  
8 *[Stanley v. Colt, 72 U.S. 119, 133, (1866 )]*

9       God's laws found in the Holy Bible are therefore the basis of our system of government, and any act of the government in  
10 conflict with them are inherently void and unenforceable.

11       In analyzing now the nature of Biblical law, it is important to note *first* that, for the Bible, law is revelation. The Hebrew  
12 word for law is *torah* which means instruction, authoritative direction.<sup>44</sup> The Biblical concept of law is broader than the legal  
13 codes of the Mosaic formulation. It applies to the divine word and instruction in its totality:

14           *...the earlier prophets also use torah for the divine word proclaimed through them (Is. viii. 16, cf. also v. 20; Isa.*  
15 *xxx. 9 f.; perhaps also Isa. i. 10). Besides this, certain passages in the earlier prophets use the word torah also*  
16 *for the commandment of Yahweh which was written down: thus Hos. viii. 12. Moreover there are clearly examples*  
17 *not only of ritual matters, but also of ethics.*

18           *Hence it follows that at any rate in this period torah had the meaning of a divine instruction, whether it had been*  
19 *written down long ago as a law and was preserved and pronounced by a priest, or whether the priest was*  
20 *delivering it at that time (Lam. ii. 9; Ezek. vii. 26; Mal. ii. 4 ff.), or the prophet is commissioned by God to*  
21 *pronounce it for a definite situation (so perhaps Isa. xxx. 9).*

22           *Thus what is objectively essential in torah is not the form but the divine authority.<sup>45</sup>*

23       The law is the revelation of God and His righteousness. There is no ground in Scripture for despising the law. Neither can  
24 the *law* be relegated to the Old Testament and *grace* to the New:

25           *The time-honored distinction between the OT as a book of law and the NT as a book of divine grace is without*  
26 *grounds or justification. Divine grace and mercy are the presupposition of law in the OT; and the grace and love*  
27 *of God displayed in the NT events issue in the legal obligations of the New Covenant. Furthermore, the OT*  
28 *contains evidence of a long history of legal developments which must be assessed before the place of law is*  
29 *adequately understood. Paul's polemics against the law in Galatians and Romans are directed against an*  
30 *understanding of law which is by no means characteristic of the OT as a whole.<sup>46</sup>*

31       There is no contradiction between law and grace. The question in James' Epistle is faith and works, not faith and law.<sup>47</sup>  
32 Judaism had made law the mediator between God and man, and between God and the world. It was this view of law, not the  
33 law itself, which Jesus attacked. As Himself the Mediator, Jesus rejected the law as mediator in order to re-establish the law  
34 in its God-appointed role as law, the way of holiness. He established the law by dispensing forgiveness as the lawgiver in full  
35 support of the law as the convicting word which makes men sinners.<sup>48</sup> The law was rejected only as mediator and as the  
36 source of justification.<sup>49</sup> Jesus fully recognized the law, and obeyed the law. It was only the absurd interpretations of the law  
37 He rejected. Moreover,

38           *We are not entitled to gather from the teaching of Jesus in the Gospels that He made any formal distinction*  
39 *between the Law of Moses and the Law of God. His mission being not to destroy but to fulfil the Law and the*  
40 *Prophets (Mt. 5:17), so far from saying anything in disparagement of the Law of Moses or from encouraging His*

---

<sup>42</sup> [32 Connecticut, 118.](#)

<sup>43</sup> 3 Dallas, 386.

<sup>44</sup> Ernest F. Kevan, *The Moral Law* (Jenkintown, Penna.: Sovereign Grace Publishers, 1963) p. 5 f. S.R. Driver, "Law (In Old Testament)," in James Hastings, ed., *A Dictionary of the Bible*, vol. III (New York: Charles Scribner's Sons, 1919), p. 64.

<sup>45</sup> Kleinknecht and Gutbrod, *Law*, p. 44

<sup>46</sup> W.J. Harrelson, "Law in the OT," in *The Interpreter's Dictionary of the Bible*, (New York: Abingdon Press, 1962), III, 77.

<sup>47</sup> Kleinknecht and Gutbrod, *Law*, p. 125.

<sup>48</sup> *Ibid.*, pp. 74, 81-91.

<sup>49</sup> *Ibid.*, p. 95.

1 *disciples to assume an attitude of independence with regard to it, He expressly recognized the authority of the*  
2 *Law of Moses as such, and of the Pharisees as its official interpreters. (Mt. 23:1-3).<sup>50</sup>*

3 With the completion of Christ's work, the role of the Pharisees as interpreters ended, but not the authority of the Law. In the  
4 New Testament era, only apostolically received revelation was ground for any alteration in the law. The authority of the law  
5 remained unchanged.

6 *St. Peter, e.g. required a special revelation before he would enter the house of the uncircumcised Cornelius and*  
7 *admit the first Gentile convert into the Church by baptism (Acts 10:1-48) --a step which did not fail to arouse*  
8 *opposition on the part of those who "were of the circumcision" (cf. 11:1-18).<sup>51</sup>*

9 The second characteristic of Biblical law is that it is a treaty or covenant. Kline has shown that the form of the giving of the  
10 law, the language of the text, the historical prologue, the requirement of imprecations and benedictions, and much more, all  
11 point to the fact that the law is a treaty established by God with His people. Indeed, "the revelation committed to the two  
12 tables was rather a suzerainty treaty or covenant than a legal code."<sup>52</sup> The full covenant summary, the Ten Commandments,  
13 was inscribed on each of the two tables of stone, one table or copy of the treaty for each party in the treaty, God and Israel.<sup>53</sup>

14 *The two stone tables are not, therefore, to be likened to a stele containing one of the half-dozen or so known legal*  
15 *codes earlier than or roughly contemporary with Moses as though God had engraved on these tables a corpus of*  
16 *law. The revelation they contain is nothing less than an epitome of the covenant granted by Yahweh, the sovereign*  
17 *Lord of heaven and earth, to his elect and redeemed servant, Israel.*

18 *Not law, but covenant. That must be affirmed when we are seeking a category comprehensive enough to do justice*  
19 *to this revelation in its totality. At the same time, the prominence of the stipulations, reflect in the fact that "the*  
20 *ten words" are the element used as pars pro toto, signifies the centrality of law in this type of covenant. There is*  
21 *probably no clearer direction afforded the biblical theologian for defining with biblical emphasis the type of*  
22 *covenant God adopted to formalize his relationship to his people than that given in the covenant he gave Israel*  
23 *to perform, even "the ten commandments." Such a covenant is a declaration of God's lordship, consecrating a*  
24 *people to himself in a sovereignly dictated order of life.<sup>54</sup>*

25 This latter phrase needs re-emphasis: the covenant is "a sovereignly dictated order of life." God as the sovereign Lord and  
26 Creator gives His law to man as an act of sovereign grace. It is an act of election, of electing grace (Deut. 7:7 f.; 8:17; 9:4-6,  
27 etc.).

28 *The God to whom the earth belongs will have Israel for His own property, Ex. xix. 5. It is only on the ground of*  
29 *the gracious election and guidance of God that the divine commands to the people are given, and therefore the*  
30 *Decalogue, Ex. xx. 2, places at its forefront the fact of election.<sup>55</sup>*

31 In the law, the total life of man is ordered: "there is no primary distinction between the inner and the outer life; the holy  
32 calling of the people must be realized in both."<sup>56</sup>

33 The third characteristic of the Biblical law or covenant is that it constitutes a plan for dominion under God. God called Adam  
34 to exercise dominion in terms of God's revelation, God's law (Gen. 1:26 ff.; 2:15-17). This same calling, after the fall, was  
35 required of the godly line, and in Noah it was formally renewed (Gen. 9:1-17). It was again renewed with Abraham, with  
36 Jacob, with Israel in the person of Moses, with Joshua, David, Solomon (whose Proverbs echo the law), with Hezekiah and  
37 Josiah, and finally with Jesus Christ. The sacrament of the Lord's Supper is the renewal of the covenant: "this is my blood of  
38 the new testament" (or covenant), so that the sacrament itself re-establishes the law, this time with a new elect group (Matt.  
39 26:28; Mark 14:24; Luke 22:20; 1 Cor. 11:25). The people of the law are now the people of Christ, the believers redeemed  
40 by His atoning blood and called by His sovereign election. Kline, in analyzing Hebrews 9:16, 17, in relation to the covenant  
41 administration, observes:

<sup>50</sup> Hugh H. Currie, "Law of God," in James Hastings, ed., *A Dictionary of Christ and the Gospels* (New York: Charles Scribner's Sons, 1919), I, 685.

<sup>51</sup> Olaf Moe, "Law," in James Hastings, ed., *Dictionary of the Apostolic Church* (New York: Charles Scribner's Sons, 1919), I, 685.

<sup>52</sup> Meredith G. Line, *Treaty of the Great King, The Covenant Structure of Deuteronomy: Studies and Commentary* (Grand Rapids: William B. Eerdmans, 1963), p. 16. See also J.A. Thompson: *The Ancient Near Eastern Treaties and the Old Testament* (London: The Tyndale Press, 1964).

<sup>53</sup> Kline, *op. cit.*, p. 19.

<sup>54</sup> *Ibid.*, p. 17.

<sup>55</sup> Gustave Friedrich Oehler, *Theology of the Old Testament* (Grand Rapids: Zondervan, 1883), p. 177.

<sup>56</sup> *Ibid.*, p. 182.

1 ...the picture suggested would be that of Christ's children (cf. 2:13) inheriting his universal dominion as their  
2 eternal portion (note 9:15b; cf. also 1:14; 2:5 ff.; 6:17; 11:7 ff.). And such is the wonder of the messianic  
3 Mediator-Testator that the royal inheritance of his sons, which becomes of force only through his death, is  
4 nevertheless one of co-regency with the living Testator! For (to follow the typographical direction provided by  
5 Heb. 9:16,17 according to the present interpretation) Jesus is both dying Moses and succeeding Joshua. Not  
6 merely after a figure but in truth a royal Mediator redivivus, he secures the divine dynasty by succeeding himself  
7 in resurrection power and ascension glory.<sup>57</sup>

8 The purpose of God in requiring Adam to exercise dominion over the earth remains His continuing covenant word: man,  
9 created in God's image and commanded to subdue the earth and exercise dominion over it in God's name, is recalled to this  
10 task and privilege by his redemption and regeneration.

11 The law is therefore the law for Christian man and Christian society. Nothing is more deadly or more derelict than the notion  
12 that the Christian is at liberty with respect to the kind of law he can have. Calvin whose classical humanism gained ascendancy  
13 at this point, said of the laws of states, of civil governments:

14 *I will briefly remark, however, by the way, what laws it (the state) may piously use before God, and be rightly*  
15 *governed by among men. And even this I would have preferred passing over in silence, if I did not know that it*  
16 *is a point on which many persons run into dangerous errors. For some deny that a state is well constituted, which*  
17 *neglects the polity of Moses, and is governed by the common laws of nations. The dangerous and seditious nature*  
18 *of this opinion I leave to the examination of others; it will be sufficient for me to have evinced it to be false and*  
19 *foolish.*<sup>58</sup>

20 Such ideas, common in Calvinist and Lutheran circles, and in virtually all churches, are still heretical nonsense.<sup>59</sup> Calvin  
21 favored "the common law of nations." But the common law of nations in his day was Biblical law, although extensively  
22 denatured by Roman law. And this "common law of nations" was increasingly evidencing a new religion, humanism. Calvin  
23 wanted the establishment of the Christian religion; he could not have it, nor could it last long in Geneva, without Biblical  
24 law.

25 Two Reformed scholars, in writing of the state, declare, "It is to be God's servant, for our welfare. It must exercise justice,  
26 and it has the power of the sword."<sup>60</sup> Yet these men follow Calvin in rejecting Biblical law for "the common law of nations."  
27 But can the state be God's servant and by-pass God's law? And if the state "must exercise justice," how is justice defined, by  
28 the nations, or by God? There are as many ideas of justice as there are religions.

29 The question then is, what law is for the state? Shall it be positive law, after calling for "justice" in the state, declare, "A static  
30 legislation valid for all times is an impossibility." Indeed!<sup>61</sup> Then what about the commandment, Biblical legislation, if you  
31 please, "Thou shalt not kill," and "Thou shalt not steal"? **Are they not intended to be valid for all time and in every civil  
32 order? By abandoning Biblical law, these Protestant theologians end up in moral and legal relativism.**

33 Roman Catholic scholars offer natural law. The origins of this concept are in Roman law and religion. For the Bible, there is  
34 no law in nature, because nature is fallen and cannot be normative. Moreover the source of law is not nature but God. There  
35 is no law in nature but a law over nature, God's law.<sup>62</sup>

36 **Neither positive law [man's law] nor natural law can reflect more than the sin and apostasy of man: revealed law [e.g.  
37 ONLY THE BIBLE] is the need and privilege of Christian society. It is the only means whereby man can fulfill his  
38 creation mandate of exercising dominion under God. Apart from revealed law [the BIBLE!], man cannot claim to be  
39 under God but only in rebellion against God.**

<sup>57</sup> Kline, *Treaty of the Great King*, p. 41.

<sup>58</sup> John Calvin, *Institutes of the Christian Religion*, bk. IV, chap. XX, para. Xiv. In the John Allen translation (Philadelphia: Presbyterian Board of Christiana Education, 1936), II, 787 f.

<sup>59</sup> See H. de Jongste and J.M. van Krimpen, *The Bible and the Life of the Christian*, for similar opinions (Philadelphia: Presbyterian and Reformed Publishing Co., 1968), p. 66 ff.

<sup>60</sup> *Ibid.*, p. 73.

<sup>61</sup> *Ibid.*, p. 75.

<sup>62</sup> The very term "nature" is mythical. See R.J. Rushdoony, "The Myth of Nature," in *The Mythology of Science* (Nutley, N.J.: The Craig Press, 1967), pp. 96-98.

1 If you would like a topical reference of all of God's Laws useful in litigation, the following document is very helpful:

[Laws of the Bible](http://sedm.org/Forms/FormIndex.htm), Form #13.001  
<http://sedm.org/Forms/FormIndex.htm>

## 2 **6.11 "Christians must render to the government whatever it demands, including any amount of** 3 **tax"**<sup>63</sup>

4 Many people are surprised to learn that Jesus was, in fact, a tax protester! Here is what the people who knew Jesus said about  
5 him at the time in Luke 23:2:

6 *And they began to accuse Him, saying "We found this fellow perverting the nation, and **forbidding to pay***  
7 ***taxes to Caesar**, saying that He Himself is Christ, a King."*  
8 [*Luke 23:2, Bible, NKJV*]

9 Why did the people say this about Jesus? Because on two different occasions which we will describe shortly in the gospel of  
10 Matthew, Jesus told his disciples, in effect, that they shouldn't have to pay taxes to the government. Recall that Matthew,  
11 who wrote the book of Matthew, was one of Jesus' Apostles. He was a Roman tax collector before he became a disciple. Of  
12 all the Apostles, none understood taxation better than him.

13 An interesting fact for us Christians is that the concept of only taxing foreigners as the Internal Revenue Code requires is  
14 something the founding fathers got right out of the Bible! The federal taxing scheme is and always has been:

15 *"Citizens abroad and foreigners here at home."*

16 Jesus Christ first addressed the tax issue in Matthew, Chapter 17, verse 24 through 27, which read:

### 17 ***Peter and His Master Pay Their Taxes***

18 *When they [Jesus and Apostle Peter] had come to Capernaum, those collectors who received the temple tax*  
19 *[our government has become the modern day false god and Washington, D.C. is our political "temple"] came to*  
20 *Peter and said, "**Does your Teacher [Jesus] not pay the temple tax?**"*

21 *He [Apostle Peter] said, "**Yes.**" [Jesus, our fearless leader as Christians, was a nontaxpayer]*

22 *And when he had come into the house, Jesus anticipated him, saying, "What do you think, Simon? From whom*  
23 ***do the kings [governments] of the earth [lawfully] take customs or taxes, from their sons [citizens and subjects]***  
24 ***or from strangers ["aliens", which are synonymous with "residents" in the tax code, and exclude***  
25 ***"citizens""]?**"*

26 *Peter said to Him, "From strangers ["aliens" / "residents" ONLY. See 26 C.F.R. §1.1-1(a)(2)(ii) and 26 C.F.R.*  
27 *§301.6109-1(d)(3) ]."*

28 *Jesus said to him, "Then the sons ["citizens" of the Republic, who are all sovereign "nationals" and*  
29 ***"nonresident aliens" under federal law** are free [sovereign over their own person and labor. e.g.*  
30 ***SOVEREIGN IMMUNITY**]."*  
31 [*Matt. 17:24-27, Bible, NKJV*]

32 The Founders understood because of their Christian faith that "the sons (Citizens) are exempt" and, in their wisdom, designed  
33 our Republic so that the People would be free from direct taxation by the government; so that the day-to-day operations of  
34 the federal government would be funded through indirect excise taxes in the form of duties and tariffs to be paid by foreigners  
35 wishing to sell into our vast markets.

36 One of our readers, in reference to this story, sent us the following question about the Bible passage above, Matt. 17:24-27:

37 *Dear sir*

<sup>63</sup> Adapted from *Great IRS Hoax*, Form #11.302, Section 1.10.2; <http://famguardian.org/Publications/GreatIRSHoax/GreatIRSHoax.htm>.



1 My uncle is asking me about the bible story:

2 Coin in the fish mouth to pay a tax.

3 Are you familiar and what does it mean. Of course I will research on my own also.

4 Thanks,

5 Brett Keith

6 That anecdote he refers to above comes from the tail end of the passage above at Matt. 17:27. Here was our response:

7 Brett,

8 That's a good question! Thanks for your inquiry. I've read the story. The story you refer to is found in Matt.  
9 17:27 at: [http://www.blueletterbible.org/tmp\\_dir/words/1010682599.html](http://www.blueletterbible.org/tmp_dir/words/1010682599.html)

10 The quote goes:

11 "Nevertheless, lest we offend them [the tax collectors], go to the sea, cast in a hook, and take the  
12 fish that comes up first. And when you have opened its mouth, you will find a piece of money; take  
13 that and give it to them for Me and you."

14 The context of the story is that a tax collector for the temple tax asked Peter if Jesus does NOT pay the tax. Peter  
15 the Apostle said "yes" and then Jesus later told him "then the sons (citizens) are free" [exempt] from taxes laid  
16 by Kings and governments. I believe Jesus was referring to direct taxes in this case.

17 The money appeared in the fish's mouth just as Jesus predicted as a gift from nature so that Peter, Jesus disciple,  
18 would not offend the tax collector and so that Jesus would not have to pay a direct tax and make Himself into a  
19 hypocrite in the process for what He had said earlier in Matt. 17:26 about not paying taxes.

20 My interpretation of this parable/anecdote is that God provided the money to pay the tax so that Jesus or Peter  
21 wouldn't have to pay it as a DIRECT tax. God paid it for them as an INDIRECT tax. That is where the  
22 Constitutional prohibition against direct taxes came from, I believe. Our country solved the problem of taxes for  
23 our national government the same way as God did in the bible: by giving control of our coastlines and our oceans  
24 to the national government, from which the resources in them and the foreign trade that traveled over them would  
25 become the main source for federal government revenue under Article 1, Section 8, Clause 3 of the Constitution,  
26 which empowers the federal government to regulate and tax commerce with foreign nations. I believe the fish  
27 symbolizes the foreigners who want to trade with us. The hook, I believe, symbolizes the U.S. customs department  
28 and the taxable privilege of trading in our country granted by our government to foreign nations. The money in  
29 the fish's mouth is the indirect excise taxes and duties that are paid on goods imported into our country (foreign  
30 commerce) by the foreigners (fish) usually coming in by boat over our oceans and coastlines.

31 Here's the way Alexander Hamilton described it in the Federalist Paper #36:

32 "The more intelligent adversaries of the new Constitution admit the force of this reasoning; but  
33 they qualify their admission by a distinction between what they call INTERNAL and EXTERNAL  
34 taxation. The former they would reserve to the State governments; the latter, which they explain  
35 into commercial imposts, or rather duties on imported articles, they declare themselves willing to  
36 concede to the federal head.", Alexander Hamilton, Federalist 36

37 Family Guardian Fellowship

38 One frequent comment we hear from Christians about the tax issue is that Jesus, in Matthew 22:15-22, advocated paying  
39 taxes by telling us that we should "render to Caesar that which is Caesar's". Here is the scripture:

40 "Then the Pharisees went and plotted how they might entangle Him in His talk. And they sent to Him their  
41 disciples with the Herodians, saying, "Teacher, we know that you are true, and teach the way of God in truth;  
42 nor do You care about anyone, for You do not regard the person of men.

43 Tell us, therefore, what do You think? Is it lawful to pay taxes to Caesar, or not?

44 But Jesus perceived their wickedness and said, "Why do you test Me, you hypocrites? Show Me the tax money."  
45 So they brought Him a denarius.

1 And he said to them, "Whose image and inscription is this?"

2 They said to Him, "Caesar's." And He said to them, **Render therefore to Caesar the things**  
3 **that are Caesar's, and to God the things that are God's.**"

4 When they had heard these words, they marveled, and left Him and went their way.

5 What exactly belongs to Caesar?

6 *"Indeed heaven and the highest heavens belong to the Lord your God, also the earth with all that is in it."*  
7 *[Deuteronomy 10:14, Bible, NKJV]*

8 So what is left that really belongs to Caesar? NOTHING is the answer! Interestingly, the word "Render" in the original  
9 Greek and as used above actually means to "give back". Here is the way one scholar put it:

10 *But note how some other translations erroneously translate the verb in the citation below:*

11 *Render therefore to Caesar the things that are Caesar's, and to God the things that are God's. —NKJ*

12 *Give to Caesar what is Caesar's, and to God what is God's.—NIV*

13 *Give to Caesar what belongs to him. But everything that belongs to God must be given to God.—NLT*

14 *Give therefore to the emperor the things that are the emperor's, and to God the things that are God's.--*  
15 *NRSV*

16 *You see, the versions of the Bible above have translated the operative verb as "to render" or "to give." That is*  
17 *to say, the presumption is that Caesar and God are to be "given to" in the same fashion. But only the*  
18 *International Standard Version brings forth the marvelously subtle elements of the Greek verb here. The proper*  
19 *word choice is not "give" but rather "give back." And there is a world of difference.*

20 *Jesus was saying that everything belongs to God in the first place. In a very real sense, God is "owed" everything*  
21 *that we have. He is our source. But in the Roman world, Caesar was God. In these passages, to "give back" is*  
22 *the proper translation in regards to obligations to God and to Caesar for the audience to whom Jesus was*  
23 *speaking.<sup>64</sup>*

24 This puts an entirely new meaning to Jesus' words above. There was a reason Jesus said "give back", and why the bible  
25 translators working for King James distorted Jesus' words to pacify the King who wanted Christians to pay their taxes to that  
26 King. I believe Jesus was also saying we shouldn't use anything that had a graven image on it, such as a coin with Caesar's  
27 picture, because that would constitute idolatry by turning our government into some kind of god to be worshipped every time  
28 we paid for something. Instead, I believe Jesus was telling us that we should give all the money the government prints back  
29 to them and develop our own currency based on gold or barter that has value because of its own intrinsic worth and scarcity  
30 rather than the edict of some bungling and dishonest government bureaucrat. The foundation of this belief is found in Psalm  
31 118:8-9, which we also mentioned in the previous section:

32 *"It is better to trust the Lord*  
33 *Than to put confidence in man.*  
34 *It is better to trust in the Lord*  
35 *Than to put confidence in princes."*  
36 *[Psalm 118:8-9, Bible, NKJV]*

37 Now that we really understand the true significance of what Jesus said, is it any wonder why He was publicly criticized and  
38 scorned by both the government and the chief priests of the church and why He was crucified? Luke 23:2 says it all!  
39 Furthermore, Jesus told us that we should be encouraged rather than discouraged by His example and what people did to  
40 Him for telling the truth about taxes and sin and God. The priests crucified Him for taking a stance against sin and taxes and  
41 the establishment and yet through His actions, He transcended this world. In Mark 8:38, Jesus said:

42 *For whoever is ashamed of Me and My words in this adulterous and sinful generation, of him the Son of Man*  
43 *also will be ashamed when He comes in the glory of His Father with the holy angels.*

---

<sup>64</sup> See *Why No One is Required to File Tax Returns*, by William Conklin, 1996, Davidson Press, ISBN 189183391X, p. viii.

1 [Mark 8:38, Bible, NKJV]

2 So what Jesus said here is that if we are ashamed of his stance on sin and taxes, and if we are too cowardly to confront evil  
3 in our own government and be punished and ostracized by the world in the process for telling it like it is just as He Himself  
4 did and was crucified for, then when it's our turn to go to Heaven, then He will be ashamed of us and won't vouch for us in  
5 front of God!

6 Edmund Burke also said something along these lines as well:

7 *"The true danger is when liberty is nibbled away, for expedients, and by parts ... the only thing necessary for evil*  
8 *to triumph is for good men to do nothing."*  
9 *[Edmund Burke]*

10 Jesus' life should be an inspiration and an encouragement to tax honesty fighters everywhere because of the way he was  
11 treated. On a number of occasions, people in the Bible thought he was crazy! Below is one example, where Jesus' own  
12 mother and relatives said he was crazy:

13 *"But when His own people heard about this, they went out to lay hold of Him, for they said, 'He is out of His*  
14 *mind.'"*  
15 *[Mark 3:21, Bible, NKJV]*

16 You will likely experience the same kind reaction from many of the people you know as you try to share the truth about the  
17 income tax fraud perpetuated by the U.S. government. After you have read this book and learned the truth for yourself,  
18 people may persecute you and label you as a crackpot, like they did in the new testament as revealed in God's own words:

19 *"A prophet is not without honor except in his own country and in his own house."*  
20 *[Matt. 13:57]*

21 We certainly have been treated this way, but we have never allowed that to discourage us. It is precisely this kind of negative  
22 and fearful reaction by people that was the reason that Jesus chose to speak to people in parables, because He didn't want to  
23 alienate or offend people with the truths He was trying to share. We can take a similar approach by providing testimonials,  
24 anecdotes, and stories about other people we know who have successfully gotten out of the tax system using the  
25 recommendations in this book. We shouldn't be afraid to share the truth with people, because Jesus certainly wasn't:

26 *"Why are you so fearful? How is it that you have no faith?"*  
27 *[Mark 5:40, Bible, NKJV]*

28 One reader actually wrote a free electronic book about the subject of this section. You can read his free book, entitled *Jesus*  
29 *of Nazareth: Illegal Tax Protester* on the web at the address below:

30 <http://www.jesus-on-taxes.com/Page2.html>

## 31 **6.12 "Hell is a real, physical place"**

32 It is written:

33 *"In the beginning God created the heaven and the earth."*  
34 *[Genesis 1:1]*

35 There is no mention in this verse of God creating a place called *hell*, as such term is commonly understood. In verses 2-30 of  
36 the first chapter of Genesis we have a description of the things God created, and the record continues:

37 *"And God saw every thing that he had made, and, behold, it was very good. And the evening and the morning*  
38 *were the sixth day. Thus the heavens and the earth were finished, and all the host of them. And on the seventh day*  
39 *God ended his work which he had made; and he rested on the seventh day from all his work which he had made."*  
40 *[Genesis 1 :31- 2:2]*

41 As we see by the preceding verses, there is no mention in the *Book of Beginnings* (Genesis) of God creating a place called  
42 *hell* – and, it "was very good." Sin did not enter the world until after the time that "God ended his work which he had made,"  
43 so there would have been no need for any place called *hell* before that time. Had Adam and Eve not sinned they would have

1 lived eternally, for they had access to the tree of life. Even after the record of Adam and Eve having fallen into sin, there is  
2 still no scriptural record of God creating a place called *hell*, as that term is commonly understood.

3 As there is no record in the Bible of God having created a place called *hell* as that term is traditionally understood, then who  
4 did create it. The devil? There is no scriptural record of any such thing happening. There is no Biblical statement even  
5 inferring the beginning of a literal place of burning called *hell*. Though the Bible does testify of the time when fire will come  
6 down from heaven to destroy the wicked, and identifies a certain place of destruction as “the lake of fire,” there is no statement  
7 identifying either as *hell*. There is nothing in the Bible which would suggest that the devil is in charge of either the fire from  
8 heaven or the lake of fire. To the contrary, it appears that God is actually in charge of the fire:

9 *“And when the thousand years are expired, Satan shall be loosed out of his prison, and shall go out to deceive*  
10 *the nations which are in the four quarters of the earth, Gog and Magog, to gather them together to battle: the*  
11 *number of whom is as the sands of the sea. And they went up on the breadth of the earth, and compassed the camp*  
12 *of the saints about, and the beloved city: and fire came down from God out of heaven, and devoured them. And*  
13 *the devil that deceived them was cast into the lake of fire and brimstone... and death and hell were cast into the*  
14 *lake of fire. This is the second death”*  
15 *[Revelation 20:7-10, 14]*

16 According to the foregoing text, the devil himself was not subjected to fire from heaven while he was locked up in “his  
17 prison.” Therefore, Satan’s “prison” is something different from the traditional understanding of *hell* as a literal place where  
18 the devil dwells. The text also declares that “hell” itself will be subjected to the consuming fire that comes down from God  
19 out of heaven. The remaining verses of

20 Revelation 20 describe the judgment scene after which all of the wicked who had previously been resurrected will themselves  
21 be cast into the lake of fire. This also shows that the wicked had not been subjected to the fire from heaven prior to that time.

22 The questions to those who believe that there is currently a literal place known as *hell*, and that people are currently being  
23 tormented by flames of fire which are under the devil’s control, and that the unrepentant wicked will consciously inhabit said  
24 place for all eternity, is, “What effect will the “lake of fire” have upon *hell*?”

25 There is no statement in the Bible which indicates that the devil currently lives in *hell*. Nor is there a statement to the effect  
26 that the devil has ever even been in *hell*. As to where Satan has been spending his time before his eventual imprisonment, we  
27 have his own testimony:

28 *“Now there was a day when the sons of God came to present themselves before the Lord, Satan also came among*  
29 *them. And the Lord said to Satan, ‘From where do you come?’ Then Satan answered the Lord and said, ‘From*  
30 *roaming about on the earth and walking around on it.’”*  
31 *[Job 1:6 & 7. New American Standard Bible]*

32 The reason that many of those who profess to have faith in God, and accept the Holy Scriptures as their guide believe that  
33 there is a literal place called *hell*, is because they believe that the dead are not really dead, but are conscious of their situation.  
34 The reason for this is that they do not take the Scriptures as a whole, but rather base their presumptions on a few texts taken  
35 out of their context, and fail to see the whole picture.

36 The remedy for dispelling the confusion lies in a correct understanding of the nature of man. It comes down to these questions,  
37 “Is man an immortal being?” Or, stated differently, “Does man have an immortal soul?” “Does man have a soul which is a  
38 separate entity from his body, or is man a soul?” “What exactly is a soul?” It is written,

39 *“And the LORD God formed man of the dust of the ground, and breathed into his nostrils the breath of life; and*  
40 *man became a living soul.”*  
41 *[Genesis 2:7]*

42 It is clearly stated in this verse that a living soul is a combination of the “dust of the ground” which God used to form man’s  
43 body, and “the breath of life” — the spirit which comes from God. Thus man “became a living soul.”

44 The same Hebrew word, *nephesh*, translated "soul" with reference to man, is translated "creature" when referring to the  
45 animals which also have the breath of life. This unfounded distinction arises not from observable nature (for all animals are  
46 seen to express *human* characteristics), but rather from fantasy. It comes from the baseless notion that we are eternal spiritual  
47 beings who are only temporarily occupying our fleshly bodies.

1 It is written that man became a *living* soul, a living *nephesh*. This implies that there is such a thing as a *dead* soul, a dead  
2 *nephesh*. And so it is. In Numbers 19:11 we find the words "... the dead body of any man ..." Reading in the Hebrew words  
3 we have, "the dead *nephesh* of any *adam*" – " the dead *soul* of any man." Thus a soul may be living or dead, and is not an  
4 immortal entity. It's interesting that the translators substituted the word *body* for *soul*, thus implying, incorrectly, that it is  
5 only the body that actually dies, and not the whole being, the *living nephesh*.

6 *"The soul that sinneth, it shall die."*  
7 [Ezekiel 18:20]

8 Carefully note that nothing is said about an eternal soul entering into the lifeless dust. In the English Bibles, the words "breath"  
9 and "Spirit" are both translated from the same Hebrew word *ruah*. The "breath of life" has been defined as "the spirit of  
10 God", as it is written,

11 *"All the while my breath is in me, and the spirit of God is in my nostrils, My lips shall not speak wickedness, nor*  
12 *my tongue utter deceit."*  
13 [Job 27:3, 4]

14 A good picture of man`s nature may be seen in the modern light bulb. The light which is produced by the combination of the  
15 bulb and the electricity is a representation of what a *soul* is. As it takes a bulb and electricity to make the light, so it takes a  
16 body formed of dust and the spirit of God within it to make a *soul*. Is the light in light bulb eternal? If the bulb breaks, the  
17 light goes out. If the electricity ceases to activate the bulb, the light goes out. Such is the state of man when he dies, as it is  
18 written,

19 *"The soul that sinneth, it shall die. "*  
20 [Ezekiel 18:20]

21 Sin is defined as "transgression of the law." (1 John 3:4) There are physical laws and spiritual laws. If one violates the laws  
22 of the physical, his body can be broken and he dies. The same is true with the spiritual laws. The spirit that dwells in a man  
23 can leave the body, resulting in death. A soul which is subject to dying is not immortal, for it is written that God:

24 *"... only hath immortality, dwelling in the light which no man can approach unto; whom no man hath seen, nor*  
25 *can see: to whom be honour and power everlasting. Amen."*  
26 [1 Timothy 6:16]

27 What, then, does it mean to die? It is written,

28 *"Then shall the dust return to the earth as it was: and the spirit shall return unto God who gave it. "*  
29 [Ecclesiastes 12: 7]

30 *"While I live will I praise the LORD: I will sing praises unto my God while I have any being. Put not your trust*  
31 *in princes, nor in the son of man, in whom there is no help. His breath goeth forth, he returneth to his earth; in*  
32 *that very day his thoughts perish."*  
33 [Psalm 146: 2-4]

34 *"Thou hidest thy face, they are troubled: thou takest away their breath, they die, and return to their dust."*  
35 [Psalm 104:29]

36 This is death.

37 *"Thou sendest forth thy Spirit, they are created: and thou renewest the face of the earth."*  
38 [Psalm 104:30]

39 This is the resurrection.

40 Simply then, death is the separation of the breath (spirit) from the body. The spirit returns back to God who gave it, and the  
41 dust from which we are formed goes back to dust. The *soul* which a man became by the combination of the dust and the spirit  
42 ceases to exist, just as the light of a light bulb goes out and ceases to exist. The *soul* which had come into existence as a result  
43 of the combination of the dust and the spirit doesn't go anywhere when it dies, any more than the light of the bulb goes  
44 anywhere when it goes out.

1 All God has to do to resurrect a man is to create a body which is like the one which made up the original *soul*, and impart to  
2 it the breath of life, the spirit, and the same man (soul) lives again. In the resurrection of the just, their bodies will not contain  
3 any of the imperfections which they bore during their life on the sin-cursed earth. As a sixty watt clear light bulb produces a  
4 certain type a light, and 100 watt frosted bulb produces another, so our individuality will be evident through our differing  
5 bodies. As the same electricity creates numerous types of lights from the differing types of bulbs it supplies, so it is with the  
6 Spirit of God.

7 Death, then, is like a deep unconscious sleep as the apostle Paul has stated:

8 *“But I would not have you to be ignorant, brethren, concerning them which are asleep, that ye sorrow not, even*  
9 *as others which have no hope. For if we believe that Jesus died and rose again, even so them also which sleep in*  
10 *Jesus will God bring with him. For this I say by the word of the Lord, that we which are alive and remain unto*  
11 *the coming of the Lord shall not prevent [go before] them which are asleep. For the Lord himself shall descend*  
12 *from heaven with a shout, with the voice of the archangel, and with the trump of God: and the dead in Christ*  
13 *shall rise first.”*

14 *[1 Thessalonians 4:13-16, brackets added]*

15 As one who is in a deep sleep is unaware of what is happening around him, and even to him, so it is in death, as it is written:

16 *“ . . . in that very day his thoughts perish.”*

17 *[Psalm 146: 2-4]*

18 *“This is an evil among all things that are done under the sun, that there is one event unto all: yea, also the heart*  
19 *of the sons of men is full of evil, and madness is in their heart while they live, and after that they go to the dead.*  
20 *For to him that is joined to all the living there is hope: for a living dog is better than a dead lion. For the living*  
21 *know that they shall die: but the dead know not any thing, neither have they any more a reward; for the memory*  
22 *of them is forgotten. Also their love, and their hatred, and their envy, is now perished; neither have they any more*  
23 *a portion forever in anything that is done under the sun. . . . Whatsoever thy hand findeth to do, do it with thy*  
24 *might; for there is no work, nor device, nor knowledge, nor wisdom, in the grave, whither thou goest. ”*

25 *[Ecclesiastes 9: 3-6, 10]*

26 *“But man dieth, and wasteth away: yea, man giveth up the ghost, and where is he? As the waters fail from the*  
27 *sea, and the flood decayeth and drieth up: So man lieth down, and riseth not: till the heavens be no more, they*  
28 *shall not awake, nor be raised out of their sleep. O that thou wouldest hide me in the grave, that thou wouldest*  
29 *keep me secret, until thy wrath be past, that thou wouldest appoint me a set time, and remember me! If a man die,*  
30 *shall he live again? all the days of my appointed time will I wait, till my change come. Thou shalt call, and I will*  
31 *answer thee: thou wilt have a desire to the work of thine hands... His sons come to honour, and he knoweth it not;*  
32 *and they are brought low, but he perceiveth it not of them.”*

33 *[Job 14: 10-15, 21]*

34 The Greek word that been translated *hell* is “Hades,” and is understood to mean the place of the “unseen” or “unknown.” The  
35 idea that *Hades* is a “hot” place is unfounded. There is nothing in the composition of the word which indicates that it refers  
36 to a place where a fire is burning.

37 This is in perfect harmony with the previously quoted texts which state that man’s “thoughts perish” at the time of his death,  
38 and “the dead know not anything,” and “there is no work, nor device, nor knowledge, nor wisdom, in the grave.” The Hebrew  
39 word *Sheol*, which is also translated *hell* has the same basic meaning – that is, being *below*, or *beneath* perception. That is  
40 why Job asked of the dead “where is he?” The word *hell* has a figurative, spiritual meaning, and is not the same as the word  
41 which is translated *grave*, which refers to a literal place.

42 So, now that we have a correct understanding of the nature of man, let us go back to the question of *hell*. If man’s “thoughts  
43 perish” at the time of his death, and “the dead know not anything”, and “there is no work, nor device, nor knowledge, nor  
44 wisdom, in the grave,” then he would not be conscious of being in a place called *hell*, any more than he would be conscious  
45 of being in heaven while he was in the state the apostle Paul calls “sleep.” It is the Spirit of God which is within a man that  
46 goes back to heaven when one dies, not the man himself. It is the Spirit of God within a body which enables one to think and  
47 experience sensations. Absent the Spirit of God, man is simply dust.

48 When speaking of the “one event unto all,” that is, when “the spirit shall return unto God who gave it,” there is no distinction  
49 made between the spirit in a wicked person or a righteous one. The event is unto “all.” The logical conclusion inferred by the  
50 presumption that a wicked person’s soul (or spirit) goes to *hell* when he dies is that *hell* may actually be in heaven, for that is  
51 where God is, and that is where the spirit of man goes when he dies. Either that, or God, Himself, is in *hell* receiving the  
52 spirits of the wicked when they die. Both ideas are absurd, yet they are where the path of that false presumption leads.

1 One of the reasons that most Christians believe that the dead are conscious in death is because they take one of Jesus` parables  
2 and apply to it a literal construction, rather than leaving it as a fictitious story with a moral lesson. It is the story which he  
3 told of the Rich Man and Lazarus, as follows,

4 *“There was a certain rich man, which was clothed in purple and fine linen, and fared sumptuously every day: And there  
5 was a certain beggar named Lazarus, which was laid at his gate, full of sores, And desiring to be fed with the  
6 crumbs which fell from the rich man’s table: moreover the dogs came and licked his sores. And it came to pass, that the  
7 beggar died, and was carried by the angels into Abraham’s bosom: the rich man also died, and was buried; And in hell he  
8 lift up his eyes, being in torments, and seeth Abraham afar off, and Lazarus in his bosom. And he cried and said, Father Abraham,  
9 have mercy on me, and send Lazarus, that he may dip the tip of his finger in water, and cool my tongue; for I am  
10 tormented in this flame. But Abraham said, Son, remember that thou in thy lifetime receivest thy good things, and likewise  
11 Lazarus evil things: but now he is comforted, and thou art tormented. And beside all this, between us and you there is a  
12 great gulf fixed: so that they which would pass from hence to you cannot; neither can they pass to us, that would come from  
13 thence. Then he said, I pray thee therefore, father, that thou wouldest send him to my father’s house: For I have five brethren;  
14 that he may testify unto them, lest they also come into this place of torment. Abraham saith unto him, They have Moses and  
15 the prophets; let them hear them. And he said, Nay, father Abraham: but if one went unto them from the dead, they will  
16 repent. And he said unto him, If they hear not Moses and the prophets, neither will they be persuaded, though one rose  
17 from the dead.”*  
18 *[Luke 16:19-31]*

19 Was Jesus contradicting the scriptural teachings that the thoughts of a man perish with his death, and that in that condition  
20 they know or perceive nothing? No! He was using a parable to teach a lesson on responding to truth when it is readily available,  
21 and to convictions as they come to a person when he is alive. He was not giving a dissertation on the state of the dead, as some try  
22 to make it appear.

23 Those who have the idea that there is a place called *hell* where the devil spends a lot of time tormenting the wicked dead with  
24 fire do not think the matter through to its logical conclusion. That is, why isn’t the devil affected by the same flames? There  
25 is not a word in the Scriptures about the devil complaining about the fire which some think that he endures in *hell*, or of him  
26 being immune to the effects of the flames.

27 To get a true picture of the fire which will destroy all of the wicked, including the devil himself, and when this will happen, we must  
28 look at other Scriptures. That the wicked are not punished immediately upon their death, it is written,

29 *“The Lord knoweth how to deliver the godly out of temptations, and to reserve the unjust unto the day of judgment  
30 to be punished.”*  
31 *[2 Peter 2:9]*

32 *“As therefore the tares are gathered and burned in the fire; so shall it be in the end of this world.”*  
33 *[Matthew 13:40]*

34 It is at the “end” when those who are reserved for punishment will receive their due. They are not currently burning in literal  
35 fire. And that both *hell* and the wicked will be utterly consumed, it is written,

36 *“For yet a little while, and the wicked shall not be: yea, thou shalt diligently consider his place, and it shall not be. But  
37 the wicked shall perish, and the enemies of the LORD shall be as the fat of lambs: they shall consume; into smoke shall they  
38 consume away.”*  
39 *[Psalm 37: 10 & 20]*

40 *“... they shall be as though they had not been.”*  
41 *[Obadiah 16]*

42 Of the fate of all of the wicked after their resurrection after the millennium. it is written,

43 *“And I saw an angel come down from heaven, having the key of the bottomless pit and a great chain in his hand.  
44 And he laid hold on the dragon, that old serpent, which is the Devil, and Satan, and bound him a thousand years,  
45 And cast him into the bottomless pit, and shut him up, and set a seal upon him, that he should deceive the nations  
46 no more, till the thousand years should be fulfilled: and after that he must be loosed a little season. And I saw  
47 thrones, and they sat upon them, and judgment was given unto them: and I saw the souls of them that were  
48 beheaded for the witness of Jesus, and for the word of God, and which had not worshipped the beast, neither his  
49 image, neither had received his mark upon their foreheads, or in their hands; and they lived and reigned with  
50 Christ a thousand years. But the rest of the dead lived not again until the thousand years were finished. This is  
51 the first resurrection. Blessed and holy is he that hath part in the first resurrection: on such the second death hath  
52 no power, but they shall be priests of God and of Christ, and shall reign with him a thousand years. And when  
53 the thousand years are expired, Satan shall be loosed out of his prison, And shall go out to deceive the nations*

1 which are in the four quarters of the earth, Gog and Magog, to gather them together to battle: the number of  
2 whom is as the sand of the sea. And they went up on the breadth of the earth, and compassed the camp of the  
3 saints about, and the beloved city: and fire came down from God out of heaven, and devoured them. And the devil  
4 that deceived them was cast into the lake of fire and brimstone, where the beast and the false prophet are, and  
5 shall be tormented day and night for ever and ever.”  
6 [Revelation 20:9]

7 The words “for ever and ever” mean for the age, and do not necessarily mean eternity. This verse is in perfect harmony with  
8 another scripture regarding the fate of the wicked, as it is written,

9 “For, behold, the day cometh, that shall burn as an oven; and all the proud, yea, and all that do wickedly, shall  
10 be stubble: and the day that cometh shall burn them up, saith the LORD of hosts, that it shall leave them neither  
11 root nor branch. And ye shall tread down the wicked; for they shall be ashes under the soles of your feet in the  
12 day that I shall do this, saith the LORD of hosts.”  
13 [Malachi 4:1, 3]

14 The day of burning had not yet come in Malachi’s day, as he placed it future from his time. In this verse the devil is the  
15 “root”, and his followers are the “branch.” Both will cease to exist forever.

16 “And they shall go forth, and look upon the carcasses of the men that have transgressed against me: for their  
17 worm shall not die, neither shall their fire be quenched; and they shall be an abhorring unto all flesh.”  
18 [Isaiah 66:24]

19 The wicked shall cease to exist, for the “worm” that turns their bodies back to dust does not die, and the “fire” which burns  
20 them to ashes is unquenchable.

21 “Even as Sodom and Gomorrah, and the cities about them in like manner, giving themselves over to fornication,  
22 and going after strange flesh, are set forth for an example, suffering the vengeance of eternal fire.”  
23 [Jude 7]

24 Though it is called “eternal fire,” it does not mean that the wicked will survive its effects throughout eternity. “Eternal fire”  
25 thoroughly destroyed Sodom and Gomorrah so that there is nothing left of those places to burn today. That the devil suffers  
26 the same fate as though whom he has led into sin, it is written,

27 “. . . thou shalt take up this proverb against the king of Babylon, and say, How hath the oppressor ceased! the  
28 golden city ceased! The LORD hath broken the staff of the wicked, and the sceptre of the rulers. He who smote  
29 the people in wrath with a continual stroke, he that ruled the nations in anger, is persecuted, and none hindereth.  
30 The whole earth is at rest, and is quiet: they break forth into singing. Yea, the fir trees rejoice at thee, and the  
31 cedars of Lebanon, saying, Since thou art laid down no feller is come up against us. Hell from beneath is moved  
32 for thee to meet thee at thy coming: it stirreth up the dead for thee, even all the chief ones of the earth; it hath  
33 raised up from their thrones all the kings of the nations. All they shall speak and say unto thee, Art thou also  
34 become weak as we? art thou become like unto us? Thy pomp is brought down to the grave, and the noise of thy  
35 viols: the worm is spread under thee, and the worms cover thee. How art thou fallen from heaven.. O Lucifer,  
36 son of the morning! how art thou cut down to the ground, which didst weaken the nations! For thou hast said in  
37 thine heart, I will ascend into heaven, I will exalt my throne above the stars of God: I will sit also upon the mount  
38 of the congregation, in the sides of the north: I will ascend above the heights of the clouds; I will be like the most  
39 High. Yet thou shalt be brought down to hell, to the sides of the pit. They that see thee shall narrowly look upon  
40 thee, and consider thee, saying, Is this the man that made the earth to tremble, that did shake kingdoms; That  
41 made the world as a wilderness, and destroyed the cities thereof; that opened not the house of his prisoners? All  
42 the kings of the nations, even all of them, lie in glory, every one in his own house. But thou art cast out of thy  
43 grave like an abominable branch, and as the raiment of those that are slain, thrust through with a sword, that go  
44 down to the stones of the pit; as a carcass trodden under feet. Thou shalt not be joined with them in burial,  
45 because thou hast destroyed thy land, and slain thy people: the seed of evildoers shall never be renowned. Prepare  
46 slaughter for his children for the iniquity of their fathers; that they do not rise, nor possess the land, nor fill the  
47 face of the world with cities.”  
48 [Isaiah 14:4-21]

49 “Thou hast been in Eden the garden of God; every precious stone was thy covering, the sardius, topaz, and the  
50 diamond, the beryl, the onyx, and the jasper, the sapphire, the emerald, and the carbuncle, and gold: the  
51 workmanship of thy tabrets and of thy pipes was prepared in thee in the day that thou wast created. Thou art the  
52 anointed cherub that covereth; and I have set thee so: thou wast upon the holy mountain of God; thou hast walked  
53 up and down in the midst of the stones of fire. Thou wast perfect in thy ways from the day that thou wast created,  
54 till iniquity was found in thee. By the multitude of thy merchandise they have filled the midst of thee with violence,  
55 and thou hast sinned: therefore I will cast thee as profane out of the mountain of God: and I will destroy thee. O  
56 covering cherub, from the midst of the stones of fire. Thine heart was lifted up because of thy beauty, thou hast  
57 corrupted thy wisdom by reason of thy brightness: I will cast thee to the ground, I will lay thee before kings, that  
58 they may behold thee. Thou hast defiled thy sanctuaries by the multitude of thine iniquities, by the iniquity of thy



1 *traffick; therefore will I bring forth a fire from the midst of thee, it shall devour thee, and I will bring thee to ashes*  
2 *upon the earth in the sight of all them that behold thee. All they that know thee among the people shall be*  
3 *astonished at thee: thou shalt be a terror, and never shalt thou be any more.”*  
4 *[Ezekiel 28: 13-19]*

5 *“...when the Lord Jesus shall be revealed from heaven with his mighty angel, in flaming fire taking vengeance on*  
6 *them that know not God, and that obey not the gospel of our Lord Jesus Christ: who shall be punished with*  
7 *everlasting destruction from the presence of the Lord, and from the glory of his power...”*  
8 *[1 Thessalonians 1: 7-9]*

9 God must visit the wicked with everlasting punishment (separation from life), not everlasting punishing (eternal torture).  
10 Laws have been broken. God’s character has been maligned. Forgiveness has been made available. Forgiveness has been  
11 rejected. Every person is making his or her own decisions. For those who choose darkness instead of light, that is what they’ll  
12 get. The wicked will be so set in their ways that they would find it miserable to be in the company of God or his saints. They  
13 will desire to be anywhere where the light of God’s pure love doesn’t shine on them – even eternal darkness – non-existence.

14 Many who have been convicted of murder chose to waive their rights to appeal their trials, and announce that they wish to be  
15 put to death as soon as possible. They have no sweet peace, love, or joy in their minds and hearts, and really don’t like their  
16 lives. It would be torture for them to remain alive eternally in an inescapable prison. So it will be that the wicked desire to be  
17 no more. In the end, God, in his mercy, will be giving the wicked that which they desire — eternal separation from His  
18 presence. They will have no desire to sing the songs of God’s presence, as do the righteous:

19 *“Thou wilt show me the path of life: in thy presence is fullness of joy: at thy right hand there are pleasures for*  
20 *evermore.”*  
21 *[Psalm 16:11]*

22 *“Create in me a clean heart, O God; and renew a right spirit within me. Cast me not away from thy presence;*  
23 *and take not thy holy spirit from me.”*  
24 *[Psalm 51: 10- 11]*

25 God is not punishing the wicked dead with fire at this time, but he will resurrect them at the right time and give them their just  
26 reward for their part in the rebellion. Wisdom says:

27 *“All they who hate me, love death.”*  
28 *[Proverbs 8:36]*

29 God will give them what they love, silence for ever.

30 So, where the devil is *hell*? Nowhere. Just ask anyone who's been there. It is the devil who has created the lie that there now  
31 exists a literal place called *hell* wherein the wicked are being tortured by a harsh and vengeful god. He has done this to distort  
32 God's image. He wishes to portray God as being as cruel as Satan is.

33 *“He that loveth not knoweth not God; for God is love.”*  
34 *[1 John 4:8]*

### 35 **6.13 “Everything is ministry”<sup>65</sup>**

36 This thought virus is very common among ministers. Ministers tend strongly to believe that whatever they undertake as a  
37 program or a project is ministry. That is why Google returns millions of pages with examples of various activities that are  
38 called “ministry”.

39 This thought virus runs rampant because . . .until now. . .ministry has not had a universal definition that distinguishes ministry  
40 activity from non-ministry activity.

41 We define of ministry as:

42 *Religious activity. . .that brings both minister and people closer to God.*

---

<sup>65</sup> Boundaries For Effective Ministry, <http://www.boundaries-for-effective-ministry.org/thtvrusebook.html>.

1 We can see immediately that not everything is ministry. Because:

- 2 1. There are religious activities that are ministry. . .and religious activities that are not ministry.
- 3 2. There are activities called ministry that are not religious activities (and most so called “ministries” returned by a
- 4 Google search are not religious activities.
- 5 3. There are religious activities that do not bring both minister and the people closer to God. (such as private prayer).
- 6 4. And there are ministry activities. . .religious activities. . .that do bring both the ministry and the people closer to God. .
- 7 .which is the only purpose of ministry.

8 It is important to know what ministry is and what it isn’t because . . .apparent or misnamed ministries are documented in

9 Matt. 7:21 and they are spiritually devastating.

10 *"Not everyone who says to me, 'Lord, Lord,' will enter the kingdom of heaven, but only he who does the will of*

11 *my Father who is in heaven. Many will say to me on that day, 'Lord, Lord, did we not prophesy in your name, and*

12 *in your name drive out demons and perform many miracles?' Then I will tell them plainly, 'I never knew you.*

13 *Away from me, you evildoers!'*

14 *[Matt. 7:21, Bible, NKVJ]*

15 About them Jesus says. . .misidentifying and mislabeling ministry is. . .evildoing.

16 So . . .when ministry is defined properly and universally to cover all ministries. . .and distinguish them from non-ministry. .

17 .or apparent ministry. . .we can see that not everything is ministry.

18 If everything were ministry then . . .embezzlement and sex abuse would be ministries. And . . .indeed they have all been

19 called ministries. . .erroneously.

20 The boundary that cures this thought virus. . .everything is ministry. . .and immunizes the minister and the ministry from

21 devastation. . .is simply by adhering to the proper rational definition of ministry so that the minister can never believe they

22 are doing ministry when they are only doing apparent ministry which can lead to evildoing. . .and the undoing of the minister

23 and the ministry.

24 Exercising this boundary is easy. Just look at your schedule of all of the activities that you as a minister undertake in a week

25 and mark them as . . .ministry. . .non-ministry. . .using the universal definition provided at the link above.

26 You will discover that for most of the week. . .you are not doing ministry. Rather you are often doing activities that support

27 ministry or can lead to ministry. . .but which are not in themselves ministry.

28 Knowing the boundary line between ministry and non-ministry is crucial to immunizing your ministry from being infected

29 by evildoing. . .under the guise of doing good. . .that Jesus warns about in Matt. 7:21.

## 30 **6.14 “God loves me unconditionally”<sup>66</sup>**

31 This thought virus is very common among both ministers and parishioners. And it infects and weakens reasoning ability in

32 a very specific way. Because those who hold that God places no conditions on us believe they can do whatever they like

33 without consequence.

34 When people insist. . .as many ministers do. . .that God loves us unconditionally, what they seem to mean. . .what they

35 probably mean is that God loves us boundlessly. . .and he never gives upon on us. . . which is not the same thing as loving us

36 unconditionally.

37 There are many examples of God’s love for us. . .and the conditions he places on us to be in relationship to Him. . .that only

38 two will make the point.

39 In 1 Sam. 8:6ff the people reject God’s law (God’s conditions) and demand a king. God has Samuel recite the rights of kings

40 to them and then tells them through the prophet that when they complain against the abuses of the king. . .’on that day the

---

<sup>66</sup> Source: Boundaries For Effective Ministry, <http://www.boundaries-for-effective-ministry.org/thtvusebook.html>.

1 LORD will not answer them.” They must be in a state of grace. . .in a state of compliance with God’s requirements. . .as we  
2 were taught as children. . .to receive God’s lavish benefits.

3 When David becomes king God promises him lavish benefits with this condition: “And if he does wrong, I will correct him  
4 with the rod of men and with human chastisements. . .” [2 Sam. 7:14].

5 God’s boundless and enthusiastic love for us can never be exploited as a license to do whatever we wish. Compliance with  
6 the conditions placed on us in any covenant with God is mandatory.

7 If you believe there are not conditions placed on us in our relationship to God. . .then

- 8 1. There is no need for boundaries in ministerial behavior.
- 9 2. There are no obligations to fulfill.
- 10 3. Anything goes because God has no requirements for us and our actions.
- 11 4. We can act as irresponsibly as we wish and still enjoy God’s good graces.

12 This is not only rationally unsound given the evidence in the scriptures to the contrary. . .but it is theologically unsound as  
13 well. And like all viruses it can be spread.

14 Ministers who implicitly or explicitly show this virus in their thinking also will infect those they give spiritual counsel to. .  
15 .as a priest did when he taught a teenager to ignore his conscience (his spiritual immune system) in the moral decisions he  
16 made.

17 It is hard to believe that this thought virus is so pervasive given the evidence that God does not. . .and according to scripture.  
18 . .never has. .loved us unconditionally with no requirements placed on us. See section 7.7 later for a biblical definition of  
19 “love”.

20 God may put no conditions on who he invites into a relationship with Him. . .because he does have relationships with others.  
21 . .not only with his chosen people. All are welcome.

22 For example, in Deuteronomy 2:3, we see God warning his beloved Moses not to mess with Esau’s descendants or their  
23 posterity because God had a covenant with them. . .as he did with Moses.

24 So it is only the invitation to be in a relationship with God that is unconditional and universal. . .anyone can apply.

25 However, once you’ve been accepted by God, the conditions are imposed in the form of a covenant which is a religious  
26 contract and there is no such thing as a contract. . .religious or civil. . .without conditions. And God only relates to his people  
27 in covenants. . .religious contracts. . .from Genesis to the present day.

28 Note for example. . .that God gave Adam and Eve great benefits. . .including eternal life. . .but there was a condition on them.  
29 . .and a condition on God. . .in that covenant and in every one that follows.

30 To enjoy God’s continued friendship, Adam and Even could not eat from the tree in the center of the Garden. If they violated  
31 this condition. . .and they did. . .there was a penalty clause that God had to inflict on them because it was a condition that he  
32 placed on Himself in his covenant with them.

33 And that condition on Himself. . .that God had given his word to obey. . .was that Adam and Even would “surely die” if they  
34 violated the contract. And so God. . .having bound Himself in that covenant to a specific action. . .had to remove them. . .and  
35 put them outside the Garden of Eden. . .now guarded by a flaming sword at the entrance to keep them away from the tree of  
36 life. . .so they would surely die.

37 It is not relevant whether Adam and Eve were real people. . .as some believe. . .or mythical people. . .as others believe. . .  
38 .because theirs is not a story about human trials and tribulations.

39 It is a lesson told in narrative form that God will lavish us with his beneficence as long as we abide by the conditions he  
40 places on us in a religious covenant.

1 This lesson persists right into the gospels of Matthew and John as you will see below, where the basis of our loving God and  
2 God loving us is based on the Commandments.

3 So not only are there conditions that God places on Himself and on those with whom he has a relationship. . .a covenant. .  
4 .but there is a penalty clause for violating the covenant. Each and every covenant story displays the same contractual elements  
5 or conditions.

6 And each covenant has the same elements as modern-day contracts.

7 The cure for this thought virus. . .that God loves his people unconditionally. . .without imposing conditions on them. . .is  
8 found throughout the scriptures in each and every covenant story. . .with Moses, with Noah, and with Abraham, and on  
9 through history, into the gospels of Matthew and John.

10 No reasonable minister could claim. . .after reading each of the covenant stories. . .with the elements of a contract firmly in  
11 mind. . .that there are no conditions placed on us. . .and on God. . .in our relationship to Him.

12 And it is the Mosaic covenant of the Ten Commandments that underlies the message of the gospel.

13 So when the rich man asks Jesus what he must do to have eternal life (Matt. 19:16). . .Jesus tells him to keep the  
14 Commandments. . .and then recites them for him.

15 And in the gospel of John we see repeatedly that loving God is not a sentiment. . .a feeling. . .it is actively living out the  
16 Commandments.

- 17 1. If you love me you will keep my commandments. John 14:15.
- 18 2. Whoever has my commandments and observes them is the one who loves me. John 14:21.
- 19 3. Whoever loves me will keep my word. John 14:23.
- 20 4. Whoever does not love me does not keep my words. John 14:24.
- 21 5. If you keep my commandments, you will remain in my love, just as I have kept my Father's commandments and remain  
22 in his love. John 15:10.

23 Although knowing the Commandments is not enough. . .any more than it is enough for a person only to know the date when  
24 she must make her car payment.

25 We must act under any contract. Boundaries. . .like the immune system. . .are active.

26 Read Psalm 44 in its entirety to see how the Israelites approached God. . .respectfully but firmly. . .to remind him that they  
27 were fulfilling the terms of the covenant with Him. . .but God was slow to act to fulfill the conditions he imposed on Himself.  
28 "Awake, why are you asleep, O Lord" they cry.

29 They want Him to perform as he agreed to do.

30 The covenant of the Ten Commandments must be lived actively in real time. . .so that the required behaviors will be done. . .  
31 and the prohibited behaviors will not cross the Commandments barrier and infect the minister and be spread to the people.

32 The minister will know when this thought virus is cured when the boundaries of the Ten Commandments inform his or her  
33 thinking. . .and the proper conclusion arrived at that there is no such thing as an unconditional relationship to God.

34 If there were. . .there would be no need for Judgment Day. But we are repeatedly warned to be prepared for that day (for  
35 example, Mt. 12:36). And there would be no need for the sacrament of reconciliation which cures a contract with God that  
36 is in default.

## 6.15 “People are all inherently good”<sup>67</sup>

How many times have you heard the adage, “Most people are inherently good, except for a few bad apples”? Most believe this to be true, leading them to strive to “make a difference.” Their thinking is that if the “good” people rise up and join together, the problems of the world can be fixed.

Let’s put aside human opinion and ask, “How does God answer this question?”

The philosophies, feelings and ideas of men are easy to dispel when one is willing to let the Bible interpret itself. Let’s begin with two short verses: “For all have sinned, and come short of the glory of God” (Rom. 3:23) and “the whole world lies in wickedness” (I John 5:19). Next read Romans 3:10-12:

*“As it is written, There is none righteous, no, not one: There is none that understands, there is none that seeks after God. They are all gone out of the way, they are together become unprofitable; there is none that does good, no, not one.”*

Together, these powerful verses describe the true state of humanity.

Allow God’s Word to focus on individuals. Notice each passage literally describes the hearts and minds of all people. The first of two verses is from the Old Testament:

*“The heart is deceitful above all things, and desperately wicked: who can know it?”*  
[Jer. 17:9]

The second passage is found in Romans 8:

*“Because the carnal mind is enmity against God: for it is not subject to the law of God, neither indeed can be.”*  
[Rom. 8:7]

The second verse adds a new element. Notice it is the carnal mind that is enmity (which can be translated “enemy” or “hostile”) against God. This makes the question of what distinguishes a Spirit-led mind from a carnal one extremely important.

No wonder Paul wrote a chapter earlier in Romans,

*“For I know that in me (that is, in my flesh,) dwells no good thing.”*  
[Rom. 7:18]

Further, it becomes clear why Christ said even of Himself,

*“Why call you Me good? There is none good but One, that is, God.”*  
[Matt. 19:17]

Are you surprised at the plain clarity of these passages? Are you surprised to see that human beings are not inherently good?

God sees human beings and their conduct far differently from how we see ourselves. Our Creator is also able to recognize what each of us can become if we obey Him and become true Christians.

The following booklet presents many more aspects of this subject:

*Did God Create Human Nature?*  
<http://www.thercg.org/books/dgchn.html>

<sup>67</sup> Adapted from: <http://www.realtruth.org/articles/071228-001-smq.html>.

## 7 Questions Your Minister Doesn't Want You To Ask

The following subsections provide questions that your minister hopes you don't ask. The reason why they will avoid these questions is that they touch at the heart of the deceptions found in this document and expose the minister as not accurately portraying the basic truths found in the Bible.

### 7.1 "What is the Biblical definition of sin?"<sup>68</sup>

One of the central points of the Bible is the difference between what God approves, and what He does not. There have been endless dissertations about the definition of sin—what is and is not sin. Yet the Bible defines sin with surprising simplicity: "Whoever commits sin transgresses also the law: for sin is the transgression of the law" (I John 3:4). When someone transgresses or breaks "the law," he is sinning.

When one breaks man's laws, he earns a penalty, such as a fine, jail time or even (depending on the seriousness of the crime) death. Likewise, when we violate the laws of God, we earn a penalty: "The wages of sin is death" (Rom. 6:23). Wages are something you earn as a payment for what you have done. If you sin—break God's Law—you will die (Ezek. 18:4, 20).

Suddenly, knowing what constitutes "the law" is of extreme importance! Again, we must allow God to explain what He means through His Word—not the reasoning or opinions of men.

### 7.2 "What is God's law?"<sup>69</sup>

What should be an easy answer to the above question has been so twisted and mangled it needs more than a one or two scripture response. Greater "churchianity" has blurred the concept of what sin is and, by extension, has also butchered the definition of what constitutes God's Law.

However, this need not be complicated. One can spot through the Old and New Testaments and examine many scriptures in which the "law" or "commandments" are described. The first is Genesis 26, where both words are found:

*"And I will make your seed to multiply as the stars of heaven...Because that Abraham obeyed My voice, and kept My charge, My commandments, My statutes, and My laws."  
[Gen. 26:4-5]*

Direct blessings come from keeping the commandments and laws of God. Throughout the Old Testament you will see that ancient Israel was told to keep God's Law.

Much confusion stems from differences between the laws of Moses—the civil laws of the nation—and the commandments of God—the Ten Commandments.

Jesus Christ had much to say about the Ten Commandments. Notice Jesus' statement in Matthew 5:

*"Do not think that I came to abolish the Law or the Prophets; I did not come to abolish but to fulfill...not the smallest letter or stroke shall pass from the Law until all is accomplished."  
[Matt. 5:17-18, NASB]*

The word "fulfill" (pleroo in the original Greek) means to "verify, fully preach, perfect, fill to the full." In other words, Christ came to verify and perfect the Ten Commandments, expanding their meaning. The same chapter is filled with examples of how the Ten Commandments are even more binding today. For instance, "...it was said of them of old time, You shall not kill...but I say unto you, That whosoever is angry with his brother without a cause shall be in danger of the judgment" (Matt. 5:21-22). Instead of abolishing the Sixth Commandment, Christ magnified it.

<sup>68</sup> Adapted from: <http://www.realtruth.org/articles/525-sq.html>

<sup>69</sup> Source: <http://www.realtruth.org/articles/525-sq.html>

1 Much more could be said about how all Ten Commandments, including obedience of the seventh-day Sabbath, are found  
2 throughout the New Testament. (To look at these verses in more detail, read the article “Does the New Testament Teach All  
3 Ten Commandments?”<sup>70</sup>)

4 The primary verse your minister will use to dismiss the scriptures above is found in Colossians 2. Let’s read:

5 *“Blotting out the handwriting of ordinances that was against us, which was contrary to us, and took it out of the*  
6 *way, nailing it to His cross.”*  
7 *[Col. 2:14]*

8 No doubt, you have heard that the Ten Commandments were “done away” or “nailed to the cross.” This is the verse used to  
9 support that claim. Examining the original Greek words that were translated into English removes all mystery about the  
10 subject of this verse. The word “ordinances” comes from the Greek word dogma, which means “a law (civil or ceremonial);  
11 public decrees; the rules and requirements of the law of Moses.” This verse speaks of ordinances of men—“the handwriting  
12 of ordinances that was against us...contrary to us.” This is not speaking of the Law of God, which Psalm 19 describes as  
13 “perfect,” “sure,” “right” and “pure,” (Psalm 19:7-8) and Paul states is “holy, and the commandment holy, and just, and good”  
14 (Rom. 7:12). It was the ordinances of men—along with the death penalty we earned through sin—that were “nailed to the  
15 cross.”

16 Your minister knows—or should know!—the meaning of that Greek word.

17 Are you beginning to see why God is angry with those who teach contrary to His Word? Multiple verses state that those who  
18 do not obey God and keep His laws do not have godly love (John 14:15) and are liars (I John 2:4).

19 Some assert that keeping the Ten Commandments is being “legalistic,” stating that salvation is by grace. Does obeying the  
20 Law have anything to do with salvation? Remember, we have already seen that disobeying the Law results in death! How  
21 does grace and obeying the Ten Commandments connect to salvation? And does obeying the law—your works—mean you  
22 are trying to earn salvation?

### 23 **7.3 “Can the trinity be proven in the Bible?”<sup>71</sup>**

24 You have seen four questions never truly answered at your church—and proof that the teachings of your minister completely  
25 contradict the plain words of the Bible. Actually, the problem goes much deeper. Each week you are being taught the lessons,  
26 teachings and doctrines of a false god. Shocking as it may sound, the deity your minister teaches about is none other than the  
27 “god of this world”—packaged as the trinity.

28 How important is it that you are worshipping the true God of the Bible? Does it matter if you are off, even a little?

29 Think. If you worship the true God, but have other doctrines wrong, He can guide you to proper understanding. However, if  
30 you are wrong about which god to worship, you will never be led to understand other true biblical teachings. In fact, you will  
31 be led into more and more error! This is the single greatest reason all you have read so far is hidden from mankind. Your  
32 minister has been deceived by the devil into accepting a concept that he does not understand—that cannot be understood, and  
33 he will tell you not to try!

34 Ask your pastor to explain the trinity. Have him show you where God calls Himself a trinity. When he attempts to stretch  
35 verses, which require leaps of logic to draw any parallels, ask yourself: Would God leave something as important as His true  
36 identity so vague and difficult to prove? Of course not!

37 The word “trinity” is found nowhere in the Bible, and neither is the doctrine. In fact, finding no biblical evidence to support  
38 it, translators inserted a passage into the New Testament that had never existed before. This was their attempt to justify this  
39 teaching. Any honest minister would readily admit this. The inserted phrase (in italics) is found in I John 5:

---

<sup>70</sup> See: <http://www.realtruth.org/articles/216-dtmattac.html>

<sup>71</sup> Source: <http://www.realtruth.org/articles/525-sq.html>

1                   *“For there are three that bear record in heaven, the Father, the Word, and the Holy Ghost: and these three are*  
2                   *one. And there are three that bear witness in earth, the spirit, and the water, and the blood: and these three agree*  
3                   *in one.”*  
4                   *[1 John 5:7-8]*

5 The section first appeared in a manuscript written in the 8th century. Translators added it because the Bible makes no case  
6 for the trinity. Instead of correcting their teachings, they modified the Bible to suit their needs. Will you stand for such deceit  
7 on something as important as the nature of the true God?

#### 8 **7.4 “What is the Gospel of Jesus Christ?”<sup>72</sup>**

9 The most misunderstood, confused and butchered teaching in the Bible is also the most fundamental. Billions assume many  
10 things about the gospel. Different denominations have created gospels of healing, salvation and grace, to name a few.

11 The word gospel means “good news.” When properly understood, the gospel is marvelous good news, far greater than the  
12 narrow focus brought by so many.

13 “Gospel” is found 101 times throughout the Bible. Sometimes it is found alone, and other times with the phrases “of the  
14 kingdom,” “of the kingdom of God,” or “of the kingdom of heaven.” It is also tied to Jesus Christ, in that it is His message.  
15 The phrase “gospel of Christ” appears 11 times in the New Testament.

16 These passages have unnecessarily confused many Bible students. Simple English grammar makes them plain and the  
17 meaning obvious. The preposition “of” always denotes possession. The “gospel of Christ” could easily be written as “Christ’s  
18 gospel.” Breaking it down even further, the “gospel of Christ” could be written as “Christ’s good news.” When Scripture  
19 describes the gospel as “of the kingdom of heaven,” it is heaven’s kingdom—meaning it is God’s kingdom, since heaven is  
20 where He resides.

21 Tying this with the numerous times the gospel is attached to the kingdom of God (meaning God’s kingdom), the picture  
22 clarifies further. Since “kingdom” is a King James term meaning government, and “of” denotes possession, “kingdom of  
23 God” can be written as “government of God” or “God’s government” (ruled by the Family of God).

24 Now let’s put everything together. “Christ’s gospel of the kingdom of God” can be expressed as “Christ’s good news of  
25 God’s government.” How plain! Jesus’ good news was the announcement of God’s government coming to earth.

26 There is no need to complicate the subject. Mankind has narrowed the gospel to a message of healing, salvation or even a  
27 message about the person of Jesus Christ. How sad that Christ’s real message is lost in the confusion! When the Bible is taken  
28 at face value, its meaning and purpose is always greater than what men narrowly purport.

29 God takes the truth of the gospel seriously. The apostle Paul warns the first-century Church—and all Christians thereafter—  
30 that some would “pervert the gospel of Christ” (Gal. 1:7). He goes on to state twice that any who do this are cursed (vs. 8-9)!

31 That is a serious warning from God!

32 Jesus Christ and Christians through the ages were put to death for this important message. Of course, God demands the true  
33 gospel to be taught.

34 Is your minister—your church!—teaching Christ’s good news of the coming government of God? Almost certainly, NO!

35 The following resources greatly expound upon this subject:

- 36 1. *Who or What Is the Beast of Revelation?*, The Reformed Church of God  
37 <http://www.thercg.org/books/wowitbor.html>
- 38 2. *Socialism: The New American Civil Religion*, Form #05.016  
39 <http://sedm.org/Forms/FormIndex.htm>
- 40 3. *Social Security: Mark of the Beast*, Form #11.407-proves that the “Beast” is really just man and governments of men

---

<sup>72</sup> Adapted from <http://www.realtruth.org/articles/071228-001-smq.html>.



1 <http://sedm.org/Forms/FormIndex.htm>

## 2 **7.5 “What is the Difference Between God the Father, Jesus Christ and the Holy Spirit?”<sup>73</sup>**

3 Confusion abounds about what is the Godhead. Attempts to fuse the Holy Spirit, the Father and Jesus Christ into one Being  
4 have made certain scriptures appear contradictory. This need not be so. Paul told the Corinthian brethren that there was  
5 simplicity in Christ (II Cor. 11:3).

6 Untangling the Gordian knot of the trinity doctrine begins in the gospel of John. The first chapter describes the earliest time  
7 period revealed in the Bible: “In the beginning was the Word, and the Word was with God, and the Word was God. The same  
8 was in the beginning with God” (vs. 1-2).

9 This account describes two God Beings. One is called the “Word.” Verse 14 makes clear that the Word is Jesus Christ: “And  
10 the Word was made flesh, and dwelt among us...”

11 Who is the other God Being? Let Christ answer that question:

12 *“I can of My own self do nothing...because I seek not My own will, but the will of the Father which has sent Me.”*  
13 *[John 5:30]*

14 The Word came to earth and became Jesus Christ, leaving the One who sent Him—the Father. Scores of other verses  
15 demonstrate the relationship between the human Jesus and the Father, who remained in heaven.

16 To further understand the name God, we must go to the beginning of the Bible. Genesis adds more details:

17 *“And God said, Let us make man in our image, after our likeness.”*  
18 *[Genesis 1:26]*

19 Two points jump from this passage. God is referenced and is followed by plural terms—“us” and “our.” The Hebrew word  
20 translated God is Elohim, which is a uniplural term. (The singular is Eloah.)

21 Elohim always refers to more than one being. This is comparable to a father and son sharing the last name Smith. Both can  
22 be referred to as Smith. Of course, they are not the same person; they simply share the same name. In a similar manner, Jesus  
23 Christ and the Father share the name, God. This is a family relationship—the God Family—not a closed trinity that denies  
24 the very reason the God Family created man after “our image, after our likeness.”

25 Some confuse the terms Spirit of God and Spirit of Christ. One verse makes it clear that these are the same Spirit—the Holy  
26 Spirit: “But you are not in the flesh, but in the Spirit, if so be that the Spirit of God dwell in you. Now if any man have not  
27 the Spirit of Christ, he is none of His” (Rom. 8:9).

28 Space does not allow for the many verses proving that the Holy Spirit is not a person. Do not fall victim to preachers who  
29 attempt to prove the trinity by pointing to passages such as I John 5. Most scholars realize that half of verse 6 and all of verse  
30 7 were inserted, and not found in the original Greek text. In verse 8, the translators added “in earth.” With proper context,  
31 this chapter explains that Christ’s baptism, blood and sacrifice did not “do away with” the Ten Commandments. Only clever,  
32 deceitful manipulation allows the trinity to be injected into this passage. Any thinking person who reads the entire chapter  
33 will realize it in no way espouses the trinity.

34 The following book explains this subject unlike anything else ever written:

The TRINITY – Is God three-in-one?  
<http://www.thercg.org/books/ttigio.html>

<sup>73</sup> Adapted from <http://www.realtruth.org/articles/071228-001-smq.html>.

## 7.6 “What is a True Christian?”<sup>74</sup>

While this question should not be confusing, billions have no idea. It can be answered with a verse we have already covered:

*“But you are not in the flesh, but in the Spirit, if so be that the Spirit of God dwell in you. Now if any man have not the Spirit of Christ, he is none of His.”*  
[Rom. 8:9]

A Christian is one who has the Holy Spirit. It is that simple.

The next question should then be How can one acquire the “Spirit of Christ”? Jesus begins the answer in Mark 1:

*“The time is fulfilled, and the kingdom of God is at hand: repent you, and believe the gospel.”*  
[Mark 1:15]

This is one of Christ’s first commands. We are told to “repent,” which means to change. This may be the perfect summary of Christianity. It is a life of constant change from a carnal mind to one taking on the desires and character of God. As the second step in the Christian walk, it should now be clear why our opening question about the gospel is crucial—that you must believe in the true gospel Christ preached, the kingdom of God.

The apostle Peter’s sermon in Acts adds another element:

*“Repent, and be baptized every one of you in the name of Jesus Christ for the remission of sins, and you shall receive the gift of the Holy Spirit.”*  
[Acts 2:38]

One must be baptized to receive the Holy Spirit.

Time and again, clear scriptures reveal the core teachings of the Bible.

The following booklet expands more upon the question addressed in this section:

[What is True Conversion?](http://www.thercg.org/books/witc.html), The Reformed Church of God  
<http://www.thercg.org/books/witc.html>

## 7.7 “What is the Bible Definition of Love?”<sup>75</sup>

The subject of love is perhaps the single most popular teaching in Christendom. Each week, billions hear sermons about the “love of God,” how the “love of Jesus is in our hearts” and nearly every version of what is supposedly godly love. But is your minister teaching “love” as defined by the Bible?

Let’s start with a popular verse. The apostle Paul wrote,

*“The love of God is shed abroad in our hearts by the Holy [Spirit] which is given unto us.”*  
[Rom. 5:5]

As we have seen, having the Holy Spirit is the starting point of being a Christian. It is only through God’s Spirit that we can have true love—the love of God.

How does the Bible define the “love of God”?

The apostle John wrote,

*“For this is the love of God, that we keep His commandments: and His commandments are not grievous.”*  
[I John 5:3]

<sup>74</sup> Adapted from <http://www.realtruth.org/articles/071228-001-smq.html>.

<sup>75</sup> Adapted from <http://www.realtruth.org/articles/071228-001-smq.html>.

1 We demonstrate the love of God if we happily keep God’s commandments. This makes perfect sense because God’s Law is  
2 “holy, just, good and spiritual” (Rom. 7:12, 14). Later in Romans, Paul adds more:

3 *“Love works no ill to his neighbor: therefore love is the fulfilling of the law.”*  
4 *[Rom. 13:10]*

5 Putting these two verses together demonstrates that the love of God is fulfilling the Law by keeping His commandments. Yet,  
6 amazingly, millions believe that God’s Law has been “nailed to the cross.”

7 How many sermons have you heard about “love” that ignored these fundamental verses? God’s only definition of love is not  
8 preached because it requires action! Godly love requires a Christian to obey.

## 9 **7.8 “What is the Purpose of the Ten Commandments?”<sup>76</sup>**

10 After the last question, the purpose of the Ten Commandments—God’s Law—should be obvious. As a Being who says He  
11 is love (I John 4:8, 16), God (like any responsible parent) prescribes conduct that allows His children to lead happy, successful  
12 and abundant lives.

13 Sin leads to death (Rom. 6:23), so God has created laws to distinguish righteousness from sin:

14 *“What shall we say then? Is the law sin? God forbid. No, I had not known sin, but by the law: for I had not known*  
15 *lust, except the law had said, Thou shall not covet.”*  
16 *[Rom. 7:7]*

17 With what you have learned thus far, the idea of dismissing the Ten Commandments should seem ridiculous.

18 However, let’s humor the notion that some or all of the Ten Commandments have been done away. Of the two notions,  
19 dismissing all the commandments is a more “honest” position; at least the proponent is saying he rejects all of the basic  
20 principles of the Bible.

21 Most ministers pick and choose individual commandments as being valid or invalid. Ask your minister if it is permissible to  
22 murder. His answer will be obvious. If he answers with a scripture, he will undoubtedly cite the Ten Commandments as  
23 God’s position on murder. The same will be true for adultery, stealing, lying, etc.

24 Taken in a general sense, most religionists say the Ten Commandments are an important “framework” of Christian conduct.  
25 However, if you discuss each commandment with them, you will find their doctrines force them to reject one or more of the  
26 ten, usually the Second and Fourth commands—regarding idolatry and the Sabbath, respectively.

27 Effectively, your minister is deciding that he has the authority to twist, modify or dismiss something God created!

28 Notice how God describes the Ten Commandments:

29 *“But whoso looks into the perfect law of liberty, and continues therein, he being not a forgetful hearer, but a doer*  
30 *of the work, this man shall be blessed in his deed.”*  
31 *[Jms. 1:25]*

32 Chapter 2 of James, focusing on verse 12, proves the “law of liberty” is the Ten Commandments.

33 The following book covers each commandment and its link to God’s love in much more detail.

*The Ten Commandments: Nailed to the Cross or Required for Salvation?*  
<http://www.thercg.org/books/syotc.html>

---

<sup>76</sup> Adapted from <http://www.realtruth.org/articles/071228-001-smq.html>.

## 7.9 “Why Was I Born?”<sup>77</sup>

The most important question in this article is rarely asked. While questions regarding doctrines are interesting and important, they are only the springboard to the real purpose for being a Christian—what has been called your “incredible human potential.”

Again, Romans sheds some light on this potential:

*“...that He [Christ] might be the firstborn among many brethren.”*  
[Rom. 8:29]

The key in this verse is the phrase “firstborn among many brethren.”

More details are revealed earlier in the same chapter:

*“But if the Spirit of Him that raised up Jesus from the dead dwell in you, He that raised up Christ from the dead shall also quicken [give life to] your mortal bodies by His Spirit that dwells in you.”*  
[Romans 8:11]

Again, notice the parallels to what Christ has experienced and what is planned for man.

*“The whole creation groans and travails in pain together until now. And not only they, but ourselves also, which have the firstfruits of the Spirit, even we ourselves groan within ourselves, waiting for the adoption [Greek: ‘sonship’ or ‘placing as a son’]...”*  
[Rom. 8:22-23]

The parallel should be clear. Further, our reward is covered in an inspiring passage that again parallels Christ! It is much greater than popular religion’s ridiculous concept of spending eternity floating on clouds in heaven:

*“You made him [man] a little lower than the angels; You crowned him with glory and honor, and did set him over the works of Your hands: You have put all things [Moffatt translation renders ‘all things’ as ‘the universe’] in subjection under his feet. For in that He put all in subjection under him, He left nothing that is not put under him. But now we see not yet all things put under him.*

*“But we see Jesus, who was made a little lower than the angels for the suffering of death, crowned with glory and honor...For it became Him, for whom are all things, and by whom are all things, in bringing many sons unto glory, to make the Captain of their salvation perfect through sufferings.”*  
[Heb. 2:7-10]

The Christian goal is to be born into the kingdom of God, which is the family of God—to become an immortal spirit-being who will rule “all things”—the universe—under Jesus Christ! What could be more wonderful—more GLORIOUS?

## 8 Motivation for the Deception and Corruption

The deception described in this document results from sinful defects in human nature which we’re sure you are familiar with:

1. Desire to avoid responsibility or liability for our actions and choices under the Bible covenant. The ultimate goal is to minimize the consideration we have to provide under the Bible covenant so we can drive a hard bargain with God and get what we want without providing much in return. This sin takes many forms:
  - 1.1. Dismissing the Bible as a history book instead of a law book.
  - 1.2. Downplaying the applicability of the Old Testament to modern Christianity.
  - 1.3. Saying we are under grace instead of law.
  - 1.4. Saying the New Testament repealed the Old Testament.
  - 1.5. Accusing those who attempt to enforce all the terms of the covenant of being legalistic.
  - 1.6. Saying that Jesus’ kingdom is not of this world, so we don’t have to enforce his morality while we are here or impose it on our fellow man while acting as a jurist or voter.

<sup>77</sup> Adapted from <http://www.realtruth.org/articles/071228-001-smq.html>.

- 1 1.7. Saying we aren't supposed to judge those who disobey the Bible covenant, which completely destroys the ability  
2 to enforce the covenant within God's house, the Church.
- 3 2. Desire to do things our way instead of Gods way. In short: Rebellion against God's commandments.
- 4 2.1. This was the original sin of both Eve and Lucifer and it led to separation from God by being removed from  
5 Heaven or kicked out of the Garden.
- 6 2.2. This philosophy leads to turning our relationship to God upside down and redefining his law to conform to our  
7 will. In effect, we create God in our own image and revise scripture or the meaning of scripture to conform with  
8 our expectations and desires so that we receive maximum benefit, control, and power and the least possible  
9 liability.
- 10 3. Hedonism: The pursuit of what feels good instead of what God's law actually requires and the avoidance of pain or  
11 effort. People who pursue this approach usually:
- 12 3.1. Remove "sin" and "repentance" from their vocabulary.
- 13 3.2. Describe "love" from a biblical perspective not as an act of obedience to God's law, which is what it is, but rather  
14 as a "feeling". Do you think Jesus would have willingly suffered the way He did if his main motivation in life  
15 was to avoid pain? Such an approach minimizes humans to little more than animals. The main thing that  
16 motivates animals is the maximization of pleasure and the avoidance of pain.
- 17 3.3. Replace teaching of God's word with ritual and sacrifice and group activities within religious ceremony and  
18 meetings.
- 19 3.4. Describing "ministry" as something that feels good rather than something that draws both clergy and the people  
20 closer to God.
- 21 3.5. Care more about what men think about them than what God thinks of them under the Bible covenant.
- 22 3.6. Treat the church as a social club or "mutual admiration society" rather than an enforcer of morality both within  
23 the church and upon society in general.
- 24 3.7. Avoid evangelism efforts because they are time consuming and demanding.
- 25 3.8. Insist on spending church tithes on themselves or within the church rather than all of the needy, including those  
26 outside the church.
- 27 3.9. Minimizing our contributions and tithes to the church. God measures the value of our contributions not by their  
28 absolute amount, but by what they mean to the giver. See Matt. 26:6-13 and Mark 12:41-44.
- 29 4. Pride: Sin is one of the seven deadly sins and the worst of all sins. Pride causes the following problems within  
30 Christians to corruptly:
- 31 4.1. Refuse to acknowledge that sin exists: They don't want to admit that they are sinners and humbly repent.
- 32 4.2. Refuse to acknowledge the Bible as a law book: They don't want to have to serve or worship something more  
33 important than themselves. In short, they covet God's power and authority.
- 34 4.3. Invent their own morality and law system as a substitute for God's holy laws. See section 8.2. They want to  
35 control others and elevate their own importance in relation to others.
- 36 4.4. Seek to be like the rest of the world and not be sanctified and separate: They want to compete with the Joneses:
- 37 *"Then all the elders of Israel gathered together and came to Samuel at Ramah, and said to him, 'Look, you are  
38 old, and your sons do not walk in your ways. **Now make us a king to judge us like all the nations** [and be OVER  
39 them]'.*
- 40 *"But the thing displeased Samuel when they said, '**Give us a king to judge us.**' So Samuel prayed to the Lord.  
41 **And the Lord said to Samuel, 'Heed the voice of the people in all that they say to you; for they have rejected**  
42 **Me, that I should not reign over them.** According to all the works which they have done since the day that I  
43 brought them up out of Egypt, even to this day—**with which they have forsaken Me and served other gods—so**  
44 **they are doing to you also [government becoming idolatry]."***  
45 *[1 Sam. 8:4-8, Bible, NKJV]*
- 46 4.5. Avoid answering the questions found earlier in section 7: They don't want to admit they may have been teaching  
47 false doctrine for much of their lives.
- 48 4.6. Spread the false arguments found in section 2 earlier:
- 49 4.6.1. They don't want to have to acknowledge the authority of scripture and the absolute Sovereignty of God over  
50 the entire universe.
- 51 4.6.2. They want to elevate creations of men, such as man's laws and human governments above that of the only  
52 True and Living God and thereby worship pagan idols.

53 All of the above sinful defects in human nature are examined and reconciled against the Bible within the following fascinating  
54 book which we highly recommend for those who wish to learn more about this subject:

The above book gave rise to an entire ministry devoted to eliminating the above problems within Christianity with the goal of restoring the authority of God's law to everyday life. We invite you to visit their website for further information. You will find their research fascinating:

The Chalcedon Foundation  
<http://www.chalcedon.edu/>

## 8.1 Desire to avoid responsibility

*"The hand of the diligent will rule,  
But the lazy [or irresponsible] man will be put to forced labor."  
[Prov. 12:24, Bible, NKJV]*

The first place in the Bible where we find an effort to avoid responsibility is in the Garden of Eden. The first sin of mankind, in fact, was motivated out of a desire to avoid liability to anyone else by becoming a God unto oneself. Satan promised Eve that if she sinned by eating the forbidden fruit of the tree, then she would **not** suffer the consequence of death promised by God. Remember that the Bible says "The wages of sin is death" (Romans 6:23) and Satan lied when he promised Eve that she would **not** die. In short, there would be no liability for her violation of God's law and instead, she would be a "god" herself:

*Then the serpent said to the woman, "You will **not** surely die [no liability]. For God knows that in the day you eat of it your eyes will be opened, and you will be like God, knowing good and evil."  
[Genesis 3:4-5; Bible, NKJV]*

Throughout the Bible, God warns us that we will be held personally liable for all of our choices and actions. That liability will occur on judgment day:

*"And as **it is appointed for men to die once, but after this the judgment**, so Christ was offered once to bear the sins of many. To those who eagerly wait for Him He will appear a second time, apart from sin, for salvation. **For the law**, having a shadow of the good things to come, and not the very image of the things, **can never** with these same sacrifices, which they offer continually year by year, **make those who approach perfect** [in the sight of God]"  
[Hebrews 9:27-28, 10:1, Bible, NKJV]*

Here you can see that God is talking about final judgment for our actions and choices, and He is implying that unless we are *perfect* in His eyes at that judgment, then we are condemned. However, God is also promising indemnification from personal liability, which here is called "salvation" to those who "eagerly wait for Him". Faith in and obedience to Christ is basically being offered here as an insurance policy against the final judgment and wrath of God. That obedience manifests itself in following the two great commandments that Christ revealed to us in Mark 12:28-33:

*Then one of the scribes came, and having heard them reasoning together, perceiving that He had answered them well, asked Him, "Which is the first commandment of all?"*

*Jesus answered him, "The first of all the commandments is: "Hear, O Israel, the LORD our God, the LORD is one. And you shall love the LORD your God with all your heart, with all your soul, with all your mind, and with all your strength. This is the first commandment. And the second, like it, is this: "You shall love your neighbor as yourself. There is no other commandment greater than these."*

*So the scribe said to Him, "Well said, Teacher. You have spoken the truth, for there is one God, and there is no other but He. And to love Him with all the heart, with all the understanding, with all the soul, and with all the strength, and to love one's neighbor as oneself, is more than all the whole burnt offerings and sacrifices."  
[Mark 12:28-33, Bible, NKJV]*

*"For all the law is fulfilled in one word, even in this: 'You shall love your neighbor as yourself.'"  
[Gal 5:14, Bible, NKJV]*

1 The important thing to remember is that there is a BIG difference between man's and God's approach toward encouraging  
2 people to avoid liability. Faith produces salvation and indemnification because it makes us appear "perfect" in God's eyes,  
3 but it does not relieve us from personal liability for obeying God's laws.

4 *Faith Without Works Is Dead*

5 *What does it profit, my brethren, if someone says he has faith but does not have works? Can faith save him? If a*  
6 *brother or sister is naked and destitute of daily food, and one of you says to them, "Depart in peace, be warmed*  
7 *and filled," but you do not give them the things which are needed for the body, what does it profit? Thus also faith*  
8 *by itself, if it does not have works, is dead.*

9 *But someone will say, "You have faith, and I have works." Show me your faith without your works, and I will*  
10 *show you my faith by my works. You believe that there is one God. You do well. Even the demons believe--and*  
11 *tremble! But do you want to know, O foolish man, that faith without works is dead? Was not Abraham our father*  
12 *justified by works when he offered Isaac his son on the altar? **Do you see that faith was working together with***  
13 ***his works, and by works faith was made perfect?** And the Scripture was fulfilled which says, "Abraham believed*  
14 *God, and it was accounted to him for righteousness." And he was called the friend of God. **You see then that a***  
15 ***man is justified by works, and not by faith only.***

16 *Likewise, was not Rahab the harlot also justified by works when she received the messengers and sent them out*  
17 *another way?*

18 *For as the body without the spirit is dead, so faith without works is dead also.*  
19 [[James 2:14-26](#), Bible, NKJV]

20 Faith in God does not allow us to *avoid* the final judgment, but our works provide *evidence* of our faith and obedience at that  
21 judgment. The final judgment is like a court trial. With no admissible evidence of our faith at this trial, we will be convicted  
22 of our sin and suffer God's wrath.

23 *"Then I saw a great throne and Him who sat on it, from whose face the earth and the heaven fled away. And*  
24 *there was found no place for them.*

25 *"And I saw the dead, small and great, standing before God, and books were opened. And another book was*  
26 *opened, which is the Book of Life. And the dead were judged according to their works, by the things which were*  
27 *written in the books.*

28 *"The sea gave up the dead who were in it, and Death and Hades delivered up the dead who were in them. And*  
29 *they were judged, each one according to his works.*

30 *"Then Death and Hades were cast into the lake of fire. This is the second death.*

31 *"And anyone not found written in the Book of Life was cast into the lake of fire."  
32 [[Revelation 20:11-15](#), Bible, NKJV]*

33 The purpose of God's law is to teach us how to love God and our neighbor (see the Ten Commandments in Exodus 20). The  
34 Bible says that obedience to God's laws even after we profess faith is *still* mandatory:

35 *"Not everyone who says to Me, 'Lord Lord,' shall enter the kingdom of heaven, but he who does the will of My*  
36 *Father in heaven."  
37 [[Matt. 7:21](#), Bible, NKJV]*

38 *"But **whoever keeps His word, truly the love of God is perfected in him.** By this we know that we are in Him."  
39 [[1 John 2:5](#), Bible, NKJV]*

40 *"**For this is the love of God, that we keep His commandments.** And His commandments are not burdensome."  
41 [[1 John 5:3](#), Bible, NKJV]*

42 *"Therefore, to him who knows to do good and **does not DO it**, to him it is sin."  
43 [[James 4:17](#), Bible, NKJV]*

1 *"Blessed are those who **do** His commandments, that they may have the right to the tree of life, and may*  
2 *enter through the gates into the city."*  
3 *[Rev. 22:14; Bible, NKJV]*

4 *"But **he who looks into the perfect law of liberty** and continues in it, and is not a forgetful hearer **but a***  
5 ***DOER of the work**, this one **will be blessed in what he does.**"*  
6 *[James 1:25, Bible, NKJV]*

7 In conclusion, the desire to avoid liability and responsibility for our actions to a higher authority leads to the following  
8 distortions of Biblical doctrine:

- 9 1. Dismissing the Bible as a history book instead of a law book. See section 6.10 earlier.
- 10 2. Downplaying the applicability of the Old Testament to modern Christianity. See section 6.10 earlier.
- 11 3. Saying we are under grace instead of law. See section 6.3 earlier.
- 12 4. Saying the New Testament repealed the Old Testament. See section 6.10 earlier.
- 13 5. Accusing those who attempt to enforce all the terms of the covenant of being legalistic or Pharisaical.
- 14 6. Saying that Jesus' kingdom is not of this world, so we don't have to enforce his morality while we are here or impose it  
15 on our fellow man while acting as a jurist or voter.
- 16 7. Saying we aren't supposed to judge those who disobey the Bible covenant, which completely destroys the ability to  
17 enforce the covenant within God's house, the Church. See section 6.6 earlier.

## 18 **8.2 Desire to do things our way instead of God's way**

19 The main sin of Lucifer was a desire to do things his way instead of God's way, and thereby to rebel against God's laws:

### 20 *The Fall of Lucifer*

21 *" How **you are fallen from heaven,***  
22 *O Lucifer, son of the morning!*  
23 *How you are cut down to the ground,*  
24 *You who weakened the nations!*  
25 ***For you have said in your heart:***

26 ***' I will ascend into heaven,***  
27 ***I will exalt my throne above the stars of God;***  
28 ***I will also sit on the mount of the congregation***  
29 ***On the farthest sides of the north;***  
30 ***I will ascend above the heights of the clouds,***  
31 ***I will be like the Most High.'***  
32 *Yet you shall be brought down to Sheol,*  
33 *To the lowest depths of the Pit.*  
34 *" Those who see you will gaze at you,*  
35 *And consider you, saying:*

36 *' Is this the man who made the earth tremble,*  
37 *Who shook kingdoms,*  
38 *Who made the world as a wilderness*  
39 *And destroyed its cities,*  
40 *Who did not open the house of his prisoners?'*  
41 *" All the kings of the nations,*  
42 *All of them, sleep in glory,*  
43 *Everyone in his own house;*  
44 *But you are cast out of your grave*  
45 *Like an abominable branch,*  
46 *Like the garment of those who are slain,*  
47 *Thrust through with a sword,*  
48 *Who go down to the stones of the pit,*  
49 *Like a corpse trodden underfoot.*  
50 *You will not be joined with them in burial,*  
51 *Because you have destroyed your land*  
52 *And slain your people.*  
53 *The brood of evildoers shall never be named.*



1 Prepare slaughter for his children  
2 Because of the iniquity of their fathers,  
3 Lest they rise up and possess the land,  
4 And fill the face of the world with cities.”  
5 [Isaiah 14:12-21, Bible, NKJV]

6 The result of Lucifer’s rebellion was being cast out of Heaven. Likewise, the sin of rebellion on the part of Adam and Eve  
7 was to be cast out of fellowship with God in the Garden of Eden:

8 Then the LORD God said, “Behold, the man has become like one of Us, to know good and evil. And now, lest he  
9 put out his hand and take also of the tree of life, and eat, and live forever”— therefore the LORD God sent him  
10 out of the garden of Eden to till the ground from which he was taken. So He drove out the man; and He placed  
11 cherubim at the east of the garden of Eden, and a flaming sword which turned every way, to guard the way to  
12 the tree of life.  
13 [Gen. 3:22, Bible, NKJV]

14 Ironically, after Eve rebelled by eating the fruit, her first act was to deny responsibility and blame the Serpent (Satan), a  
15 subject we covered in the previous section. By doing so, she was trying to claim the benefits of the “insurance” (assurance)  
16 offered by the Serpent.

17 And the LORD God said to the woman, “What is this you have done?”  
18 The woman said, “The serpent deceived me, and I ate.”  
19 [Gen. 3:13, Bible, NKJV]

20 Consequently, any violation of God’s law leads to separation from God. The word “sin” in Spanish, in fact, means “without”,  
21 and the thing that the “sinner” is without is God or the authority of God. The Bible, in fact, is a delegation of authority order  
22 directly from himself to mankind. We extensively prove this in the following document:

[Delegation of Authority Order from God to Christians](http://sedm.org/Forms/FormIndex.htm), Form #13.007  
<http://sedm.org/Forms/FormIndex.htm>

23 When we violate God’s delegation of authority order, the Bible we:

- 24 1. Are acting without God’s delegated authority under the covenant.
- 25 2. Are violating the covenant.
- 26 3. Are no longer eligible to receive the “consideration” under the terms of the covenant or contract. The consideration must  
27 therefore be removed.
- 28 4. Must therefore be separated from fellowship with God. This is exactly the same thing that the criminal laws within civil  
29 governments do. Those who violate them are separated from the rest of society, which is the “state”.

30 When carried to its extreme, the desire to do what one wants in exclusion of God and God’s holy law leads to the establishment  
31 of a religion which worships self and defines morality according to one’s own will and desire instead of a force external to  
32 self. An example is the Thelema religion, within which is included Satanism:

### 33 Thelema

34 *Thelema is a philosophy of life based on the rule or law, “Do what thou wilt.” The ideal of “Do what thou wilt”*  
35 *and its association with the word Thelema goes back to [François Rabelais](#), but was more fully developed<sup>[1]</sup> and*  
36 *proselytized<sup>[2]</sup> by [Aleister Crowley](#), who founded a religion<sup>[3]</sup> named **Thelema** based on this ideal. The word itself*  
37 *is the English transliteration of the [Koine Greek](#) noun θέλημα: “will”, from the verb θέλω: to will, wish, purpose.*  
38 *Early Christian writings use the word to refer to the will of God,<sup>[4]</sup> the human will,<sup>[5]</sup> and even the will of God’s*  
39 *opponent, the [Devil](#).<sup>[6]</sup>*

40 *In the 16th century, [François Rabelais](#) used Thélème, the French form of the word, as the name of a fictional*  
41 *Abbey in his famous books, [Gargantua and Pantagruel](#).<sup>[7][8]</sup> The only rule of this Abbey was “fay çe que voudras”*  
42 *(“Fais ce que tu voudras,” or, “Do what thou wilt” or “do that which you want” (literally) ). This rule was*  
43 *revived and used in the [real world](#) in the mid 18th century by [Sir Francis Dashwood](#), who inscribed it on a*  
44 *doorway of his abbey at [Medmenham](#),<sup>[9][10][11][12]</sup> where it served as the motto of [The Hellfire Club](#).<sup>[9]</sup>*

45 *The same rule was used in 1904 by [Aleister Crowley](#)<sup>[12][13][14]</sup> in [The Book of the Law](#). This book contains both*  
46 *the phrase “Do what thou wilt” and the word Thelema in Greek, which Crowley took for the name of the*  
47 *philosophical, mystical and religious system which he subsequently developed. This system includes ideas from*  
48 *[occultism](#), [Yoga](#), and both Eastern and Western [mysticism](#) (especially the [Qabalah](#)).<sup>[15]</sup>*

[. . .]

## **Ethics**

Thelema is an individual philosophy and **does not have a concept of ethics in the usual sense.**<sup>[71]</sup> Crowley wrote in the "New Comment" to Liber AL vel Legis (II,28) that:

**There are no "standards of Right". Ethics is balderdash. Each Star must go on its own orbit. To hell with "moral principle"; there is no such thing.**<sup>[72]</sup>

**Liber AL vel Legis does make clear some standards of individual conduct. The most primary of these is "Do what thou wilt" which is presented as the whole of the law, with no further law beyond it. It is also presented as a right—the only right—and an indefeasible one.**<sup>[71]</sup> Some interpreters of Thelema suppose that this right includes an obligation to allow others to do their own wills without interference, but such a concept is absent from Liber AL.<sup>[71]</sup>

Crowley wrote several additional documents presenting his personal views on individual conduct in light of the Law of Thelema, some of which do address the topic interference with others: Liber Oz, Duty, and Liber II.

[SOURCE: Wikipedia Encyclopedia, 1/5/2009, <http://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Thelema>]

An example of a satanic form of government that rejects and rebels against God's laws is a socialist democracy, in which the "collective" is the pagan god which is the object of worship and obedience. The "collective", in such a form of government, is called the "state". Below is a legal definition of "state":

**"State. A people permanently occupying a fixed territory bound together by common-law habits and custom into one body politic exercising, through the medium of an organized government, independent sovereignty and control over all persons and things within its boundaries, capable of making war and peace and of entering into international relations with other communities of the globe. United States v. Kusche, D.C.Cal., 56 F.Supp. 201 207, 208. The organization of social life which exercises sovereign power in behalf of the people. Delany v. Moralitis, C.C.A.Md., 136 F.2d. 129, 130. In its largest sense, a "state" is a body politic or a society of men. Beagle v. Motor Vehicle Acc. Indemnification Corp., 44 Misc.2d. 636, 254 N.Y.S.2d. 763, 765. A body of people occupying a definite territory and politically organized under one government. State ex re. Maisano v. Mitchell, 155 Conn. 256, 231 A.2d. 539, 542. A territorial unit with a distinct general body of law. Restatement, Second, Conflicts, §3. Term may refer either to body politic of a nation (e.g. United States) or to an individual government unit of such nation (e.g. California)." [Black's Law Dictionary, Sixth Edition, p. 1407]**

From the above, we see that:

1. The "collective" forms the "state".
2. The "state" is the only sovereign within any civil society.
3. There is no individual sovereignty.
4. Whatever the majority within the democracy votes becomes "law", even if it conflicts with god's law.

The relativistic laws of the state reflect the collective "will" of the state. Governments are established to execute the will of the state expressed through the laws of the state. Obedience to the laws of the state constitutes the "worship" of the state, because the essence of worship is obedience. According to the Bible, "worship" implies OBEDIENCE to God's laws which are codified in the Holy Bible:

**"Not everyone who says to Me, 'Lord, Lord,' shall enter the kingdom of heaven, but he who does the will of My Father in heaven." [Jesus in [Matt. 7:21](#), Bible, NKJV]**

**"But why do you call Me 'Lord, Lord,' and not do the things which I say?" [Luke 6:46, Bible, NKJV]**

**"He who has [understands and learns] My commandments [laws in the Bible] and keeps them, it is he who loves Me. And he who loves Me will be loved by My Father, and I will love him and manifest Myself to him." [John 14:21, Bible, NKJV]**

**"And we have known and believed the love that God has for us. God is love, and he who abides in love [obedience to God's Laws] abides in [and is a FIDUCIARY of] God, and God in him." [1 John 4:16, Bible, NKJV]**

1 "Now by this we know that we know Him [God], if we **keep** His commandments. He who says, "I know Him," and  
2 does not **keep** His commandments, is a liar, and the truth is not in him. But whoever keeps His word, truly the  
3 love of God is perfected in him. By this we know that we are in Him [His fiduciaries]. He who says he abides in  
4 Him [as a fiduciary] ought himself also to walk just as He [Jesus] walked."  
5 [[1 John 2:3-6](#), Bible, NKJV]

6 Black's Law Dictionary defines "worship" as follows:

7 **Worship.** Any form of religious service showing reverence for Divine Being, or exhortation to obedience to or  
8 following the mandates of such Being. Religious exercises participated in by a number of persons assembled for  
9 that purpose, the disturbance of which is a statutory offense in many states.

10 English law. A title of honor or dignity used in addresses to certain magistrates and other persons of rank or  
11 office.

12 Public worship. This term may mean the worship of God, conducted and observed under public authority; or it  
13 may mean worship in an open or public place, without privacy or concealment; or it may mean the performance  
14 of religious exercises, under a provision for an equal right in the whole public to participate in its benefits; or it  
15 may be used in contradistinction to worship in the family or the closet. In this country, what is called "public  
16 worship" is commonly conducted by voluntary societies, constituted according to their own notions of  
17 ecclesiastical authority and ritual propriety, opening their places of worship, and admitting to their religious  
18 serves such persons, and upon such terms, and subject to such regulations, as they may choose to designate and  
19 establish. A church absolutely belonging to the public, and in which all persons without restriction have equal  
20 rights, such as the public enjoy in highways or public landings, is certainly a very rare institution.  
21 [[Black's Law Dictionary, Sixth Edition, pp. 1606-1607](#)]

22 Webster's Ninth New Collegiate Dictionary provides a secular definition of "worship" as follows:

23 "**worship** 1. chiefly Brit: a person of importance—used as a title for various officials (as magistrates and some  
24 mayors) 2: **reverence offered a divine being or supernatural power**; also: an act of expressing such reverence  
25 3: a form of religious practice with its creed and ritual 4: extravagant respect or admiration for or devotion to  
26 an object of esteem <~ the dollar>."  
27 [[Webster's Ninth New Collegiate Dictionary, 1983, ISBN 0-87779-510-X, p. 1361](#)]

28 The term "supernatural power" simply implies that the superior being that is the object of "worship" possesses or is imputed  
29 to have powers which:

- 30 1. Do not exist in human beings in their natural state.
- 31 2. Are either not possessed by the worshipper or are criminal or illegal for the worshipper to possess.
- 32 3. Are not or cannot be delegated by those performing the worship to the object of the worship. Instead, the powers originate  
33 from some other usually undisclosed source.

34 What worship therefore universally implies in a legal, secular, and Christian perspective is obedience to the laws of one's  
35 sovereign, which is a "supernatural being". This is also confirmed by the following maxim of law:

36 "*Obedientia est legis essentia.*  
37 *Obedience is the essence of the law. 11 Co. 100.*"  
38 [[Bouvier's Maxims of Law, 1856](#);  
39 SOURCE: <http://famguardian.org/Publications/BouvierMaximsOfLaw/BouviersMaxims.htm>]

40 The only difference between man's law and God's law is the sovereign to whom obedience and allegiance and therefore  
41 "worship" is owed. In the context of human government, obedience is owed to one of the following:

- 42 1. To the whims and dictates of a capricious ruler, in the case of a society of men where there is no written law.
- 43 2. To the written law, in the case of a society of law such as we have here in America.

44 "***The government of the United States has been emphatically termed a government of laws, and not of men. It***  
45 ***will certainly cease to deserve this high appellation, if the laws furnish no remedy for the violation of a vested***  
46 ***legal right.***"  
47 [[Marbury v. Madison, 5 U.S. 137, 1 Cranch 137, 2 L.Ed. 60 \(1803\)](#)]

48 In the context of Christianity, obedience and therefore "worship" is owed exclusively to God and not any man, creation of  
49 men, or collection of men called a "government":

1 "Away with you, Satan! For it is written, 'You shall worship the Lord your God, and Him ONLY [NOT the  
2 government] you shall serve."  
3 [Jesus in [Matt. 4:10](#), Bible, NKJV]

4 Christians ensure that their worship, obedience, and allegiance is to God alone by ensuring that they:

- 5 1. Do not take any oaths that would cause them to have conflicting allegiance or duties associated with that allegiance.  
6 Matt. 5:33-37 forbids the taking of oaths, including perjury oaths, of all kind.
- 7 2. Refuse to participate in any government franchises, licenses, or privileges, that would destroy or undermine any of the  
8 rights that God delegated to them in His delegation of authority order, the Holy Bible. See:

[Government Instituted Slavery Using Franchises](#), Form #05.030  
<http://sedm.org/Forms/FormIndex.htm>

- 9 3. Notify that government frequently and officially that they do not have a legal domicile anywhere within their jurisdiction.  
10 This ensures that they maintain their legal status as "strangers" and "transient foreigners" within the society they  
11 temporarily occupy and are free from the entanglements of civil law, taxation, or political franchises such as voting and  
12 jury service. See the following for details:

[Why Domicile and Becoming a "Taxpayer" Require Your Consent](#), Form #05.002  
<http://sedm.org/Forms/FormIndex.htm>

13 Law therefore is in every culture religious in origin. Because law governs man and society, because it establishes and declares  
14 the meaning of justice and righteousness, law is inescapably religious, in that it establishes in practical fashion the ultimate  
15 concerns of a culture. The definition of religion in Black's Law Dictionary, in fact, establishes that it is the foundation of the  
16 government of all things:

17 "**Religion.** Man's relation to Divinity, to reverence, **worship**, obedience, and **submission to mandates and**  
18 **precepts of supernatural or superior beings.** In its broadest sense includes all forms of **belief in the existence of**  
19 **superior beings exercising power over human beings by volition, imposing rules of conduct, with future**  
20 **rewards and punishments. Bond uniting man to God, and a virtue whose purpose is to render God worship**  
21 **due him as source of all being and principle of all government of things.** *Nikulnikoff v. Archbishop, etc., of*  
22 *Russian Orthodox Greek Catholic Church, 142 Misc. 894, 255 N.Y.S. 653, 663."*  
23 [*Black's Law Dictionary, Sixth Edition, p. 1292*]

24 The essential characteristics of religion according to the above therefore include:

- 25 1. "Belief" in the existence of a specific "superior being". This "belief" is what those engaged in a religion call "faith",  
26 and it consists of an opinion that either is not supported by evidence or cannot be supported by evidence.
- 27 2. Worship, obedience, and submission to the mandates and precepts of a specific supernatural or superior being.

28 "**worship** **1.** chiefly Brit: a person of importance—used as a title for various officials (as magistrates and some  
29 mayors) **2:** reverence offered a divine being or supernatural power; also: an act of expressing such reverence  
30 **3:** a form of religious practice with its creed and ritual **4:** extravagant respect or admiration for or devotion to  
31 an object of esteem <~ the dollar>."  
32 [*Webster's Ninth New Collegiate Dictionary, 1983, ISBN 0-87779-510-X, p. 1361*]

- 33 3. Rules of conduct with future rewards and punishments. For instance, the Bible contains a system of biblical laws which  
34 regulate the conduct of all believers. See:

[Laws of the Bible](#), Form #13.001  
<http://sedm.org/Forms/FormIndex.htm>

- 35 4. The superior being is the source of all being and principle of all government of things.
- 36 5. Supreme allegiance to the will of superior beings:

37 *Much has been said of the paramount duty to the state, a duty to be recognized, it is urged, even though it conflicts*  
38 *with convictions of duty to God. Undoubtedly that duty to the state exists within the domain of power, for*  
39 *government may enforce obedience to laws regardless of scruples. When one's belief collides with the power of*  
40 *the state, the latter is supreme within its sphere and submission or punishment follows. **But, in the forum of***  
41 ***conscience, duty to a moral power higher than the state has always been maintained.** The reservation of that*  
42 *supreme obligation, as a matter of principle, would unquestionably be made by many of our conscientious and*  
43 *law-abiding citizens. **The essence of religion is belief in a relation to God involving duties superior to those***  
44 ***[283 U.S. 605, 634] arising from any human relation. As was stated by Mr. Justice Field, in Davis v. Beason,***  
45 ***133 U.S. 333, 342 , 10 S.Ct. 299, 300: 'The term 'religion' has reference to one's views of his relations to his***  
46 ***Creator, and to the obligations they impose of reverence for his being and character, and of obedience to his***  
47 ***will.'** One cannot speak of religious liberty, with proper appreciation of its essential and historic significance,*

1 without assuming the existence of a belief in supreme allegiance to the will of God. Professor Macintosh, when  
2 pressed by the inquiries put to him, stated what is axiomatic in religious doctrine. And, putting aside dogmas with  
3 their particular conceptions of deity, freedom of conscience itself implies respect for an innate conviction of  
4 paramount duty. The battle for religious liberty has been fought and won with respect to religious beliefs and  
5 practices, which are not in conflict with good order, upon the very ground of the supremacy of conscience within  
6 its proper field. What that field is, under our system of government, presents in part a question of constitutional  
7 law, and also, in part, one of legislative policy in avoiding unnecessary clashes with the dictates of conscience.  
8 There is abundant room for enforcing the requisite authority of law as it is enacted and requires obedience, and  
9 for maintaining the conception of the supremacy of law as essential to orderly government, without demanding  
10 that either citizens or applicants for citizenship shall assume by oath an obligation to regard allegiance to God  
11 as subordinate to allegiance to civil power. The attempt to exact such a promise, and thus to bind one's conscience  
12 by the taking of oaths or the submission to tests, has been the cause of many deplorable conflicts. The Congress  
13 has sought to avoid such conflicts in this country by respecting our happy tradition. In no sphere of legislation  
14 has the intention to prevent such clashes been more conspicuous than in relation to the bearing of arms. It would  
15 require strong evidence [283 U.S. 605, 635] that the Congress intended a reversal of its policy in prescribing  
16 the general terms of the naturalization oath. I find no such evidence.  
17 [*U.S. v. Macintosh*, 283 U.S. 605 (1931)]

18 The term “superior being” implies inequality between the worshipper and the object of worship. In that sense, no man, ruler,  
19 or creation of men called a “government” can be a “superior being”, because our Declaration of Independence declares that  
20 all men are created equal and therefore can never become unequal without violating the legislative intent of the Constitution  
21 and the principles of natural law or natural justice.

22 All religions are based upon “faith”, which is simply a belief that either is not or cannot be supported by evidence.

23 “Now faith is the substance of things hoped for, the evidence of things not seen.”  
24 [*Heb. 11:1, Bible, NKJV*]

25  
26 “Faith. Confidence; credit; reliance. Thus, an act may be said to be done ‘on the faith’ of certain  
27 representations.

28 “Belief; credence; trust. Thus, the Constitution provides that ‘full faith and credit’ shall be given to the  
29 judgments of each state in the courts of the others.

30 Purpose; intent; sincerity; state of knowledge or design. This is the meaning of the word in the phrase “good  
31 faith” and “bad faith”. See Good faith.”  
32 [*Black’s Law Dictionary, Sixth Edition, p. 599*]

33 We can further distill down the elements of religion and religious practice to the following essential attributes that can be  
34 quantified and verified in a court of law:

- 35 1. Any belief which cannot be supported by admissible evidence. In a legal context, “presumption” that is not based on  
36 evidence serves the equivalent of such a belief.
- 37 2. The result of the belief or presumption elevates a specific being, whether alive or supernatural, to a superior status or  
38 position relative to all others and makes this being the object of either worship or obedience.
  - 39 2.1. The superior status of the superior being violates the requirement for equal protection of all that is the foundation  
40 of the United States Constitution.
  - 41 2.2. The superior status of the superior being confers rights or privileges upon the superior being which are in conflict  
42 with the requirements of a government of finite, delegated, enumerated powers that originate from we the people.
- 43 3. Supreme allegiance and worship are directed at the superior being. In the legal field, this worship translates into  
44 “obedience” to the dictates of the superior being, as we will show in the next section.
- 45 4. Worship services are conducted in which sacrifices are made to the superior being at an “altar”.
- 46 5. Rules of conduct are enumerated in a book or system of laws or rules. In the legal field, this requirement is satisfied by  
47 the text of a government franchise agreement which is private law or special law that only pertains to those who profess  
48 “faith” or consent to abide by the rules of the religion. These people are called by various names such as “taxpayers”,  
49 “franchisees”, “public officers”, etc. in courts of justice. In traditional churches, their names are “parishioners” or  
50 “church members”.

51 Accordingly, a fundamental and necessary premise in any and every study of law must be, *first*, a recognition of this religious  
52 nature of law.

1 It must also be recognized that in any culture the source of law is the god of that society. If law has its source in man's reason,  
2 then reason is the god of that society. If the source is an oligarchy, or in a court, senate, or ruler, then that source is the god  
3 of that system. Thus, in Greek culture law was essentially a religiously humanistic concept,

4 *In contrast to every law derived from revelation, nomos for the Greeks originated in the mind (nous). So the*  
5 *genuine nomos is no mere obligatory law, but something in which an entity valid in itself is discovered and*  
6 *appropriated...It is "the order which exists (from time immemorial), is valid and is put into operation."<sup>78</sup>*

7 Because for the Greeks mind was one being with the ultimate order of things, man's mind was thus able to discover ultimate  
8 law (*nomos*) out of its own resources, by penetrating through the maze of accident and matter to the fundamental ideas of  
9 being. As a result, Greek culture became both humanistic, because man's mind was one with ultimacy, and also neoplatonic,  
10 ascetic, and hostile to the world of matter, because *mind*, to be truly itself, had to separate itself from non-mind.

11 **Modern humanism, the religion of the state, locates law in the state and thus makes the state, or the people as they**  
12 **find expression in the state, the god of the system.** As Mao Tse-Tung has said, "Our God is none other than the masses of  
13 the Chinese people."<sup>79</sup> In Western culture, law has steadily moved away from God to the people (or the state) as its source,  
14 although the historic power and vitality of the West has been in Biblical faith and law.

15 **In any society, any change of law is an explicit or implicit change of religion. Nothing more clearly reveals, in fact, the**  
16 **religious change in a society than a legal revolution. When the legal foundations shift from Biblical law to humanism,**  
17 **it means that the society now draws its vitality and power from humanism, not from Christian theism.**

18 No disestablishment of religion as such is possible in any society. A church can be disestablished, and a particular religion  
19 can be supplanted by another, but the change is simply to another religion. Since the foundations of law are inescapably  
20 religious, no society exists without a religious foundation or without a law system which codifies the morality of its religion.

21 **Finally, there can be no tolerance in a law-system for another religion. Toleration is a device used to introduce a new**  
22 **law-system as a prelude to a new intolerance. Legal positivism, a humanistic faith, has been savage in its hostility to**  
23 **the Biblical law-system and has claimed to be an "open" system. But Cohen, by no means a Christian, has aptly**  
24 **described the logical positivists as "nihilists" and their faith as "nihilistic absolutism."<sup>80</sup> Every law-system must**  
25 **maintain its existence by hostility to every other law-system and to alien religious foundations or else it commits**  
26 **suicide.**

27 In analyzing now the nature of Biblical law, it is important to note *first* that, for the Bible, law is revelation. The Hebrew  
28 word for law is *torah* which means instruction, authoritative direction.<sup>81</sup> The Biblical concept of law is broader than the legal  
29 codes of the Mosaic formulation. It applies to the divine word and instruction in its totality:

30 *...the earlier prophets also use torah for the divine word proclaimed through them (Is. viii. 16, cf. also v. 20; Isa.*  
31 *xxx. 9 f.; perhaps also Isa. i. 10). Besides this, certain passages in the earlier prophets use the word torah also*  
32 *for the commandment of Yahweh which was written down: thus Hos. viii. 12. Moreover there are clearly examples*  
33 *not only of ritual matters, but also of ethics.*

34 *Hence it follows that at any rate in this period torah had the meaning of a divine instruction, whether it had been*  
35 *written down long ago as a law and was preserved and pronounced by a priest, or whether the priest was*  
36 *delivering it at that time (Lam. ii. 9; Ezek. vii. 26; Mal. ii. 4 ff.), or the prophet is commissioned by God to*  
37 *pronounce it for a definite situation (so perhaps Isa. xxx. 9).*

38 *Thus what is objectively essential in torah is not the form but the divine authority.<sup>82</sup>*

39 The law is the revelation of God and His righteousness. There is no ground in Scripture for despising the law. Neither can  
40 the *law* be relegated to the Old Testament and *grace* to the New:

<sup>78</sup> Hermann Kleinknecht and W. Gutbrod, *Law* (London: Adam and Charles Black, 1962), p. 21

<sup>79</sup> Mao Tse-Tung, *The foolish Old Man Who Removed Mountains* (Peking: Foreign Languages Press, 1966), p. 3.

<sup>80</sup> Morris Raphael Cohen, *Reason and Law* (New York: Collier Books, 1961), p. 84 f.

<sup>81</sup> Ernest F. Kevan, *The Moral Law* (Jenkintown, Penna.: Sovereign Grace Publishers, 1963) p. 5 f. S.R. Driver, "Law (In Old Testament)," in James Hastings, ed., *A Dictionary of the Bible*, vol. III (New York: Charles Scribner's Sons, 1919), p. 64.

<sup>82</sup> Kleinknecht and Gutbrod, *Law*, p. 44

1                    *The time-honored distinction between the OT as a book of law and the NT as a book of divine grace is without*  
2 *grounds or justification. Divine grace and mercy are the presupposition of law in the OT; and the grace and love*  
3 *of God displayed in the NT events issue in the legal obligations of the New Covenant. Furthermore, the OT*  
4 *contains evidence of a long history of legal developments which must be assessed before the place of law is*  
5 *adequately understood. Paul's polemics against the law in Galatians and Romans are directed against an*  
6 *understanding of law which is by no means characteristic of the OT as a whole.*<sup>83</sup>

7 There is no contradiction between law and grace. The question in James' Epistle is faith and works, not faith and law.<sup>84</sup>  
8 Judaism had made law the mediator between God and man, and between God and the world. It was this view of law, not the  
9 law itself, which Jesus attacked. As Himself the Mediator, Jesus rejected the law as mediator in order to re-establish the law  
10 in its God-appointed role as law, the way of holiness. He established the law by dispensing forgiveness as the lawgiver in full  
11 support of the law as the convicting word which makes men sinners.<sup>85</sup> The law was rejected only as mediator and as the  
12 source of justification.<sup>86</sup> Jesus fully recognized the law, and obeyed the law. It was only the absurd interpretations of the law  
13 He rejected. Moreover,

14                    *We are not entitled to gather from the teaching of Jesus in the Gospels that He made any formal distinction*  
15 *between the Law of Moses and the Law of God. His mission being not to destroy but to fulfil the Law and the*  
16 *Prophets (Mt. 5:17), so far from saying anything in disparagement of the Law of Moses or from encouraging His*  
17 *disciples to assume an attitude of independence with regard to it, He expressly recognized the authority of the*  
18 *Law of Moses as such, and of the Pharisees as its official interpreters. (Mt. 23:1-3).*<sup>87</sup>

19 With the completion of Christ's work, the role of the Pharisees as interpreters ended, but not the authority of the Law. In the  
20 New Testament era, only apostolically received revelation was ground for any alteration in the law. The authority of the law  
21 remained unchanged.

22                    *St. Peter, e.g. required a special revelation before he would enter the house of the uncircumcised Cornelius and*  
23 *admit the first Gentile convert into the Church by baptism (acts 10:1-48) --a step which did not fail to arouse*  
24 *opposition on the part of those who "were of the circumcision" (cf. 11:1-18).*<sup>88</sup>

25 The second characteristic of Biblical law is that it is a treaty or covenant. Kline has shown that the form of the giving of the  
26 law, the language of the text, the historical prologue, the requirement of imprecations and benedictions, and much more, all  
27 point to the fact that the law is a treaty established by God with His people. Indeed, "the revelation committed to the two  
28 tables was rather a suzerainty treaty or covenant than a legal code."<sup>89</sup> The full covenant summary, the Ten Commandments,  
29 was inscribed on each of the two tables of stone, one table or copy of the treaty for each party in the treaty, God and Israel.<sup>90</sup>

30                    *The two stone tables are not, therefore, to be likened to a stele containing one of the half-dozen or so known legal*  
31 *codes earlier than or roughly contemporary with Moses as though God had engraved on these tables a corpus of*  
32 *law. The revelation they contain is nothing less than an epitome of the covenant granted by Yahweh, the sovereign*  
33 *Lord of heaven and earth, to his elect and redeemed servant, Israel.*

34                    *Not law, but covenant. That must be affirmed when we are seeking a category comprehensive enough to do justice*  
35 *to this revelation in its totality. At the same time, the prominence of the stipulations, reflect in the fact that "the*  
36 *ten words" are the element used as pars pro toto, signifies the centrality of law in this type of covenant. There is*  
37 *probably no clearer direction afforded the biblical theologian for defining with biblical emphasis the type of*  
38 *covenant God adopted to formalize his relationship to his people than that given in the covenant he gave Israel*  
39 *to perform, even "the ten commandments." Such a covenant is a declaration of God's lordship, consecrating a*  
40 *people to himself in a sovereignly dictated order of life.*<sup>91</sup>

<sup>83</sup> W.J. Harrelson, "Law in the OT," in *The Interpreter's Dictionary of the Bible*, (New York: Abingdon Press, 1962), III, 77.

<sup>84</sup> Kleinknecht and Gutbrod, *Law*, p. 125.

<sup>85</sup> *Ibid.*, pp. 74, 81-91.

<sup>86</sup> *Ibid.*, p. 95.

<sup>87</sup> Hugh H. Currie, "Law of God," in James Hastings, ed., *A Dictionary of Christ and the Gospels* (New York: Charles Scribner's Sons, 1919), I, 685.

<sup>88</sup> Olaf Moe, "Law," in James Hastings, ed., *Dictionary of the Apostolic Church* (New York: Charles Scribner's Sons, 1919), I, 685.

<sup>89</sup> Meredith G. Line, *Treaty of the Great King, The Covenant Structure of Deuteronomy: Studies and Commentary* (Grand Rapids: William B. Eerdmans, 1963), p. 16. See also J.A. Thompson: *The Ancient Near Eastern Treaties and the Old Testament* (London: The Tyndale Press, 1964).

<sup>90</sup> Kline, *op. cit.*, p. 19.

<sup>91</sup> *Ibid.*, p. 17.

1 This latter phrase needs re-emphasis: the covenant is "a sovereignly dictated order of life." God as the sovereign Lord and  
2 Creator gives His law to man as an act of sovereign grace. It is an act of election, of electing grace (Deut. 7:7 f.; 8:17; 9:4-6,  
3 etc.).

4 *The God to whom the earth belongs will have Israel for His own property, Ex. xix. 5. It is only on the ground of*  
5 *the gracious election and guidance of God that the divine commands to the people are given, and therefore the*  
6 *Decalogue, Ex. xx. 2, places at its forefront the fact of election.<sup>92</sup>*

7 In the law, the total life of man is ordered: "there is no primary distinction between the inner and the outer life; the holy  
8 calling of the people must be realized in both."<sup>93</sup>

9 The third characteristic of the Biblical law or covenant is that it constitutes a plan for dominion under God. God called Adam  
10 to exercise dominion in terms of God's revelation, God's law (Gen. 1:26 ff.; 2:15-17). This same calling, after the fall, was  
11 required of the godly line, and in Noah it was formally renewed (Gen. 9:1-17). It was again renewed with Abraham, with  
12 Jacob, with Israel in the person of Moses, with Joshua, David, Solomon (whose Proverbs echo the law), with Hezekiah and  
13 Josiah, and finally with Jesus Christ. The sacrament of the Lord's Supper is the renewal of the covenant: "this is my blood of  
14 the new testament" (or covenant), so that the sacrament itself re-establishes the law, this time with a new elect group (Matt.  
15 26:28; Mark 14:24; Luke 22:20; 1 Cor. 11:25). The people of the law are now the people of Christ, the believers redeemed  
16 by His atoning blood and called by His sovereign election. Kline, in analyzing Hebrews 9:16, 17, in relation to the covenant  
17 administration, observes:

18 *...the picture suggested would be that of Christ's children (cf. 2:13) inheriting his universal dominion as their*  
19 *eternal portion (note 9:15b; cf. also 1:14; 2:5 ff.; 6:17; 11:7 ff.). And such is the wonder of the messianic*  
20 *Mediator-Testator that the royal inheritance of his sons, which becomes of force only through his death, is*  
21 *nevertheless one of co-regency with the living Testator! For (to follow the typographical direction provided by*  
22 *Heb. 9:16,17 according to the present interpretation) Jesus is both dying Moses and succeeding Joshua. Not*  
23 *merely after a figure but in truth a royal Mediator redivivus, he secures the divine dynasty by succeeding himself*  
24 *in resurrection power and ascension glory.<sup>94</sup>*

25 The purpose of God in requiring Adam to exercise dominion over the earth remains His continuing covenant word: man,  
26 created in God's image and commanded to subdue the earth and exercise dominion over it in God's name, is recalled to this  
27 task and privilege by his redemption and regeneration.

28 The law is therefore the law for Christian man and Christian society. Nothing is more deadly or more derelict than the notion  
29 that the Christian is at liberty with respect to the kind of law he can have. Calvin whose classical humanism gained ascendancy  
30 at this point, said of the laws of states, of civil governments:

31 *I will briefly remark, however, by the way, what laws it (the state) may piously use before God, and be rightly*  
32 *governed by among men. And even this I would have preferred passing over in silence, if I did not know that it*  
33 *is a point on which many persons run into dangerous errors. For some deny that a state is well constituted, which*  
34 *neglects the polity of Moses, and is governed by the common laws of nations. The dangerous and seditious nature*  
35 *of this opinion I leave to the examination of others; it will be sufficient for me to have evinced it to be false and*  
36 *foolish.<sup>95</sup>*

37 Such ideas, common in Calvinist and Lutheran circles, and in virtually all churches, are still heretical nonsense.<sup>96</sup> Calvin  
38 favored "the common law of nations." But the common law of nations in his day was Biblical law, although extensively  
39 denatured by Roman law. And this "common law of nations" was increasingly evidencing a new religion, humanism. Calvin  
40 wanted the establishment of the Christian religion; he could not have it, nor could it last long in Geneva, without Biblical  
41 law.

42 Two Reformed scholars, in writing of the state, declare,

---

<sup>92</sup> Gustave Friedrich Oehler, *Theology of the Old Testament* (Grand Rapids: Zondervan, 1883), p. 177.

<sup>93</sup> *Ibid.*, p. 182.

<sup>94</sup> Kline, *Treaty of the Great King*, p. 41.

<sup>95</sup> John Calvin, *Institutes of the Christian Religion*, bk. IV, chap. XX, para. Xiv. In the John Allen translation (Philadelphia: Presbyterian Board of Christian Education, 1936), II, 787 f.

<sup>96</sup> See H. de Jongste and J.M. van Krimpen, *The Bible and the Life of the Christian*, for similar opinions (Philadelphia: Presbyterian and Reformed Publishing Co., 1968), p. 66 ff.



1 *"It is to be God's servant, for our welfare. It must exercise justice, and it has the power of the sword."<sup>97</sup>*

2 Yet these men follow Calvin in rejecting Biblical law for "the common law of nations." But can the state be God's servant  
3 and by-pass God's law? And if the state "must exercise justice," how is justice defined, by the nations, or by God? There are  
4 as many ideas of justice as there are religions.

5 The question then is, what law is for the state? Shall it be positive law, after calling for "justice" in the state, declare,

6 *"A static legislation valid for all times is an impossibility." Indeed!<sup>98</sup>*

7 Then what about the commandment, Biblical legislation, if you please, "Thou shalt not kill," and "Thou shalt not steal"? **Are**  
8 **they not intended to be valid for all time and in every civil order? By abandoning Biblical law, these Protestant**  
9 **theologians end up in moral and legal relativism.**

10 Roman Catholic scholars offer natural law. The origins of this concept are in Roman law and religion. For the Bible, there is  
11 no law in nature, because nature is fallen and cannot be normative. Moreover the source of law is not nature but God. There  
12 is no law in nature but a law over nature, God's law.<sup>99</sup>

13 **Neither positive law [man's law] nor natural law can reflect more than the sin and apostasy of man: revealed law [e.g.**  
14 **ONLY THE BIBLE] is the need and privilege of Christian society. It is the only means whereby man can fulfill his**  
15 **creation mandate of exercising dominion under God. Apart from revealed law [the BIBLE!], man cannot claim to be**  
16 **under God but only in rebellion against God.**

### 17 **8.3 Hedonism**

18 *"Where do wars and fights come from among you? Do they not come from your desires for pleasure [unearned*  
19 *money from the government] that war in your members [and your democratic governments]? You lust [after*  
20 *other people's money] and do not have. You murder [the unborn to increase your standard of living] and covet*  
21 *[the unearned] and cannot obtain [except by empowering your government to STEAL for you!]. You fight and*  
22 *war [against the rich and the nontaxpayers to subsidize your idleness]. Yet you do not have because you do not*  
23 *ask [the Lord, but instead ask the deceitful government]. You ask and do not receive, because you ask amiss, that*  
24 *you may spend it on your pleasures. Adulterers and adulteresses! Do you not know that friendship with the*  
25 *world [for the governments of the world] is enmity with God? Whoever therefore wants to be a friend of the*  
26 *world [for the governments of the world] makes himself an enemy of God."*  
27 *[James 4:4, Bible, NKJV]*

28 An instinct basic to all animal species is the desire to avoid as much pain as possible and to maximize pleasure and comfort.  
29 When these motivations are the only basis for our actions, we humans become little more than animals. This motivation is  
30 behind the following types of attitudes:

- 31 1. "God loves me unconditionally". See section 6.14 earlier. This allows me to pursue whatever "feels good" without any  
32 pain or consequence.
- 33 2. "We must obey all governments." See section 6.9 earlier. This attitude allows us to:
- 34 2.1. Be friends with the world.
- 35 2.2. Participate in the limited liability associated with socialism.
- 36 2.3. Avoid confrontation with those in the government who are violating our rights.
- 37 3. "Hate is not a Christian value." See section 6.7 earlier. This avoids the pain and persecution we might suffer as a result  
38 of being Christians which Jesus warned us about.

39 *"If the world hates you, you know that it hated Me before it hated you. If you were of the world, the world would*  
40 *love its own. Yet because you are not of the world, but I chose you out of the world, therefore the world hates*  
41 *you. Remember the word that I said to you, 'A servant is not greater than his master.' If they persecuted Me,*  
42 *they will also persecute you. If they kept My word, they will keep yours also. But all these things they will do*  
43 *to you for My name's sake, because they do not know Him who sent Me. If I had not come and spoken to*  
44 *them, they would have no sin, but now they have no excuse for their sin. He who hates me hated My father*

<sup>97</sup> *Ibid.*, p. 73.

<sup>98</sup> *Ibid.*, p. 75.

<sup>99</sup> The very term "nature" is mythical. See R.J. Rushdoony, "The Myth of Nature," in *The Mythology of Science* (Nutley, N.J.: The Craig Press, 1967), pp. 96-98.

1 *also. **If I had not done among them the works which no one else did, they would have no sin; but now they***  
2 ***have seen and also hated both Me and My Father.** But this happened that the word might be fulfilled which is*  
3 *written in their law. 'They hated Me without a cause.'*  
4 *[John 15:18-25, Bible]*

- 5 4. “Everything is ministry”. See section 6.13. This avoids the pain of having:  
6 4.1. To justify our stewardship under the Bible delegation of authority order.  
7 4.2. To be accountable to anyone in the church for our actions as God’s stewards and ministers.

8 When carried to its extreme, hedonism causes the pursuit of pleasure to become part of official religious ceremonies. For  
9 instance, Thelema religion, which includes Satanism, has a practice called “sex magic”, which the Wikipedia Encyclopedia  
10 describes as follows:

11 *Practices and observances*

12 *The practice of magick in Thelema is largely an individual affair. Generally, practices are designed to assist in*  
13 *finding and manifesting the True Will, although some include celebratory aspects as well.<sup>100</sup>*

14 *Crowley integrated Eastern practices with Western magical practices from the [Hermetic Order of the Golden](#)*  
15 *[Dawn](#).<sup>101</sup><sup>1671</sup> He recommended a number of these practices to his followers, including:*

16 *[. . .]*

17 *o [Sex magic](#) in various forms including [masturbatory](#), [heterosexual](#), and [homosexual](#) practices<sup>102</sup>*

18 It is hedonism which gives rise to the following behaviors by churches and believers that avoid pain, sacrifice, and cost and  
19 maximize pleasure and benefit:

- 20 1. Remove “sin” and “repentance” from their vocabulary.  
21 2. Describe “love” from a biblical perspective not as an act of obedience to God’s law, which is what it is, but rather as a  
22 “feeling”. Do you think Jesus would have willingly suffered the way He did if his main motivation in life was to avoid  
23 pain? Such an approach minimizes humans to little more than animals. The main thing that motivates animals is the  
24 maximization of pleasure and the avoidance of pain.  
25 3. Replace teaching of God’s word with ritual and sacrifice and group activities within religious ceremony and meetings.  
26 4. Describing “ministry” as something that feels good rather than something that draws both clergy and the people closer  
27 to God.  
28 5. Care more about what men think about them than what God thinks of them under the Bible covenant.  
29 6. Treat the church as a social club or “mutual admiration society” rather than an enforcer of morality both within the  
30 church and upon society in general.  
31 7. Avoid evangelism efforts because they are time consuming and demanding.  
32 8. Insist on spending church tithes on themselves or within the church rather than all of the needy, including those outside  
33 the church.  
34 9. Minimizing our contributions and tithes to the church. God measures the value of our contributions not by their  
35 absolute amount, but by what they mean to the giver. See Matt. 26:6-13 and Mark 12:41-44.

## 36 **8.4 Pride**

37 The Bible in Obadiah 3-4 helps us to understand pride. Pride can be a good thing, and pride can also be a bad thing.

38 When someone “takes pride” in his work, it is generally considered a good thing. We value those who have a high standard  
39 and who do quality work. We also hear people say “be proud of who you are” or “be proud of your name.” Again, these are  
40 good things. These statements tell us that we shouldn’t feel embarrassed about the way we look or think or about our work  
41 or family.

---

<sup>100</sup> DuQuette, Lon Milo. *The Magick of Thelema*

<sup>101</sup> Pearson, Joanne. *A Popular Dictionary of Paganism*, p. 44. Routledge, 2002. [ISBN 0700715916](#).

<sup>102</sup> Urban, Hugh. *Magia Sexualis: Sex, Magic, and Liberation in Modern Western Esotericism*. University of California Press, 2006. [ISBN 0520247760](#)

1 But sinful pride doesn't only enjoy having something. Instead, it enjoys having *more* of it than the next person. Harmful  
2 pride:

- 3 1. Always involves comparing self or the groups one belongs to with others.
- 4 2. Seeks a reward and recognition for one's achievements beyond that of others.

5 This kind of pride makes us happy that we have more money or a better job or better toys than someone else. It's in the  
6 *comparison* that we become proud.

7 Sinful pride is very dangerous. For to know God is to understand that we have no reason to boast. It was this kind of pride  
8 that turned an angel into Satan himself (Luke 10:18, Revelation 12:3-9). Everything we have has been given to us by our  
9 heavenly Father and we are simply stewards over it, not the owner.

10 *"Indeed heaven and the highest heavens belong to the Lord your God, also the earth with all that is in it."*  
11 *[Deuteronomy 10:14, Bible, NKJV]*

12 Pride can be very destructive of relationships. The Bible talks a lot about pride. The book of Proverbs, for instance, addresses  
13 this subject probably more than any other single subject. Here are a few of the scriptures on the subject:

14 *"By pride comes nothing but strife. But with the well-advised is wisdom."*  
15 *[Prov. 13:110]*

16 *"18. Pride goes before destruction, and a haughty spirit before a fall. 19. Better to be of a humble spirit with*  
17 *the lowly, than to divide the spoil with the proud."*  
18 *[Prov. 16:18-19]*

19 *"A man's pride will bring him low, but the humble in spirit will retain honor."*  
20 *[Prov. 29:23]*

21 *"For all that is in the world—the lust of the flesh, the lust of the eyes, and the pride of life—is not of the Father*  
22 *but is of the world."*  
23 *[1 John 2:16]*

24 *"16. These six things the Lord hates, yes, seven are an abomination to Him: 17. A proud look, a lying tongue,*  
25 *hands that shed innocent blood, 18. a heart that devises wicked plans, feet that are swift in running to evil, 19.*  
26 *a false witness who speaks lies, and one who sows discord among brethren."*  
27 *[Prov 6:16-19]*

28 **Pride:**

- 29 1. Is the original sin Satan had that made him fall from God's grace.
- 30 2. Destroys relationships.
- 31 3. Causes endless strife.
- 32 4. Is self-serving and selfish.
- 33 5. Is the opposite of love.

34 Pride is arrogant self-worship. It is the sin of exalting oneself and placing one's own interests above the interests of others.  
35 Pride craves admiration and even adoration, and will not share the limelight. Pride deludes its victims into believing that  
36 they have no peers and drives them to try to destroy anyone who takes recognition away from them. The proud are in love  
37 with themselves and seek to call attention to their admirable qualities.

38 Pride is a primary barrier to salvation. God has provided our deliverance from sin through the death of His Son. We are  
39 saved by putting our faith in Christ and believing that His death atoned for our sin. Salvation is not something that we earn,  
40 but comes as a gift from a gracious God. "For by grace are ye saved through faith; and that not of yourselves; it is the gift of  
41 God" (Eph. 2:8).

42 Pride makes it difficult for many of us to accept this gift. We have a tendency to want to be saved because we are somehow  
43 worthy of God's blessings. Our pride drives us to want to earn our salvation by doing enough good deeds so that the Heavenly  
44 Father will owe us eternal life. But this is not the plan God has devised. Rather, He requires us to humble ourselves,  
45 acknowledge our inability to live righteous lives, repent of our sins, and depend only on His grace.

1 We prideful people have trouble with this plan because it renders our own good deeds and personal achievements worthless.

2 *"Not by works of righteousness which we have done, but according to His mercy He saved us, by the washing of*  
3 *regeneration, and renewing of the Holy Ghost"*  
4 *[Titus 3:5, KJV]*

5 As spiritually impoverished sinners, our only hope for salvation lies in God's gift, yet pride leads us to try to prove our worth  
6 to God. God despises our pride and calls us to trust only in Jesus who was willing to humble Himself and become the ultimate  
7 servant of humanity.

8 It was against this kind of prideful thinking that Jesus was speaking in the Parable of the Vineyard. At harvest, a man  
9 bargained with laborers to work in his vineyard for a fixed daily wage. As the day passed, they hired others to work for fewer  
10 hours at the same daily wage. When those who had begun to work in the morning complained about this arrangement, the  
11 man responded:

12 *"Is it not lawful for me to do what I will with mine own? Is thine eye evil, because I am good? So the last shall*  
13 *be first, and the first shall be last: for many be called, but few are chosen."*  
14 *[Matt. 20:15-16]*

15 The cure for sinful pride is pretty clear:

- 16 1. Recognize the brevity of our life on earth and our own mortality. For instance: "No one on their death bed looking back  
17 at how they spent their precious time on earth ever wished they had spent more time at work."
- 18 2. Adversity builds character more quickly than any other thing. Get yourself in a few difficult situations or make friends  
19 with people who have been through a lot of adversity. Volunteer to help people who have a lot of adversity in their  
20 lives: Prison, poverty, teenage pregnancy, cancer, old age. Talk to people who have declared bankruptcy, had multiple  
21 divorces, and deaths in the family. Ask them what is important in life to them. You will learn some surprising lessons  
22 about what is *really* important!
- 23 3. Learn to be good at and feel good about complementing and helping others.
- 24 4. Have an "attitude of gratitude" and thankfulness for the many gifts and blessings God has bestowed on us.
- 25 5. Learn to depend less on self and more on God and others.
- 26 6. Don't worry so much about what other people think of you. Don't worry about impressing them.
- 27 7. Be willing to freely admit and repent for our mistakes.
- 28 8. Do something funny or stupid that makes people laugh at you once in a while!
- 29 9. Learn to laugh at yourself. Lighten up!
- 30 10. Be less competitive and independent and focus more on team efforts, leadership, and delegation. This takes more focus  
31 off self and puts more onto others.

32 Pride and ego are the reason why pastors, ministers, and their parishioners:

- 33 1. Refuse to acknowledge that sin exists: They don't want to admit that they are sinners and humbly repent.
- 34 2. Refuse to acknowledge the Bible as a law book: They don't want to have to serve or worship something more  
35 important than themselves. In short, they covet God's power and authority.
- 36 3. Invent their own morality and law system as a substitute for God's holy laws. See section 8.2. They want to control  
37 others and elevate their own importance in relation to others.
- 38 4. Seek to be like the rest of the world and not be sanctified and separate: They want to compete with the Joneses:

39 *"Then all the elders of Israel gathered together and came to Samuel at Ramah, and said to him, 'Look, you are*  
40 *old, and your sons do not walk in your ways. Now make us a king to judge us like all the nations [and be OVER*  
41 *them]'.*

42 *"But the thing displeased Samuel when they said, 'Give us a king to judge us.' So Samuel prayed to the Lord.*  
43 ***And the Lord said to Samuel, 'Heed the voice of the people in all that they say to you; for they have rejected***  
44 ***Me, that I should not reign over them.** According to all the works which they have done since the day that I*  
45 *brought them up out of Egypt, even to this day—**with which they have forsaken Me and served other gods—so***  
46 ***they are doing to you also [government becoming idolatry]."***  
47 *[1 Sam. 8:4-8, Bible, NKJV]*

- 48 5. Avoid answering the questions found earlier in section 7: They don't want to admit they may have been teaching false  
49 doctrine for much of their lives.

6. Spread the false arguments found in section 2 earlier:
  - 6.1. They don't want to have to acknowledge the authority of scripture and the absolute Sovereignty of God over the entire universe.
  - 6.2. They want to elevate creations of men, such as man's laws and human governments above that of the only True and Living God and thereby worship pagan idols.

**9 Philosophies and Faiths within Christianity that Originate the Delusion and Corruption Described Herein**

As we can see, all efforts to corrupt Christianity have as their goal efforts to:

1. Undermine the authority of scripture as law.
2. Relegate the Bible to the status of being a history book rather than a law book.
3. Define the parties to covenants found in the Bible as being the Israelites and not Christians.
4. Redefine or confuse the significance of words within scripture so that they may be interpreted subjectively and for the benefit of the reader. This is called rationalizing and lawyers do it all the time to justify and defend the actions of their clients.
5. Replace worship of God and obedience to His Laws with obedience to and worship of man, creations of men, governments, and human laws that replace and conflict with God's laws.
6. Question or discredit the accuracy of the scripture so that it can be interpreted any way one subjectively wants. This is done usually by proving ambiguity by comparing various versions of the Bible or by introducing yet another version of the Bible to distract Christians.

As far as the last item above, the accuracy and authority of the Bible as a law book is brought into question mainly by comparing the God of the Old and New Testament and showing that there is a dichotomy and that the most recent gospel, the New Testament, is the only believable authority.

The laws found within the Old and New Testaments within the Holy Bible provide two different views of God that some believe are conflicting. The most challenging problem within theology within any given Christian faith or denomination is to answer the following questions:

1. What part of the Old Testament applies to the New Testament era?
2. What commands have continuity and what commands have discontinuity?
3. On what basis do we decide to take a command from the Old Testament and make it applicable to New Testament living?
4. Which commands have discontinuity and why?

Over the years that Christianity has been in existence, a number of approaches to reconciling differences between the Old and New Testaments have been formulated, as summarized below:

**Table 1: Approaches to choice of law**

#	Approach	Name for this approach	Example faiths	Notes
1	Only the Old Testament applies	Jews	Messianic Jews	The Tanach is the Jewish version of the Old Testament.
2	Both Old and New Testaments apply	Reformationists, Reformed Theologists	Roman Catholics Reformed Baptists Presbyterians Covenant College Westminster	They began in 1600's in the 16 <sup>th</sup> century with John Calvin and Martin Luther. John Calvin wrote his work on systematic theology in 16 <sup>th</sup> century. Martin Luther was German and John Calvin was from Switzerland.

#	Approach	Name for this approach	Example faiths	Notes
3	Only the New Testament applies	Dispensationalists	Evangelicals American Baptists Southern Baptists Bible Church Movement Assembly of God Pentecostal Churches Plymouth Brethren Calvary Chapel	Started with J.N. Darby in 1800-1882 with the Church of England. He believed he could not be a minister and be part of a government church. Darby taught the Niagara Bible Conferences in America from 1840-1882. C.I. Scofield popularized it in America in the Scofield Bible starting in about 1905 popular in the 1920's and 1930's. Lewis Sperry Chafer then systematized it in his 8 volume set on systematic theology starting in 1920's-1940's. Finally got his work published in 1946-47. He was the president of Dallas Theological Seminary. After Chafer was Charles Ryrie, who ministers in the 1960s-1990's. He wrote a book called <i>Dispensationalism Today</i> in about 1965.

1 Dispensationalist theology has been the main method for introducing most of the corruption described in this document. A  
2 summary of the history of Dispensationalism follows:

- 3 1. In 1901, C.I. Scofield adopted the dispensational interpretation.
- 4 2. In 1909, Schofield produced the Scofield Reference Bible (Oxford Press).
- 5 3. In 1924, Chafer founded Dallas Theological Seminary. John Walvord followed Chafer.
- 6 4. John Feinberg (1988) identified six distinctives of dispensationalism
  - 7 4.1. Multiple senses of Biblical terms such as "Israel" or "seed of Abraham".
  - 8 4.2. A literal hermeneutic.
  - 9 4.3. The Abrahamic covenant will have a simultaneous spiritual and material fulfillment in the future [it is not yet
  - 10 fulfilled].
  - 11 4.4. An insistence upon the future restoration of genetic, physical, geo-political Israel with a land, a throne, and a
  - 12 Davidic King.
  - 13 4.5. The church is distinct from Israel,
  - 14 4.6. A view that history will conclude with a physical, material millennial kingdom.
- 15 5. Charles Ryries (1966) "*Dispensationalism Today*" believed the key to dispensationalism is its insistence upon a clear
- 16 distinction between Israel and the church which includes a distinction between law and grace; that is, Christians are not
- 17 under the law; that the law has no place in the Christian life. The sin qua non of dispensationalism is an abrupt, decisive,
- 18 discontinuity between the OT and the NT; between God's people in the OT and God's people in the NT; between law
- 19 and grace; between Mosaic household management and Pauline household management (Stockton Dissertation).
- 20 Reformationist would interpret this as antinomian.

21 Dispensationalists study both the Old and the New Testament. However, they believe there is a strong discontinuity between  
22 Law and Grace. They erect a wall between Law and Grace, between the Old and New testament. They love the Old  
23 Testament. They will preach from it and use it and study it, but they would not favor taking any aspects of Old Testament  
24 law and apply it to modern living. For instance, you will never hear Dispensationalists emphasize the importance of keeping  
25 the Sabbath day holy.

26 This website adopts the approach number 2 above, which is that of the Reformationists. This approach is the one taken by  
27 Rousas Rushdoony in his wonderful book *The Institutes of Biblical Law*, Rousas John Rushdoony, 1973, The Craig Press,  
28 Library of Congress Catalog Card Number 72-79485. He also founded the Chalcedon Foundation, which you can contact at  
29 the web address below:

<http://www.chalcedon.edu/>

30 Rushdoony's son in law also founded his own organization, which you can visit at the address below:

*American Vision*, Gary Demar  
<http://www.americanvision.org/>

## 10 About Anti-nomianism<sup>103</sup>

Antinomianism:

1. Is what allows Christians to falsely say that God loves me unconditionally (because there is no law, only their belief in God).
2. Turns "faith" into an insurance policy and Jesus into an insurance salesman for protection against the wrath of hell.
3. Turns Christianity into paganism.<sup>104</sup>
4. Completely disconnects Christians from any enforceable accountability to either God or their fellow Christians for the consequences of their actions.
5. Undermines the nature of the Bible as THE trust indenture and law book and delegation of authority from God to Christians that it truly is. See:  

<i>Delegation of Authority Order from God to Christians</i> , Form #13.007 <a href="http://sedm.org/Forms/FormIndex.htm">http://sedm.org/Forms/FormIndex.htm</a>
---
6. Provides a convenient excuse for lukewarm and selfish Christians to defend or justify just about every type of immoral or injurious behavior.
7. Is what allows priests to molest kids and pray like angels at vespers and mass.
8. Is what causes so many non-Christians to accuse Christians of hypocrisy and lawlessness and to avoid the faith.

**Antinomianism** (a term coined by [Martin Luther](#), from the [Greek](#) *ἀντί*, "against" + *νόμος*, "law"), is a belief or tendency in all religions that some therein consider existing laws as no longer applicable to themselves.<sup>105</sup> The term originated in the context of a minority [Protestant](#) view that since [faith](#) itself alone is sufficient to attain salvation, adherence to [religious law](#) is not necessary,<sup>106</sup> and religious laws themselves are set aside or "[abrogated](#)" as inessential. While the concept is related to the foundational [Protestant](#) belief of *Sola Fide* where [justification](#) is through faith alone in Christ; it is taken to an extreme. It is seen by some as the opposite of the notion that obedience to a code of religious law earns salvation: [legalism](#) or [works righteousness](#). An *antinomian* theology does not necessarily imply the embrace of [ethical permissiveness](#); rather it usually implies emphasis on the inner working of the [Holy Spirit](#) as the [primary source of ethical guidance](#).<sup>107</sup>

While there is wide agreement within [Mainstream Christianity](#) that "antinomianism" is [heresy](#), what constitutes antinomianism is often in disagreement. The term "antinomian" emerged soon after the [Protestant Reformation](#) (c.1517) and has historically been used mainly as a [pejorative](#) against Christian thinkers or sects who carried their belief in *justification by faith* further than was customary.<sup>108</sup> For example, [Martin Luther](#) preached *justification by faith alone*, but was also an outspoken critic of *antinomianism*, perhaps most notably in his *Against the Antinomians* (1539). Few groups or sects, outside of [Christian anarchism](#) or [Jewish anarchism](#), explicitly call themselves "antinomian".

While the term originated in early controversies of [Protestant](#) doctrine, and has its roots in debates over the [Synoptic Gospels](#) and the [Pauline Epistles](#) and the issue of [Paul of Tarsus and Judaism](#) and the [Biblical Greek](#) terms *anomia* and *anomos* which are generally translated *lawlessness* and *lawless* respectively, it can be extended to any religious group believing they are not bound to obey the laws of their own religious tradition.<sup>109</sup>

### 10.1 Antinomianism in the Old Testament

The Hebrew Bible emphasizes the importance of Israel keeping the [Mosaic Law](#), and seems to argue against the doctrine of antinomianism. For example, [Daniel 7:24-25](#) states as a warning that a certain king who will speak great words against God and wear out the saints will also go so far as to try to change times and laws:

<sup>103</sup> Adapted from [Wikipedia](#), <http://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Antinomianism> on 12/2/2010.

<sup>104</sup> See: [The Unlimited Liability Universe](#), Family Guardian Fellowship, <http://famguardian.org/Subjects/Spirituality/Articles/UnlimitedLiabilityUniverse.htm>.

<sup>105</sup> The Oxford Dictionary of World Religions, 1997.

<sup>106</sup> Webster's New World Dictionary of the American Language: College Edition 1966.

<sup>107</sup> [Encyclopedia Britannica: Antinomianism](#).

<sup>108</sup> [Encyclopedia Britannica: Antinomianism](#).

<sup>109</sup> [The American Heritage Dictionary of the English Language: Fourth Edition, 2000](#).

1 (24) And the ten horns out of this kingdom are ten kings that shall arise: and another shall rise after them; and  
2 he shall be diverse from the first, and he shall subdue three kings. (25) And he shall speak great words against  
3 the most High, and shall wear out the saints of the most High, and think to change times and laws: and they shall  
4 be given into his hand until a time and times and the dividing of time. KJV (speaking of the "Little horn" in Daniel  
5 7:8 believed by many Biblical scholars to be Antiochus Epiphanes)

6 In the Deuterocanon or Biblical apocrypha, the Books of the Maccabees are another example of opposition to not observing  
7 the Mosaic Law. The texts describe the Maccabean revolt (165 BCE) against the Hellenization of Judea and argues strongly  
8 against erosion of adherence to the Law of Moses in Jewish culture. For example:

9 *Not long after this the king [Antiochus] sent an Athenian senator to force the Jews to abandon the customs of  
10 their ancestors and live no longer by the laws of God  
11 [2 Macc 6:1 (NRSV)]*

12 And:

13 *So they built a gymnasium in Jerusalem, according to Gentile custom, and removed the marks of circumcision,  
14 and abandoned the holy covenant. They joined with the Gentiles and sold themselves to do evil.  
15 [1 Macc 1:14-15 (NRSV)]*

## 16 **10.2 Antinomianism in the New Testament**

17 Obligation to follow the Mosaic Law was a point of contention in the Early Christian Church. Many early converts were  
18 Greek and thus had less interest in adherence to the *Law of Moses* than did the earliest Christians, who were primarily of  
19 Jewish descent and already accustomed to the Law.<sup>110</sup> Thus, as Christianity spread into new cultures, the early church was  
20 pressured to decide which laws were still required of Christians, and which were no longer required under the New Covenant.  
21 The New Testament, (especially the book of Acts, but see also Historical reliability of the Acts of the Apostles) is interpreted  
22 by some as recording the church slowly abandoning the "ritual laws" of Judaism, such as circumcision, Sabbath and kosher  
23 law, while remaining in full agreement on adherence to the "divine law", or Jewish laws on morality such as the Ten  
24 Commandments. Thus, the early Christian church incorporated ideas sometimes seen as *antinomian* or parallel to Dual-  
25 covenant theology, while still stalwartly upholding the traditional laws of moral behavior.

26 The first major dispute<sup>111</sup> over Christian antinomianism was a dispute over whether circumcision was required of Christians.  
27 This happened at the Council of Jerusalem, which is dated to about 50 AD and recorded in the book of Acts 15:5.

28 *"But some believers who belonged to the sect of the Pharisees stood up and said, 'It is necessary for them to be  
29 circumcised and ordered to keep the law of Moses.'"  
30 [NRSV]*

31 The apostles and elders met at Jerusalem, and after a spirited discussion, their conclusion, later called the *Apostolic Decree*,  
32 possibly a major act of differentiation of the Church from its Jewish roots<sup>112</sup> (the first being the Rejection of Jesus<sup>113</sup>), was  
33 recorded in Acts 15:19-21:

34 *Acts:(19) Wherefore my [James] sentence is, that we trouble not them, which from among the Gentiles are turned  
35 to God: (20) But that we write unto them, that they abstain from pollutions of idols, and from fornication, and  
36 from things strangled, and from blood. (21) For Moses of old time hath in every city them that preach him, being  
37 read in the synagogues every sabbath day.  
38 [Acts 15:19-21-, Bible, KJV]*

<sup>110</sup> Fossum, Jarl; Munoa, Phillip. Jesus and the Gospels. Thomson Learning, 2004.

<sup>111</sup> In Acts 6:13-14 Saint Stephen is accused by "false witnesses" of speaking against the law, presumably a minor dispute.

<sup>112</sup> Jewish Encyclopedia: Baptism: "According to rabbinical teachings, which dominated even during the existence of the Temple (Pes. viii. 8), Baptism, next to circumcision and sacrifice, was an absolutely necessary condition to be fulfilled by a proselyte to Judaism (Yeb. 46b, 47b; Ker. 9a; 'Ab. Zarah 57a; Shab. 135a; Yer. Kid. iii. 14, 64d). Circumcision, however, was much more important, and, like baptism, was called a "seal" (Schlatter, "Die Kirche Jerusalems," 1898, p. 70). But as circumcision was discarded by Christianity, and the sacrifices had ceased, Baptism remained the sole condition for initiation into religious life. The next ceremony, adopted shortly after the others, was the imposition of hands, which, it is known, was the usage of the Jews at the ordination of a rabbi. Anointing with oil, which at first also accompanied the act of Baptism, and was analogous to the anointment of priests among the Jews, was not a necessary condition."

<sup>113</sup> McGrath, Alister E., Christianity: An Introduction, Blackwell Publishing,(2006), ISBN 1-4051-0899-1, Page 174: "In effect, they [Jewish Christians] seemed to regard Christianity as an affirmation of every aspect of contemporary Judaism, with the addition of one extra belief — that Jesus was the Messiah. Unless males were circumcised, they could not be saved (Acts 15:1)."



1 Beginning with [Augustine of Hippo](#)<sup>114</sup>, many have seen a connection to [Noahide Law](#), while some modern scholars<sup>115</sup> reject  
2 the connection to *Noahide Law*<sup>116</sup> and instead see Lev 17-18<sup>117</sup> as the basis.

3 James here sets out a preliminary list of commands which Gentiles should obey. Gentiles were not required to be circumcised,  
4 but were required to obey the four beginning requirements to be part of the larger congregation. This passage shows that the  
5 remainder of the commandments would follow as they studied "Moses" in the Synagogues. If Gentiles did not follow this  
6 reduced requirement, they risked being put out of the Synagogue and missing out on a [Torah](#) education (See [Leviticus 17](#) and  
7 20). James's list still includes some dietary commands, but many of those also passed out of some Christian traditions quite  
8 early. [Acts 10:9-16](#) describes the following vision, which was used to excuse early gentile Christians from the Mosaic dietary  
9 laws.

10 *(9) ...Peter went up upon the housetop to pray about the sixth hour: (10) And he became very hungry, and would*  
11 *have eaten: but while they made ready, he fell into a trance, (11) And saw heaven opened, and a certain vessel*  
12 *descending unto him, as it had been a great sheet knit at the four corners, and let down to the earth: (12) Wherein*  
13 *were all manner of four footed beasts of the earth, and wild beasts, and creeping things, and fowls of the air. (13)*  
14 *And there came a voice to him, Rise, Peter; kill, and eat. (14) But Peter said, Not so, Lord; for I have never eaten*  
15 *any thing that is common or unclean. (15) And the voice spake unto him again the second time, What God hath*  
16 *cleansed, that call not thou common. (16) This was done thrice: and the vessel was received up again into heaven.*  
17 *[Acts 10:9-16, Bible, KJV]*

18 It is interesting to note that Peter was perplexed about the vision in Acts 10, and then his subsequent explanation of the vision  
19 in Acts 11 gives no credence to antinomianism as it relates to the inapplicability of the Mosaic dietary laws.

20 Though the *Apostolic Decree* is no longer observed by many [Christian denominations](#) today, it is still observed in full by the  
21 [Greek Orthodox](#).<sup>118</sup>

### 22 **10.3 Pauline passages supporting antinomianism**

23 Most scholars think Paul actually dictated his letters to a secretary<sup>119</sup>.

24 See also: [Pauline Christianity](#) and [Paul of Tarsus and Judaism](#)

25 [Paul of Tarsus](#), in his [Letters](#), claims several times that believers are saved by the [unearned grace of God](#), not [by good works](#),  
26 "lest anyone should boast", and placed a priority on [orthodoxy](#) (right belief) before [orthopraxy](#) (right practice). The  
27 [soteriology](#) of Paul's statements in this matter has always been a matter of dispute (for example, see [2 Peter 3:16](#)); the ancient  
28 [gnostics interpreted Paul](#) to be referring to the manner in which embarking on a path to enlightenment ultimately leads to

---

<sup>114</sup> Contra Faust, 32.13.

<sup>115</sup> For example: [Joseph Fitzmyer](#), *The Acts of the Apostles (The Anchor Yale Bible Commentaries)*, Yale University Press (December 2, 1998), [ISBN 0300139829](#), chapter V.

<sup>116</sup> [Genesis 9](#).

<sup>117</sup> [Lev 17-18](#).

<sup>118</sup> [Karl Josef von Hefele's commentary on canon II of Gangra](#) notes: "We further see that, at the time of the Synod of [Gangra](#), the rule of the Apostolic Synod with regard to blood and things strangled was still in force. With the Greeks, indeed, it continued always in force as their Eucharisties still show. [Balsamon](#) also, the well-known commentator on the canons of the Middle Ages, in his commentary on the sixty-third [Apostolic Canon](#), expressly blames the Latins because they had ceased to observe this command. What the Latin Church, however, thought on this subject about the year 400, is shown by [St. Augustine](#) in his work [Contra Faustum](#), where he states that the Apostles had given this command in order to unite the heathens and Jews in the one ark of Noah; but that then, when the barrier between Jewish and heathen converts had fallen, this command concerning things strangled and blood had lost its meaning, and was only observed by few. But still, as late as the eighth century, [Pope Gregory the Third](#) (731) forbade the eating of blood or things strangled under threat of a penance of forty days. No one will pretend that the disciplinary enactments of any council, even though it be one of the undisputed [Ecumenical Synods](#), can be of greater and more unchanging force than the decree of that first council, held by the Holy Apostles at Jerusalem, and the fact that its decree has been obsolete for centuries in the West is proof that even Ecumenical canons may be of only temporary utility and may be repealed by disuse, like other laws."

<sup>119</sup> [Harris, Stephen L.](#), *Understanding the Bible*. Palo Alto: Mayfield. 1985. p. 316-320. Harris cites [Galatians 6:11](#), [Romans 16:22](#), [Colossians 4:18](#), [2 Thessalonians 3:17](#), [Philemon 19](#). [Joseph Barber Lightfoot](#) in his *Commentary on the Epistle to the Galatians* writes: "At this point [[Galatians 6:11](#)] the apostle takes the pen from his amanuensis, and the concluding paragraph is written with his own hand. From the time when letters began to be forged in his name ([2 Thessalonians 2:2](#); [2 Thessalonians 3:17](#)) it seems to have been his practice to close with a few words in his own handwriting, as a precaution against such forgeries... In the present case he writes a whole paragraph, summing up the main lessons of the epistle in terse, eager, disjointed sentences. He writes it, too, in large, bold characters (Gr. *pelikois grammasin*), that his handwriting may reflect the energy and determination of his soul."

1 enlightenment, which was their idea of what constituted *salvation*. In what has become the modern [Protestant](#) orthodoxy,  
2 however, this is interpreted as a reference to [justification simply by trusting Christ](#). See also [New Perspective on Paul](#).

3 Paul used the term *freedom in Christ*, for example, [Galatians 2:4](#), and it is clear that some understood this to mean lawlessness  
4 (i.e. not obeying Mosaic Law). For example, in [Acts 18:12-16](#) Paul is accused of "persuading .. people to worship God in  
5 ways contrary to the law." In [Acts 21:21 James the Just](#) explained his situation to Paul:

6 *And they are informed of thee, that thou teachest all the [Jews](#) which are among the [Gentiles](#) to forsake [Moses](#),  
7 saying that they ought not to [circumcise](#) their children, neither to walk after the customs.  
8 [KJV]*

9 [Colossians 2:13-14](#) is sometimes presented as proof of Paul's antinomistic views. For example, the [NIV](#) translates these  
10 verses: "...he forgave us all our sins, having canceled the written code, with its regulations, that was against us and that stood  
11 opposed to us; he took it away, nailing it to the cross." However, the [NRSV](#) translates this same verse as: "...he forgave us all  
12 our trespasses, erasing the record that stood against us with its legal demands. He set this aside, nailing it to the cross." This  
13 latter translation makes it sound as though it is a *record of trespasses*, rather than *the Law itself*, that was "nailed to the cross."  
14 The interpretation partly hinges on the original Greek word *χειρόγραφον* which according to Strong's G5498<sup>120</sup> literally means  
15 "something written by hand" which is variously translated as "written code" or "record", as in a record of debt.

16 [2 Corinthians 3:6-17](#) says "Who also hath made us able ministers of the new testament; not of the letter, but of the spirit: for  
17 the letter killeth, but the spirit giveth life. But if the ministration of death, written and engraven in stones, was glorious, so  
18 that the children of Israel could not steadfastly behold the face of Moses for the glory of his countenance; which glory was  
19 to be done away: How shall not the ministration of the spirit be rather glorious? For if the ministration of condemnation be  
20 glory, much more doth the ministration of righteousness exceed in glory. For even that which was made glorious had no glory  
21 in this respect, by reason of the glory that excelleth. For if that which is done away was glorious, much more that which  
22 remaineth is glorious. Seeing then that we have such hope, we use great plainness of speech: And not as Moses, which put a  
23 veil over his face, that the children of Israel could not steadfastly look to the end of that which is abolished: But their minds  
24 were blinded: for until this day remaineth the same vail untaken away in the reading of the old testament; which vail is done  
25 away in Christ. But even unto this day, when Moses is read, the vail is upon their heart. Nevertheless when it shall turn to the  
26 Lord, the vail shall be taken away. Now the Lord is that Spirit: and where the Spirit of the Lord is, there is liberty." ([KJV](#))

27 Some cite [Acts 13:39](#): "And by him all that believe are justified from all things, from which ye could not be justified by the  
28 law of Moses." But this is more about [Justification \(theology\)](#) than *antinomianism*.

29 [Romans 6](#) states twice that believers are not under the law: Romans 6:14 "For sin shall not have dominion over you: for ye  
30 are not under the law, but under grace." and Romans 6:15 "What then? shall we sin, because we are not under the law, but  
31 under grace? God forbid." KJV

32 [Galatians 3:1-5](#) describes the Galatians as "foolish" for relying on being observant to the Law: "(1) O foolish Galatians, who  
33 hath bewitched you, that ye should not obey the truth, before whose eyes Jesus Christ hath been evidently set forth, crucified  
34 among you? (2) This only would I learn of you, Received ye the Spirit by the works of the law, or by the hearing of faith? (3)  
35 Are ye so foolish? having begun in the Spirit, are ye now made perfect by the flesh? (4) Have ye suffered so many things in  
36 vain? if it be yet in vain. (5) He therefore that ministereth to you the Spirit, and worketh miracles among you, doeth he it by  
37 the works of the law, or by the hearing of faith?" KJV

38 [Galatians 3:23-25](#) says that the purpose of the Law was to lead people to Christ, once people believe in Christ, they are no  
39 longer under the Law: "(23) But before faith came, we were kept under the [law](#), shut up unto the faith which should afterwards  
40 be revealed. (24) Wherefore the law was our schoolmaster to bring us unto Christ, that we might be [justified](#) by faith.(25)  
41 But after that faith is come, we are no longer under a schoolmaster." KJV

42 [Christians](#) believe that [Jesus](#) is the mediator of the [New Covenant](#) (see [Hebrews 8:6](#)). Depicted is his famous [Sermon on the](#)  
43 [Mount](#) in which he [commented on the Law](#). Some scholars (see [Antithesis of the Law](#)) consider this to be an [antitype](#) of the  
44 proclamation of the [Ten Commandments](#) or [Mosaic Covenant](#) by [Moses](#) from the [Biblical Mount Sinai](#).

---

<sup>120</sup> [Strong's G5498](#).

1 In [Galatians 4:21-31](#), Paul compares the [Old Covenant](#) with the [New Covenant](#), see also [Supersessionism](#). In this comparison,  
2 he equates each covenant with a woman, using the wives of Abraham as examples. The old covenant is equated with the slave  
3 woman, Hagar, and the new covenant is equated with the free woman Sarah. ([Galatians 4:22-26](#)). He concludes this example  
4 by saying that we are not children of the slave woman, but children of the free woman. In other words, we are not under the  
5 old covenant, we are under the new covenant. "(22) For it is written, that Abraham had two sons, the one by a bondmaid, the  
6 other by a freewoman. (23) But he who was of the bondwoman was born after the flesh; but he of the freewoman was by  
7 promise. (24) Which things are an allegory: for these are the two covenants; the one from the mount Sinai, which gendereth  
8 to bondage, which is Agar. (25) For this Agar is mount Sinai in Arabia, and answereth to Jerusalem which now is, and is in  
9 bondage with her children. (26) But Jerusalem which is above is free, which is the mother of us all." KJV ([Galatians 4:30-31](#))  
10

11 [Romans 10:4](#) is also sometimes translated: "For Christ is the end of the law for righteousness to everyone that believeth."  
12 (KJV) The key word here is *telos* (see also Strong's G5056).<sup>121</sup> Robert Badenas<sup>122</sup> argues that *telos* is correctly translated as  
13 goal, not end, so that Christ is the *goal* of the Law. Andy Gaus' version of the New Testament<sup>123</sup> translates this verse as:  
14 "Christ is what the law aims at: for every believer to be on the right side of [God's] justice."

15 Also cited is [Ephesians 2:15](#): "Having abolished in his flesh the enmity, even the law of commandments contained in  
16 ordinances; for to make in himself of twain one new man, so making peace" KJV. Another passage cited is [Romans 7:1-7](#),  
17 especially Romans 7:4 "Wherefore, my brethren, ye also are become dead to the law by the body of Christ; that ye should be  
18 married to another, even to him who is raised from the dead, that we should bring forth fruit unto God." and Romans 7:6 "But  
19 now we are delivered from the law, that being dead wherein we were held; that we should serve in newness of spirit, and not  
20 in the oldness of the letter." KJV

21 In Paul's [Epistle to the Hebrews](#) ([Hebrews 7:11-28](#)), which most scholars don't think was actually written by Paul, it is written  
22 that under the Old Testament Law, priests had to be from the tribe of Levi, Aaron and his sons. (See [Exodus 29:8-9](#) "Bring  
23 his sons and dress them in tunics and put headbands on them. Then tie sashes on Aaron and his sons. The priesthood is theirs  
24 by a lasting ordinance. In this way you shall ordain Aaron and his sons.") It is pointed out that Jesus was from the tribe of  
25 Judah, and thus Jesus could not be a priest under the Old Testament Law, as Jesus is not a descendant of Aaron. It states that  
26 the Law had to change for Jesus to be the High Priest: "For when there is a change of the priesthood, there must also be a  
27 change of the law." (Hebrews 7:12)

28 It then compares the first covenant (made with Israel, as recorded in the Old Testament) with the new covenant in [Hebrews](#)  
29 [8-9](#). In Hebrews 8:6-7: "But the ministry Jesus has received is as superior to theirs as the covenant of which he is mediator is  
30 superior to the old one, and it is founded on better promises. For if there had been nothing wrong with that first covenant, no  
31 place would have been sought for another." It goes on to say that the problem with the first covenant was with the people  
32 who were supposed to keep it, and that in the new covenant: "I will put my laws into their minds, and write them on their  
33 hearts, and I will be their God, and they shall be my people." [Hebrews 8:10](#)

34 It is written that the first covenant was obsolete, and would soon disappear: "By calling this covenant "new," he has made the  
35 first one obsolete; and what is obsolete and aging will soon disappear." [Hebrews 8:13](#). It clearly identifies the first covenant  
36 which is disappearing in [Hebrews 9:1-5](#). Of particular note are the "stone tables of the covenant" in Hebrews 9:4, referring  
37 directly to the [Ten Commandments](#), which however most Christians believe are still valid. "Now the first covenant had  
38 regulations for worship and also an earthly sanctuary. A tabernacle was set up. In its first room were the lamp stand, the table  
39 and the consecrated bread; this was called the Holy Place. Behind the second curtain was a room called the Most Holy Place,  
40 which had the golden altar of incense and the gold-covered ark of the covenant. This ark contained the gold jar of manna,  
41 Aaron's staff that had budded, and the stone tablets of the covenant. Above the ark were the cherubim of the Glory,  
42 overshadowing the atonement cover." (Hebrews 9:1-5)

---

<sup>121</sup> [Strong's G5056](#).

<sup>122</sup> Bandas, Robert. *Christ the End of the Law, Romans 10.4 in Pauline Perspective*, 1985, [ISBN 0-905774-93-0](#).

<sup>123</sup> *Unvarnished New Testament*, 1991, [ISBN 0-933999-99-2](#).

## 10.4 Pauline passages opposing antinomianism

On the other hand, Paul also wrote or spoke in support of the law, for example: [Romans 2:12–16](#), [Galatians 5:3](#), [Acts 24:14, 25:8](#) and preached about [Ten Commandment](#) topics such as [idolatry](#): [1 Corinthians 5:11](#), [Galatians 5:19–21](#), [Ephesians 5:5](#), [Colossians 3:5](#), [Acts 17:16–21](#).

## 10.5 Theological views

The [Catholic Encyclopedia](#) article on *Judaizers*<sup>124</sup> notes: "Paul, on the other hand, not only did not object to the observance of the Mosaic Law, as long as it did not interfere with the liberty of the Gentiles, but he conformed to its prescriptions when occasion required ([1 Corinthians 9:20](#)). Thus he shortly after the [Council of Jerusalem](#) circumcised Timothy ([Acts 16:1-3](#)), and he was in the very act of observing the Mosaic ritual when he was arrested at Jerusalem (21:26 sqq.)."

The [Jewish Encyclopedia](#) article on *Gentile: Gentiles May Not Be Taught the Torah*<sup>125</sup> notes the following reconciliation: "[R. Emden](#), in a remarkable apology for Christianity contained in his appendix to "Seder 'Olam,"<sup>126</sup> gives it as his opinion that the original intention of Jesus, and especially of Paul, was to convert only the Gentiles to the [seven moral laws of Noah](#) and to let the Jews follow the Mosaic law—this explains the apparent contradictions in the New Testament regarding the [laws of Moses](#) and the [Sabbath](#)."

The [Tübingen school](#) of historians founded by [F. C. Baur](#) holds that in [Early Christianity](#), there was conflict between [Pauline Christianity](#) and the [Jerusalem Church](#) led by [James the Just](#), [Simon Peter](#), and [John the Apostle](#), the so-called "[Jewish Christians](#)" or "Pillars of the Church"<sup>127</sup> although in many places Paul writes that he was an observant Jew, and that Christians should "uphold the Law" ([Romans 3:31](#)). In [Galatians 2:14](#), part of the [Incident at Antioch](#)<sup>128</sup>, Paul publicly accused Peter of [judaizing](#). Even so, he does go on to say that [sins](#) remain sins, and upholds by several examples the kind of behaviour that the [church](#) should not tolerate (e.g., [Galatians 5:19-21](#), [1 Cor 6:9-10](#)). In [1 Corinthians 7:10-16](#) he cites [Jesus' teaching on divorce](#) ("not I but the Lord") and does not reject it, but goes on to proclaim [his own teaching](#) ("I, not the Lord"), an extended counsel regarding a specific situation which some interpret as not in conflict with what the Lord said. However, this may mean he received direct knowledge of what the Lord wanted him to teach through the [Holy Ghost](#) ([Galatians 2:6-10](#)).

## 10.6 Paul versus James

The [Epistle of James](#), in contrast, states that our [good works justify](#) before men, our faith after salvation, and we are to obey the Law of God, that *a person is justified by works and not by faith alone*, that *faith without works is dead* ([James 2:14–26](#)). Historically, the presence of this statement has been difficult for Protestants to reconcile with their belief in [justification by faith alone](#). [Martin Luther](#), believing that his doctrines were refuted by this passage, suggested that the Epistle might be a forgery, and relegated it to an appendix in his Bible (although he later came to accept its canonicity, see also [Antilegomena](#)). Though this may be interpreted through the word "justified." It speaks that faith in Jesus Christ is the first step and that faith is justified through good works, he goes on to say that without spreading your love and faith, it is dead. See also [Law and Gospel](#), article on *James 2:20*<sup>129</sup>, [Romans 2:6](#), [Ephesians 2:8-10](#), [Joint Declaration on the Doctrine of Justification](#).

It should be noted that James also wrote: "For whoever keeps the whole law and yet stumbles at just one point is guilty of breaking all of it. For he who said, 'Do not commit adultery,' also said, 'Do not murder.' If you do not commit adultery but do commit murder, you have become a lawbreaker." [James 2:10-11](#). Essentially, people who want to keep the Old Testament Law must perfectly keep all of the Law—an *impossible task* that James appeals to his readers to follow the "Royal Law of Love" instead in the preceding verses ([James 2:8-9](#)). However, some scholars such as [Alistair McGrath](#), purport that James

<sup>124</sup> [Catholic Encyclopedia: Judaizers](#).

<sup>125</sup> [Gentile: Gentiles May Not Be Taught the Torah](#).

<sup>126</sup> Emden, R. "Appendix to "Seder 'Olam," pp. 32b-34b, Hamburg, 1752.

<sup>127</sup> [Catholic Encyclopedia: St. James the Less](#): "Then we lose sight of James till St. Paul, three years after his conversion (A.D. 37), went up to Jerusalem. ... On the same occasion, the "pillars" of the Church, James, Peter, and John "gave to me (Paul) and Barnabas the right hands of fellowship; that we should go unto the Gentiles, and they unto the circumcision" (Galatians 2:9)."

<sup>128</sup> [Catholic Encyclopedia: Judaizers](#) see section titled: "THE INCIDENT AT ANTIOCH".

<sup>129</sup> <http://www.nccbuscc.org/nab/bible/james/james2.htm#v20> James 2:20.

1 was the leader of a [Judaizing](#) party that taught that Gentiles must obey the entire Mosaic Law<sup>130</sup>. See also [Circumcision controversy in early Christianity:Jewish background](#). For the critique of partial observance of the law, see [Cafeteria Christianity](#).

4 Finally, Paul did make at least one statement that demonstrates agreement with James, that *both* faith produced as a result of repentance (the initial requirement for justification) *and* works (the evidence or proof of true faith) must exist together: "So then, King Agrippa, I was not disobedient to the vision from heaven. First to those in Damascus, then to those in Jerusalem and in all Judea, and to the Gentiles also, I preached that they should repent and turn to God and *prove their repentance by their deeds*." [Acts 26:19-20 \(NIV\)](#)

## 9 **10.7 Jesus and antinomianism**

10 The [Torah prescribes the death penalty](#) for [desecrating Sabbath](#) by working ([Exodus 31:14-17](#)). To avoid any possibility of breaking the [Torah commands](#), the [Pharisees](#) formulated strict interpretations and numerous traditions which they treated as *laws*, see [Halakha](#). According to the [Christians](#), [Jesus](#) criticized the Pharisees for this ([Mark 7:7-9](#)). The [Jewish Encyclopedia](#) article on *Jesus*<sup>131</sup> notes: "Jesus, however, does not appear to have taken into account the fact that the Halakah was at this period just becoming crystallized, and that much variation existed as to its definite form; the [disputes of Bet Hillel and Bet Shammai](#) were occurring about the time of his maturity." In the [Gospel of Mark](#), Jesus' disciples were picking [grain](#) for food on [Sabbath](#) ([Mark 2:23-28](#)). When the [Pharisees](#) challenged Jesus over this, he pointed to Biblical precedent and declared that "the Sabbath was made for man, not man for the Sabbath". Some claim Jesus rejected complete adherence to the [Torah](#). Most scholars hold that Jesus did not reject the law, but directed that it should be obeyed in context. e.g., [E. P. Sanders](#) notes, "No substantial conflict between Jesus and the Pharisees with regard to Sabbath, food, and purity laws .... The church took some while to come to the position that the Sabbath need not be kept, and it is hard to think that Jesus explicitly said so."<sup>132</sup> There may be passages where the words of Jesus have been misinterpreted and were not really in contradiction with the Jewish law.<sup>133</sup>

23 In the [Gospel of Matthew](#), [Jesus](#) is sometimes portrayed as referring to people he sees as wicked with the term *ergazomenoi tēn anomian* (ἐργαζόμενοι τὴν ἀνομίαν) - e.g. [Matthew 7:21-23](#), [Matthew 13:40-43](#). Due to this negative context the term has almost always been translated as *evildoers*, though it literally means "workers of lawlessness"<sup>134</sup>. Lawlessness, in Hebrew, would directly imply **Torahlessness**. In other words, Matthew appears to present Jesus as equating wickedness with encouraging antinomianism. Scholars view Matthew as having been written by or for a Jewish audience, the so-called Jewish Christians. Several scholars argue that Matthew artificially lessened a claimed rejection of Jewish law so as not to alienate Matthew's intended audience. However, Jesus called for full adherence to the commandments ([Matthew 5:19-21](#)) He declared: "Do not think that I have come to abolish the [Law](#) or the [Prophets](#); I have not come to abolish them but to fulfill them" ([Matthew 5:17](#)). A parallel verse to [Matthew 7:21](#) is [James 1:22](#).

32 See also [Expounding of the Law](#), [Great Commission](#), [Hyperdispensationalism](#)

33 [1 John 3:4](#) states:

34 "Everyone who commits [sin](#) is guilty of lawlessness; sin is lawlessness."

## 35 **10.8 Antinomian Controversy in Christianity**

36 Antinomianism has been a point of doctrinal contention in the history of the [Christian Church](#), especially in [Protestantism](#). Given the Protestant belief of [justification through faith alone](#); most Protestant Christians consider themselves saved even

---

<sup>130</sup> McGrath, Alister E., *Christianity: An Introduction*, Blackwell Publishing (2006). [ISBN 1-4051-0899-1](#), page 174: "Paul notes the emergence of a Judaizing party in the region — that is, a group within the church which insisted that Gentile believers should obey every aspect of the law of Moses, including the need to be circumcised. According to Paul [reference is made to Galatians, but no specific verse is given], the leading force behind this party was James ... the brother of Jesus ..."

<sup>131</sup> [Jewish Encyclopedia: Jesus](#).

<sup>132</sup> E. P. Sanders, *Jesus and Judaism*, 1985 SCM Press [ISBN 0-334-02091-3](#), pages 264-9.

<sup>133</sup> [Jewish Encyclopedia: New Testament: Misunderstood Passages](#).

<sup>134</sup> *A Greek-English Lexicon of the New Testament and other Early Christian Literature* Bauer, Gingrich, Danker; [Young's Literal Translation](#): "ye who are working lawlessness"; [NASB](#): "You who practice lawlessness"; [NKJV](#): "you who practice lawlessness".

1 without conformity to the many commandments of the Mosaic Law as a whole. However, those teachings known vaguely as  
2 the *moral law* are retained in almost all sects of Christianity. Deciding which laws of the Old Testament are important to  
3 retain and which can be ignored is somewhat subjective (see also [Cafeteria Christianity](#)). Christian sects and theologians who  
4 feel that they are freed from more laws than is customary are often called "antinomian" by their critics. Theological charges  
5 of antinomianism typically imply that the opponent's doctrine leads to various sorts of licentiousness, and imply that the  
6 antinomian chooses his theology in order to further a career of dissipation. However, the conspicuous austerity of life among  
7 many sects accused of antinomianism, (such as [Anabaptists](#) or [Calvinists](#)) suggests that these accusations are often, or even  
8 mostly, made for [rhetorical](#) effect. Accusations of antinomianism have also been used more loosely to criticize doctrines that  
9 erode the authority of the church, or to criticize teachings perceived as hostile to government and [civic law](#).

## 10 **11 God v. Government: Competing Religions**

11 The following subsections analyze the biblical relation between government and God, prove that government has become a  
12 false religion that competes with Christianity for the allegiance, affection, and worship of Americans. This false religion has  
13 been established in violation of the First Amendment Establishment Clause and ultimately will result in the destruction of  
14 Christianity if left unopposed. If you would like further information on this subject, please see the following documents on  
15 our website:

- 16 1. *Socialism: The New American Civil Religion*, Form #05.016  
17 <http://sedm.org/Forms/FormIndex.htm>
- 18 2. *Government Establishment of Religion*, Form #05.038  
19 <http://sedm.org/Forms/FormIndex.htm>
- 20 3. *The Institutes of Biblical Law*, Rousas John Rushdoony, 1973, The Craig Press, Library of Congress Catalog Card  
21 Number 72-79485

### 22 **11.1 Why all man-made law is religious in nature**<sup>135</sup>

23 A fascinating book on the subject of Biblical Law entitled *The Institutes of Biblical Law* by Rousas John Rushdoony  
24 irrefutably establishes that all law is religious, and that it represents a covenant between man and God which is characterized  
25 as divine revelation. When we consider that government is founded exclusively on law, government itself then becomes a  
26 religion to implement or execute or enforce divine revelation. When government abuses the authority delegated by God  
27 through God's law, then it also becomes a false religious cult. This exposition will set the stage in justifying the proposition  
28 that our present-day de facto government is nothing but a cult surrounding the false religion it created with its own unjust  
29 policy that has been cleverly disguised to "look" like "law" because this corporate policy has become a vain substitute and  
30 an affront to God's Law found in the Bible. Here are some very insightful quotes from pp. 4-5 of that wonderful book:

31 ***Law is in every culture religious in origin. Because law governs man and society, because it establishes and***  
32 ***declares the meaning of justice and righteousness, law is inescapably religious, in that it establishes in practical***  
33 ***fashion the ultimate concerns of a culture. Accordingly, a fundamental and necessary premise in any and***  
34 ***every study of law must be, first, a recognition of this religious nature of law.***

35 ***Second, it must be recognized that in any culture the source of law is the god of that society. If law has its***  
36 ***source in man's reason, then reason is the god of that society. If the source is an oligarchy, or in a court,***  
37 ***senate, or ruler, then that source is the god of that system.*** Thus, in Greek culture law was essentially a  
38 *religiously humanistic concept,*

39 *In contrast to every law derived from revelation, nomos for the Greeks originated in the*  
40 *mind (nous). So the genuine nomos is no mere obligatory law, but something in which an*  
41 *entity valid in itself is discovered and appropriated...It is "the order which exists (from time*  
42 *immemorial), is valid and is put into operation."<sup>136</sup>*

43 *Because for the Greeks mind was one being with the ultimate order of things, man's mind was thus able to discover*  
44 *ultimate law (nomos) out of its own resources, by penetrating through the maze of accident and matter to the*  
45 *fundamental ideas of being. As a result, Greek culture became both humanistic, because man's mind was one with*  
46 *ultimacy, and also neoplatonic, ascetic, and hostile to the world of matter, because mind, to be truly itself, had*  
47 *to separate itself from non-mind.*

<sup>135</sup> Source: *Great IRS Hoax*, Form #11.302, Section 4.3.9.

<sup>136</sup> Hermann Kleinknecht and W. Gutbrod, *Law* (London: Adam and Charles Black, 1962), p. 21.

1 **Modern humanism, the religion of the state, locates law in the state and thus makes the state, or the people as**  
2 **they find expression in the state, the god of the system.** As Mao Tse-Tung has said, "Our God is none other than  
3 the masses of the Chinese people."<sup>137</sup> In Western culture, law has steadily moved away from God to the people  
4 (or the state) as its source, although the historic power and vitality of the West has been in Biblical faith and law.

5 **Third, in any society, any change of law is an explicit or implicit change of religion. Nothing more clearly**  
6 **reveals, in fact, the religious change in a society than a legal revolution. When the legal foundations shift from**  
7 **Biblical law to humanism, it means that the society now draws its vitality and power from humanism, not from**  
8 **Christian theism.**

9 Fourth, no disestablishment of religion as such is possible in any society. A church can be disestablished, and a  
10 particular religion can be supplanted by another, but the change is simply to another religion. Since the  
11 foundations of law are inescapably religious, no society exists without a religious foundation or without a law-  
12 system which codifies the morality of its religion.

13 **Fifth, there can be no tolerance in a law-system for another religion. Toleration is a device used to introduce**  
14 **a new law-system as a prelude to a new intolerance. Legal positivism, a humanistic faith, has been savage in**  
15 **its hostility to the Biblical law-system and has claimed to be an "open" system. But Cohen, by no means a**  
16 **Christian, has aptly described the logical positivists as "nihilists" and their faith as "nihilistic absolutism."<sup>138</sup>**  
17 **Every law-system must maintain its existence by hostility to every other law-system and to alien religious**  
18 **foundations or else it commits suicide.**

19 In analyzing now the nature of Biblical law, it is important to note first that, for the Bible, law is revelation. The  
20 Hebrew word for law is torah which means instruction, authoritative direction.<sup>139</sup> The Biblical concept of law is  
21 broader than the legal codes of the Mosaic formulation. It applies to the divine word and instruction in its totality:

22 ...the earlier prophets also use torah for the divine word proclaimed through them (Is. viii.  
23 16, cf. also v. 20; Isa. xxx. 9 f.; perhaps also Isa. i. 10). Besides this, certain passages in  
24 the earlier prophets use the word torah also for the commandment of Yahweh which was  
25 written down: thus Hos. viii. 12. Moreover there are clearly examples not only of ritual  
26 matters, but also of ethics.

27 Hence it follows that at any rate in this period torah had the meaning of a divine instruction,  
28 whether it had been written down long ago as a law and was preserved and pronounced  
29 by a priest, or whether the priest was delivering it at that time (Lam. ii. 9; Ezek. vii. 26;  
30 Mal. ii. 4 ff.), or the prophet is commissioned by God to pronounce it for a definite situation  
31 (so perhaps Isa. xxx. 9).

32 Thus what is objectively essential in torah is not the form but the divine authority.<sup>140</sup>

33 The law is the revelation of God and His righteousness. There is no ground in Scripture for despising the law.  
34 Neither can the law be relegated to the Old Testament and grace to the New:

35 The time-honored distinction between the OT as a book of law and the NT as a book of  
36 divine grace is without grounds or justification. Divine grace and mercy are the  
37 presupposition of law in the OT; and the grace and love of God displayed in the NT events  
38 issue in the legal obligations of the New Covenant. Furthermore, the OT contains evidence  
39 of a long history of legal developments which must be assessed before the place of law is  
40 adequately understood. Paul's polemics against the law in Galatians and Romans are  
41 directed against an understanding of law which is by no means characteristic of the OT as  
42 a whole.<sup>141</sup>

43 There is no contradiction between law and grace. The question in James' Epistle is faith and works, not faith and  
44 law.<sup>142</sup> Judaism had made law the mediator between God and man, and between God and the world. It was this  
45 view of law, not the law itself, which Jesus attacked. As Himself the Mediator, Jesus rejected the law as mediator  
46 in order to re-establish the law in its God-appointed role as law, the way of holiness. He established the law by  
47 dispensing forgiveness as the law-giver in full support of the law as the convicting word which makes men

<sup>137</sup> Mao Tse-Tung, *The foolish Old Man Who Removed Mountains* (Peking: Foreign Languages Press, 1966), p. 3.

<sup>138</sup> Morris Raphael Cohen, *Reason and Law* (New York: Collier Books, 1961), p. 84 f.

<sup>139</sup> Ernest F. Kevan, *The Moral Law* (Jenkintown, Penna.: Sovereign Grace Publishers, 1963) p. 5 f. S.R. Driver, "Law (In Old Testament)," in James Hastings, ed., *A Dictionary of the Bible*, vol. III (New York: Charles Scribner's Sons, 1919), p. 64.

<sup>140</sup> Keleinknecht and Gutbrod, *Law*, p. 44

<sup>141</sup> W.J. Harrelson, "Law in the OT," in *The Interpreter's Dictionary of the Bible*, (New York: Abingdon Press, 1962), III, 77.

<sup>142</sup> Kelinknecht an Gutbrod, *Law*, p. 125.

1 *sinners.<sup>143</sup> The law was rejected only as mediator and as the source of justification.<sup>144</sup> Jesus fully recognized the*  
2 *law, and obeyed the law. It was only the absurd interpretations of the law He rejected. Moreover,*

3 *We are not entitled to gather from the teaching of Jesus in the Gospels that He made any*  
4 *formal distinction between the Law of Moses and the Law of God. His mission being not*  
5 *to destroy but to fulfil the Law and the Prophets (Mt. 5:17), so far from saying anything in*  
6 *disparagement of the Law of Moses or from encouraging His disciples to assume an*  
7 *attitude of independence with regard to it, He expressly recognized the authority of the*  
8 *Law of Moses as such, and of the Pharisees as its official interpreters. (Mt. 23:1-3).<sup>145</sup>*

9 *With the completion of Christ's work, the role of the Pharisees as interpreters ended, but not the authority of the*  
10 *Law. In the New Testament era, only apostolically received revelation was ground for any alteration in the law.*  
11 *The authority of the law remained unchanged.*

12 *St. Peter, e.g. required a special revelation before he would enter the house of the*  
13 *uncircumcised Cornelius and admit the first Gentile convert into the Church by baptism*  
14 *(acts 10:1-48) --a step which did not fail to arouse opposition on the part of those who*  
15 *"were of the circumcision" (cf. 11:1-18).<sup>146</sup>*

16 *The second characteristic of Biblical law is that it is a treaty or covenant. Kline has shown that the form of the*  
17 *giving of the law, the language of the text, the historical prologue, the requirement of imprecations and*  
18 *benedictions, and much more, all point to the fact that the law is a treaty established by God with His people.*  
19 *Indeed, "the revelation committed to the two tables was rather a suzerainty treaty or covenant than a legal*  
20 *code."<sup>147</sup> The full covenant summary, the Ten Commandments, was inscribed on each of the two tables of stone,*  
21 *one table or copy of the treaty for each party in the treaty, God and Israel.<sup>148</sup>*

22 *The two stone tables are not, therefore, to be likened to a stele containing one of the half-*  
23 *dozen or so known legal codes earlier than or roughly contemporary with Moses as though*  
24 *God had engraved on these tables a corpus of law. The revelation they contain is nothing*  
25 *less than an epitome of the covenant granted by Yahweh, the sovereign Lord of heaven and*  
26 *earth, to his elect and redeemed servant, Israel.*

27 *Not law, but covenant. That must be affirmed when we are seeking a category*  
28 *comprehensive enough to do justice to this revelation in its totality. At the same time, the*  
29 *prominence of the stipulations, reflect in the fact that "the ten words" are the element used*  
30 *as pars pro toto, signifies the centrality of law in this type of covenant. There is probably*  
31 *no clearer direction afforded the biblical theologian for defining with biblical emphasis*  
32 *the type of covenant God adopted to formalize his relationship to his people than that given*  
33 *in the covenant he gave Israel to perform, even "the ten commandments." Such a covenant*  
34 *is a declaration of God's lordship, consecrating a people to himself in a sovereignly*  
35 *dictated order of life.<sup>149</sup>*

36 *This latter phrase needs re-emphasis: the covenant is "a sovereignly dictated order of life." God as the sovereign*  
37 *Lord and Creator gives His law to man as an act of sovereign grace. It is an act of election, of electing grace*  
38 *(Deut. 7:7 f.; 8:17; 9:4-6, etc.).*

39 *The God to whom the earth belongs will have Israel for His own property, Ex. xix. 5. It is*  
40 *only on the ground of the gracious election and guidance of God that the divine commands*  
41 *to the people are given, and therefore the Decalogue, Ex. xx. 2, places at its forefront the*  
42 *fact of election.<sup>150</sup>*

---

<sup>143</sup> *Ibid.*, pp. 74, 81-91.

<sup>144</sup> *Ibid.*, p. 95.

<sup>145</sup> Hugh H. Currie, "Law of God," in James Hastings, ed., *A Dictionary of Christ and the Gospels* (New York: Charles Scribner's Sons, 1919), I, 685.

<sup>146</sup> Olaf Moe, "Law," in James Hastings, ed., *Dictionary of the Apostolic Church* (New York: Charles Scribner's Sons, 1919), I, 685.

<sup>147</sup> Meredith G. Line, *Treaty of the Great King, The Covenant Structure of Deuteronomy: Studies and Commentary* (Grand Rapids: William B. Eerdmans, 1963), p. 16. See also J.A. Thompson: *The Ancient Near Eastern Treaties and the Old Testament* (London: The Tyndale Press, 1964).

<sup>148</sup> Kline, *op. cit.*, p. 19.

<sup>149</sup> *Ibid.*, p. 17.

<sup>150</sup> Gustave Friedrich Oehler, *Theology of the Old Testament* (Grand Rapids: Zondervan, 1883), p. 177.



1 In the law, the total life of man is ordered: "there is no primary distinction between the inner and the outer life;  
2 the holy calling of the people must be realized in both."<sup>151</sup>

3 The third characteristic of the Biblical law or covenant is that it constitutes a plan for dominion under God. God  
4 called Adam to exercise dominion in terms of God's revelation, God's law (Gen. 1:26 ff.; 2:15-17). This same  
5 calling, after the fall, was required of the godly line, and in Noah it was formally renewed (Gen. 9:1-17). It was  
6 again renewed with Abraham, with Jacob, with Israel in the person of Moses, with Joshua, David, Solomon  
7 (whose Proverbs echo the law), with Hezekiah and Josiah, and finally with Jesus Christ. The sacrament of the  
8 Lord's Supper is the renewal of the covenant: "this is my blood of the new testament" (or covenant), so that the  
9 sacrament itself re-establishes the law, this time with a new elect group (Matt. 26:28; Mark 14:24; Luke 22:20;  
10 1 Cor. 11:25). The people of the law are now the people of Christ, the believers redeemed by His atoning blood  
11 and called by His sovereign election. Kline, in analyzing Hebrews 9:16, 17, in relation to the covenant  
12 administration, observes:

13 ...the picture suggested would be that of Christ's children (cf. 2:13) inheriting his universal  
14 dominion as their eternal portion (note 9:15b; cf. also 1:14; 2:5 ff.; 6:17; 11:7 ff.). And  
15 such is the wonder of the messianic Mediator-Testator that the royal inheritance of his  
16 sons, which becomes of force only through his death, is nevertheless one of co-regency  
17 with the living Testator! For (to follow the typographical direction provided by Heb.  
18 9:16,17 according to the present interpretation) Jesus is both dying Moses and succeeding  
19 Joshua. Not merely after a figure but in truth a royal Mediator redivivus, he secures the  
20 divine dynasty by succeeding himself in resurrection power and ascension glory.<sup>152</sup>

21 The purpose of God in requiring Adam to exercise dominion over the earth remains His continuing covenant  
22 word: man, created in God's image and commanded to subdue the earth and exercise dominion over it in God's  
23 name, is recalled to this task and privilege by his redemption and regeneration.

24 The law is therefore the law for Christian man and Christian society. Nothing is more deadly or more derelict  
25 than the notion that the Christian is at liberty with respect to the kind of law he can have. Calvin whose classical  
26 humanism gained ascendancy at this point, said of the laws of states, of civil governments:

27 I will briefly remark, however, by the way, what laws it (the state) may piously use before  
28 God, and be rightly governed by among men. And even this I would have preferred passing  
29 over in silence, if I did not know that it is a point on which many persons run into dangerous  
30 errors. For some deny that a state is well constituted, which neglects the polity of Moses,  
31 and is governed by the common laws of nations. The dangerous and seditious nature of  
32 this opinion I leave to the examination of others; it will be sufficient for me to have evinced  
33 it to be false and foolish.<sup>153</sup>

34 Such ideas, common in Calvinist and Lutheran circles, and in virtually all churches, are still heretical nonsense.<sup>154</sup>  
35 Calvin favored "the common law of nations." But the common law of nations in his day was Biblical law, although  
36 extensively denatured by Roman law. And this "common law of nations" was increasingly evidencing a new  
37 religion, humanism. Calvin wanted the establishment of the Christian religion; he could not have it, nor could it  
38 last long in Geneva, without Biblical law.

39 Two Reformed scholars, in writing of the state, declare, "It is to be God's servant, for our welfare. It must exercise  
40 justice, and it has the power of the sword."<sup>155</sup> Yet these men follow Calvin in rejecting Biblical law for "the  
41 common law of nations." But can the state be God's servant and by-pass God's law? And if the state "must exercise  
42 justice," how is justice defined, by the nations, or by God? There are as many ideas of justice as there are  
43 religions.

44 The question then is, what law is for the state? Shall it be positive law, after calling for "justice" in the state,  
45 declare, "A static legislation valid for all times is an impossibility." Indeed!<sup>156</sup> Then what about the  
46 commandment, Biblical legislation, if you please, "Thou shalt not kill," and "Thou shalt not steal"? **Are they not**  
47 **intended to valid for all time and in every civil order? By abandoning Biblical law, these Protestant theologians**  
48 **end up in moral and legal relativism.**

---

<sup>151</sup> *Ibid.*, p. 182.

<sup>152</sup> Kline, *Treaty of the Great King*, p. 41.

<sup>153</sup> John Calvin, *Institutes of the Christian Religion*, bk. IV, chap. XX, para. Xiv. In the John Allen translation (Philadelphia: Presbyterian Board of Christiana Education, 1936), II, 787 f.

<sup>154</sup> See H. de Jongste and J.M. van Krimpen, *The Bible and the Life of the Christian*, for similar opinions (Philadelphia: Presbyterian and Reformed Publishing Co., 1968), p. 66 ff.

<sup>155</sup> *Ibid.*, p. 73.

<sup>156</sup> *Ibid.*, p. 75.

1 Roman Catholic scholars offer natural law. The origins of this concept are in Roman law and religion. For the  
2 Bible, there is no law in nature, because nature is fallen and cannot be normative. Moreover the source of law is  
3 not nature but God. There is no law in nature but a law over nature, God's law.<sup>157</sup>

4 **Neither positive law [man's law] nor natural law can reflect more than the sin and apostasy of man: revealed  
5 law [e.g. ONLY THE BIBLE] is the need and privilege of Christian society. It is the only means whereby man  
6 can fulfill his creation mandate of exercising dominion under God. Apart from revealed law [the BIBLE!],  
7 man cannot claim to be under God but only in rebellion against God.  
8 [The Institutes of Biblical Law, Rousas John Rushdoony, 1973, The Craig Press, Library of Congress Catalog  
9 Card Number 72-79485, pp. 4-5, Emphasis added]**

10 To summarize the findings of this section:

- 11 1. The purpose of law is to describe and codify the morality of a culture. Since only religion can define morality, then all  
12 law is religious in origin.
- 13 2. In any culture, the source of law becomes the god of that society. If law is based on Biblical law, then the God of that  
14 society is the true God. If it becomes the judges or the rulers, who are at war with God, then these rulers become the god  
15 of that society.
- 16 3. In any society, any change of law is an explicit or implicit change of religion.
- 17 4. The disestablishment of religion in any society is an impossibility, because all civilizations are based on law and law is  
18 religious in nature.
- 19 5. There can be no tolerance in a law system for another religion. All religious systems eventually seek to destroy their  
20 competition for the sake of self-preservation. Consequently, governments tend eventually to try to control or eliminate  
21 religions in order to preserve and expand their power.
- 22 6. The laws of our society must derive from Biblical law. Any other result leads to “humanism”, apostasy, and mutiny  
23 against God, who is our only King and our Lawgiver.
- 24 7. Humanism is the worship of the “state”, which is simply a collection of people under a democratic form of government.  
25 By “worship”, we mean obedience to the dictates and mandates of the collective majority. The United States is NOT a  
26 democracy, it is a Republic based on individual rights and sovereignty, NOT collective sovereignty.
- 27 8. The consequence of humanism is moral relativism and disobedience to God's laws, which is sin and apostasy and leads  
28 to separation from God.

## 29 **11.2 How Governments Abuse the Human Desire to Avoid Responsibility to Enslave the People** 30 **and Become Like Pagan Gods**<sup>158</sup>

31 *“The hand of the diligent will rule,  
32 But the lazy [or irresponsible] man will be put to forced labor.”  
33 [Prov. 12:24, Bible, NKJV]*

34 In the previous section, we showed how the shift in our culture away from Biblical law has taken us down the path to  
35 “humanism”, which turns the “state” or government into a religion and a law system that eventually focuses itself on  
36 eradicating all other competing religions and law-systems in the society in order to ensure its own survival. Humanism is the  
37 worship of the “state” and it is the essence of socialism. Recall that a “state” is simply a collection of people within a political  
38 jurisdiction.

39 *“**State.** A people permanently occupying a fixed territory bound together by common-law habits and custom  
40 into one body politic exercising, through the medium of an organized government, independent sovereignty and  
41 control over all persons and things within its boundaries, capable of making war and peace and of entering into  
42 international relations with other communities of the globe. United States v. Kutsche, D.C.Cal., 56 F.Supp. 201  
43 207, 208. The organization of social life which exercises sovereign power in behalf of the people. Delany v.  
44 Moralitis, C.C.A.Md., 136 F.2d. 129, 130. In its largest sense, a “state” is a body politic or a society of men.  
45 Beagle v. Motor Vehicle Acc. Indemnification Corp., 44 Misc.2d. 636, 254 N.Y.S.2d. 763, 765. A body of people  
46 occupying a definite territory and politically organized under one government. State ex re. Maisano v. Mitchell,  
47 155 Conn. 256, 231 A.2d. 539, 542. A territorial unit with a distinct general body of law. Restatement, Second,  
48 Conflicts, §3. Term may refer either to body politic of a nation (e.g. United States) or to an individual government  
49 unit of such nation (e.g. California).”  
50 [Black's Law Dictionary, Sixth Edition, p. 1407]*

<sup>157</sup> The very term “nature” is mythical. See R.J. Rushdoony, “The Myth of Nature,” in *The Mythology of Science* (Nutley, N.J.: The Craig Press, 1967), pp. 96-98.

<sup>158</sup> Source: *Great IRS Hoax*, Form #11.302, Section 4.3.9; <http://famguardian.org/Publications/GreatIRSHoax/GreatIRSHoax.htm>.

1 We will build on that theme in this section to show how the inexorable growth of the power and influence of the state and of  
2 humanism is perpetrated in our culture. Much of the content of this section derives once again from the excellent book *The*  
3 *Biblical Institutes of Law* by Rousas Rushdoony, 1972, pp. 664-669. The premise of this section is that the growth of  
4 humanism, socialism, and collectivism requires the government to exploit the weaknesses of the people. Thomas Jefferson  
5 warned us about this tendency of government, when he said:

6 *"In every government on earth is some trace of human weakness, some germ of corruption and degeneracy, which*  
7 *cunning will discover, and wickedness insensibly open, cultivate and improve."*  
8 *[Thomas Jefferson: Notes on Virginia Q.XIV, 1782. ME 2:207]*

9 The chief weakness that covetous governments have learned to exploit in order to expand their power is to appeal to people's  
10 sinful need to **avoid responsibility** of all kinds and to thereby evade the consequence of their sinful, lazy, apathetic, and  
11 ignorant actions. People by nature are lazy and will always take the path of least resistance. They will often pay any price  
12 to evade responsibility for themselves and their actions, including giving up all their rights. In legal terms, the government  
13 therefore expands its power by:

- 14 1. Writing laws and creating programs that insulate people from responsibility for their actions and themselves.
- 15 2. Calling those who receive the benefit of these laws "privileged".
- 16 3. Instituting a tax on the "privileged" activities.
- 17 4. Persecuting those who speak out about the above types of exploitation.

18 In effect, the government "wolf" takes over the public fool (school) system, regulates the media, and coerces apathetic and  
19 cowardly employers everywhere into helping them manufacture "sheep" that it may devour and enslave.

20 *"Most assuredly, I say to you, he who does not enter the sheepfold by the door, but climbs up some other way*  
21 *[using the Federal Reserve, the IRS, the media, and taking over the public schools], the same is a thief and a*  
22 *robber."*  
23 *[Jesus in John 10:1, Bible, NKJV]*

24 *"If you make yourselves sheep, the wolves will eat you."*  
25 *[Benjamin Franklin]*

26 *"A democracy is a sheep and two wolves deciding on what to have for lunch. Freedom is a well-armed sheep*  
27 *contesting the results of the decision."*  
28 *[Benjamin Franklin]*

29 *"It is the duty of a good shepherd to shear his sheep, not to skin them."*  
30 *[Tiberius Caesar]*

31 These sheep are "preprogrammed" to be irresponsible, dependent on government, dysfunctional, ignorant, apathetic, and lazy.  
32 They are taught to evade personal responsibility for every aspect of their behavior. In short, their sin and violation of God's  
33 laws has made them unable to govern or support themselves, and so they have given government the moral authority to step  
34 in as their "Parens Patriae", or government parent, to take over their lives and become an agent of plunder to support their  
35 sinful and irresponsible lifestyle. These sheep are trained and conditioned by our government "servants", like Pavlov's dogs,  
36 to succumb to the enticements of an evil government (called a "Beast" in the book of Revelation in the Bible) by participating  
37 in and partaking of the benefits of socialism and in so doing, they surrender their sovereignty to the totalitarian democratic  
38 "collective".

39 *"A violent man entices his neighbor,*  
40 *And leads him in a way that is not good*  
41 *He winks his eye to devise perverse things;*  
42 *He purses [covers] his lips [by not telling the whole truth] and brings about evil."*  
43 *[Prov. 16:29-30, Bible, NKJV]*

44 The brainwashed sheep are unwittingly recruited to join a mob full of treacherous socialists who want to plunder the rich by  
45 abusing their voting rights and their power sitting as a jurist. If a member of the flock of sheep balks at joining the socialist  
46 mob, they are censured and punished usually financially for being politically incorrect. They are denied a job or a socialist  
47 benefit and/or credit if they refuse to take the mark of the Beast, the Socialist Security Number, or refuse to fill out a W-4 to  
48 begin withholding taxes. Those who participate in this brand of socialism all share "one purse", and make the government  
49 effectively into one big social insurance company to insulate themselves from responsibility for their own laziness, apathy,  
50 greed, and sin. The role of government in a republic then transitions from that of only protecting the people to that of

1 punishing and plundering success while rewarding and encouraging failure. Here is how the Bible says we should view this,  
 2 and note that it says this is “evil” and that we should not participate in it:

3 *Avoid Bad Company*

4 **“My son, if sinners [socialists, in this case] entice you,**  
 5 **Do not consent**  
 6 **If they say, “Come with us,**  
 7 **Let us lie in wait to shed blood;**  
 8 **Let us lurk secretly for the innocent without cause;**  
 9 *Let us swallow them alive like Sheol,*  
 10 *And whole, like those who go down to the Pit:*  
 11 **We shall fill our houses with spoil [plunder];**  
 12 **Cast in your lot among us,**  
 13 **Let us all have one purse”--**  
 14 *My son, do not walk in the way with them,*  
 15 *Keep your foot from their path;*  
 16 *For their feet run to evil,*  
 17 *And they make haste to shed blood.*  
 18 *Surely, in vain the net is spread*  
 19 *In the sight of any bird;*  
 20 **But they lie in wait for their own blood.**  
 21 **They lurk secretly for their own lives.**  
 22 **So are the ways of everyone who is greedy for gain;**  
 23 **It takes away the life of its owners.”**  
 24 *[Proverbs 1:10-19, Bible, NKJV]*

25 God, however, wants us to follow His sacred law, and the result of doing so makes government unnecessary, because we  
 26 become self-governing and self-supporting and do not make government into a false god or become idolaters in the process:

27 *“He [God] brings the princes to nothing.*  
 28 *He makes the judges of the earth useless.”*  
 29 *[Isaiah 40:23, Bible, NKJV]*

30 *“How long will you slumber, O sluggard?*  
 31 *When will you rise from your sleep?*  
 32 *A little sleep, a little slumber,*  
 33 *A little folding of the hands to sleep--*  
 34 *So shall your poverty come on you like a prowler,*  
 35 *And your need like an armed man [from the government/IRS].”*  
 36 *[Prov. 6:9-11, Bible, NKJV]*

37 *“The hand of the diligent will rule,*  
 38 *But the lazy man will be put to forced labor [working for the government through income taxes].”*  
 39 *[Prov. 12:24, Bible, NKJV]*

40 After government has exploited our own sinfulness in this way so as to make us ripe for their political control, domination,  
 41 and oppression, a huge monolithic government bureaucracy steps in as our “sugar daddy” or “Parens Patriae” and not only  
 42 offers but demands to help us run our marriages, our financial affairs, our businesses, and forces us to pay taxes to support  
 43 the infrastructure needed to do this. In many cases, they force us to pay for services and benefits that we don’t want! What  
 44 business within a truly free economy could force you to buy or use their product other than a monopoly, and aren’t monopolies  
 45 illegal under the Sherman Antitrust Act? Tyrants in government thereby appear to the ignorant and complacent masses of  
 46 sheep as God’s avengers to “harvest” (STEAL) our property, our liberty, our labor, and everything else they covet and lust  
 47 after, and we not only willingly accept their domination, but we beg for it by demanding ever more increasing amounts of  
 48 “free” government services! The resulting evasion of responsibility and acquiescence to government usury by the sheep  
 49 manifests itself in many forms, a few of which we have summarized below:

50 **Table 2: The characteristics of the irresponsible and how the government panders to them**

#	Type of irresponsibility	How the government and liberal culture exploits this form of irresponsibility for their own gain	How the churches reward and encourage this type of irresponsibility
1	Do not want to take responsibility for the consequences of their sin	Passing laws that legalize sinful behaviors. Promising to pass such laws during election time in order to curry favor with voters.	Smorgasbord religion. Pick the set of beliefs that best benefits you. Focus on “grace” and “love” absent an emphasis on obeying God’s laws.

#	Type of irresponsibility	How the government and liberal culture exploits this form of irresponsibility for their own gain	How the churches reward and encourage this type of irresponsibility
2	Do not want to take responsibility for supporting themselves	Creating Social welfare programs such as Medicare, Welfare, Temporary Aid to Needy Families (TANF), food stamps.	Tithes the churches receive are supposed to be used for charity purposes but pastors jealously guard their contributions to maximize their "take". Then they try to steer the sheep toward government entitlement programs to make up for their greed and their lack of charity.
3	Do not want to take responsibility for their sexual sin	Passes laws allowing children to get condoms in schools. Teaches sex education instead of abstinence in schools. Institutes "don't ask don't tell" policies in the military. Supreme court declaring abortion legal, which is the murder of defenseless children.	Churches look the other way when parishioners get abortions and do not protest the holocaust of abortion by participating in such things as Operation Rescue.
4	Do not want to take responsibility for making their marriage work	Offer marriage licenses that put family court judges in charge of you, your income, and all your assets.	Churches also demanding that their parishioners get a marriage license before they will officiate a ceremony. That way people getting married don't become the churches problem, but instead can be handled by corrupted family courts.
5	Do not want to take responsibility for educating or raising their kids	Offer public schools, so that parents do not have to confederate and start private Christian schools to educate their children. Teaching the young sinful behaviors such as homosexuality, abortion, drugs so they make easy serfs of government. Showing them how to fill out income tax returns in high school before they even know how to balance a checkbook.	Pastors avoiding moral training in church, so that children growing up in single-parent families never learn how to govern themselves from their busy parents and must therefore depend on government to do for them what they cannot do for themselves.
6	Do not want to take responsibility for their retirement	Offer Socialist Security and federal retirement programs and do not offer employees the option of taking money earmarked for retirement and investing and controlling it themselves. This leaves large sums of money in control of the government, which they then use as a carrot to force you to pay income taxes because if you don't, they will turn it over to the IRS.	Not warning people that they should not depend on government and that they should take 100% responsibility for themselves.
7	Do not want to tithe to their church	Federal subsidies for charities, which carry with it the requirement for the churches to not criticize government or oppose its illegal enforcement of income tax code. Example: President Bush's faith-based initiative.	Pastors not chastising parishioners who do not tithe for their greed and robbery of God, for fear of scaring away the sheep. Pastors ingratiating or poaching generous parishioners (sheep) from other churches to join their church.
8	Do not want to take responsibility for bad business decisions	Creating a privileged status called "corporations", in which liability for wrongdoing is limited. This encourages reckless investment, bad business practices, and corruption like we have been seeing lately with Enron, Worldcom, etc. Income taxes on corporations then, amount essentially to "liability insurance".	Not censuring or excommunicating those in the congregation who have committed civil crimes involving business corruption and refuse to repent.
9	Do not want to take responsibility for hurting others in the process of operating a motor vehicle	Government passes laws forcing people to have insurance in order to have the "privilege" of driving.	

1 The ultimate result of the universal and complete adoption of the above concepts is as follows, which is a parody of the  
2 content of the Bible, Psalm 23:

3 *DEMOCRAT'S 23<sup>rd</sup> PSALM*

4  
5 *The government is my Shepherd,*  
6 *therefore I shall not work.*  
7 *It alloweth me to lie down on a good job.*  
8 *It leadeth me beside still factories;*  
9 *it destroyeth my initiative,*  
10 *It leadeth me in the path of a parasite*  
11 *for politic's sake.*

12  
13 *Yea, though I walk through the valley*  
14 *of laziness and deficit spending,*  
15 *I will fear no evil, for the government is with me.*  
16

1                   *It prepareth an economic Utopia for me,*  
2                   *by borrowing from future generations.*  
3                   *It filleth my head with false security;*  
4                   *my inefficiency runneth over.*

5  
6                   *Surely the government should take care of me*  
7                   *all the days of my life!*  
8                   *And I will dwell in a welfare state forever and ever.*

9     In the legal field, the process of evading responsibility is called “avoiding liability”. Amazingly, the government openly  
10    admits that it is one big insurance company which exists to insulate people from all types of liability! Here is what one  
11    Congressman said during the Congressional debates on the Sixteenth Amendment, which is the income tax amendment:

12                   *“M. Thiers, the great French statesman, says, ‘a tax paid by a citizen to his government is like a premium paid*  
13                   *by the insured to the insurance company, and should be in proportion to the amount of property insured in one*  
14                   *case and the other to the amount of property protected or defended [or managed] by the government.’”*  
15                   *[44 Cong.Rec. 4959 (1909)]*

16    The natural consequence of the logic of the quote above is that the less responsibility and liability we are willing to assume  
17    for ourselves, the greater will be our tax rate and the corresponding slavery to government that goes with it. If you trace the  
18    percentage of the average American family’s income which goes to pay state and federal taxes over the last 100 years, we  
19    can see in numerical terms the shift away from personal responsibility and the rise of the “collective” as the sovereign in our  
20    society. This information reveals how we have abandoned the original Constitutional Republican model based on faith and  
21    personal responsibility, and gradually drifted to a socialist/humanistic economy like most of the rest of the nations in the  
22    world. God warned us that this would happen but we simply refuse to heed Him because of the hedonistic stupor our  
23    government has put us into by bribing us with “free” government benefits and programs subsidized with STOLEN loot  
24    through illegally enforcing the income tax code:

25                   *“And they rejected His statutes and His covenant that He had made with their fathers, and His testimonies [His*  
26                   *Law/Bible] which He had testified against them; they followed [government] idols, became idolaters, and went*  
27                   *after the nations who were all around them, concerning whom the LORD had charged them that they should*  
28                   *not do like them. So they left all the commandments of the LORD their God, made for themselves a molded*  
29                   *image and two calves, made a wooden image and worshiped all the host of heaven, and served Baal. And they*  
30                   *caused their sons and daughters to pass through the fire, practiced witchcraft and soothsaying, and sold*  
31                   *themselves [through usurious taxes] to do evil in the sight of the LORD, to provoke Him to anger. Therefore*  
32                   *the LORD was very angry with Israel, and removed them from His sight; there was none left but the tribe of*  
33                   *Judah alone.”*  
34                   *[2 Kings 17:15-18, Bible, NKJV]*

35    One congressman has actually quantified this shift from personal to collective responsibility in a wonderful article entitled  
36    “*The Coming Crisis: How Government Dependency Threatens America’s Freedom*” available on our website at:

37    <http://famguardian.org/Subjects/Freedom/Articles/ComingCrisis-01508.pdf>

38    Governments therefore know that people don’t want to have to accept responsibility or liability and they use this sinful human  
39    tendency to expand their power and revenues by transferring responsibility to themselves. The transfer of responsibility from  
40    us as individuals to the government cannot occur, however, without a transfer of sovereignty with it. *Sovereignty and*  
41    *dependency are mutually exclusive.* The buck has to stop somewhere, and when we won’t take responsibility for ourselves,  
42    we have to surrender sovereignty to the collective democracy, and this eventually leads to socialism and humanism. This  
43    abdication of our responsibilities also amounts to a violation of God’s laws. Christians have a MUCH higher calling with  
44    their God than simply to depend on a bloated and evil socialist government to subsidize their idleness and hedonism with  
45    funds that were stolen from their brother through illegal extortion and constructive fraud:

46                   *“You shall not follow a crowd to do evil; nor shall you testify in a dispute so as to turn aside after many to pervert*  
47                   *justice.”*  
48                   *[Exodus 23:2, Bible, NKJV]*  
49

50                   *“Now about brotherly love we do not need to write to you, for you yourselves have been taught by God to love*  
51                   *each other. And in fact, you do love all the brothers throughout Macedonia. Yet we urge you, brothers, to do so*  
52                   *more and more.*

1 ***"Make it your ambition to lead a quiet life, to mind your own business and to work with your hands, just as***  
2 ***we told you, so that your daily life may win the respect of outsiders and so that you will not be dependent on***  
3 ***anybody."***  
4 *[1 Thess. 4:9-12, Bible, NIV]*

5 There is nothing new to this government approach of encouraging irresponsibility and indemnifying a person from liability  
6 for their own sinful actions. Government is simply imitating God's approach. Throughout the Bible, God warns us that we  
7 will be held personally liable for all of our choices and actions. That liability will occur on judgment day:

8 *"And as it is **appointed for men to die once, but after this the judgment**, so Christ was offered once to bear the*  
9 *sins of many. To those who eagerly wait for Him He will appear a second time, apart from sin, for salvation. **For***  
10 ***the law**, having a shadow of the good things to come, and not the very image of the things, **can never** with these*  
11 *same sacrifices, which they offer continually year by year, **make those who approach perfect** [in the sight of*  
12 *God]"*  
13 *[[Hebrews 9:27-28](#), 10:1, Bible, NKJV]*

14 Here you can see that God is talking about final judgment for our actions and choices, and He is implying that unless we are  
15 *perfect* in His eyes at that judgment, then we are condemned. However, God is also promising indemnification from personal  
16 liability, which here is called "salvation" to those who "eagerly wait for Him". Faith in and obedience to Christ is basically  
17 being offered here as an insurance policy against the final judgment and wrath of God. That obedience manifests itself in  
18 following the two great commandments that Christ revealed to us in Mark 12:28-33:

19 *Then one of the scribes came, and having heard them reasoning together, perceiving that He had answered*  
20 *them well, asked Him, "Which is the first commandment of all?"*

21 *Jesus answered him, "The first of all the commandments is: "Hear, O Israel, the LORD our God, the LORD is*  
22 *one. And you shall love the LORD your God with all your heart, with all your soul, with all your mind, and with*  
23 *all your strength. This is the first commandment. And the second, like it, is this: "You shall love your neighbor*  
24 *as yourself. There is no other commandment greater than these."*

25 *So the scribe said to Him, "Well said, Teacher. You have spoken the truth, for there is one God, and there is no*  
26 *other but He. And to love Him with all the heart, with all the understanding, with all the soul, and with all the*  
27 *strength, and to love one's neighbor as oneself, is more than all the whole burnt offerings and sacrifices."*  
28 *[[Mark 12:28-33](#), Bible, NKJV]*  
29

30 *"For all the law is fulfilled in one word, even in this: 'You shall love your neighbor as yourself.'"*  
31 *[[Gal 5:14](#), Bible, NKJV]*

32 The important thing to remember is that there is a BIG difference between man's and God's approach toward encouraging  
33 people to avoid liability. Faith produces salvation and indemnification because it makes us appear "perfect" in God's eyes,  
34 but it does not relieve us from personal liability for obeying God's laws.

#### 35 *Faith Without Works Is Dead*

36 *What does it profit, my brethren, if someone says he has faith but does not have works? Can faith save him? If a*  
37 *brother or sister is naked and destitute of daily food, and one of you says to them, "Depart in peace, be warmed*  
38 *and filled," but you do not give them the things which are needed for the body, what does it profit? Thus also faith*  
39 *by itself, if it does not have works, is dead.*

40 *But someone will say, "You have faith, and I have works." Show me your faith without your works, and I will*  
41 *show you my faith by my works. You believe that there is one God. You do well. Even the demons believe--and*  
42 *tremble! But do you want to know, O foolish man, that faith without works is dead? Was not Abraham our father*  
43 *justified by works when he offered Isaac his son on the altar? **Do you see that faith was working together with***  
44 ***his works, and by works faith was made perfect?** And the Scripture was fulfilled which says, "Abraham believed*  
45 *God, and it was accounted to him for righteousness." And he was called the friend of God. **You see then that a***  
46 ***man is justified by works, and not by faith only.***

47 *Likewise, was not Rahab the harlot also justified by works when she received the messengers and sent them out*  
48 *another way?*

49 ***For as the body without the spirit is dead, so faith without works is dead also.***  
50 *[[James 2:14-26](#), Bible, NKJV]*

1 Faith in God does not allow us to *avoid* the final judgment, but our works provide *evidence* of our faith and obedience at that  
2 judgment. The final judgment is like a court trial. With no admissible evidence of our faith at this trial, we will be convicted  
3 of our sin and suffer God's wrath.

4 "Then I saw a great throne and Him who sat on it, from whose face the earth and the heaven fled away. And  
5 there was found no place for them.

6 "And I saw the dead, small and great, standing before God, and books were opened. And another book was  
7 opened, which is the Book of Life. And the dead were judged according to their works, by the things which were  
8 written in the books.

9 "The sea gave up the dead who were in it, and Death and Hades delivered up the dead who were in them. And  
10 they were judged, each one according to his works.

11 "Then Death and Hades were cast into the lake of fire. This is the second death.

12 "And anyone not found written in the Book of Life was cast into the lake of fire."  
13 [Revelation 20:11-15, Bible, NKJV]

14 The purpose of God's law is to teach us how to love God and our neighbor (see the Ten Commandments in Exodus 20). The  
15 Bible says that obedience to God's laws even after we profess faith is *still* mandatory:

16 "Not everyone who says to Me, 'Lord Lord,' shall enter the kingdom of heaven, but he who does the will of My  
17 Father in heaven."  
18 [Matt. 7:21, Bible, NKJV]

19 "But whoever keeps His word, truly the love of God is perfected in him. By this we know that we are in Him."  
20 [1 John 2:5, Bible, NKJV]

21 "For this is the love of God, that we keep His commandments. And His commandments are not burdensome."  
22 [1 John 5:3, Bible, NKJV]

23 "Therefore, to him who knows to do good and does not DO it, to him it is sin."  
24 [James 4:17, Bible, NKJV]

25 "Blessed are those who do His commandments, that they may have the right to the tree of life, and may  
26 enter through the gates into the city."  
27 [Rev. 22:14; Bible, NKJV]

28 "But he who looks into the perfect law of liberty and continues in it, and is not a forgetful hearer but a  
29 DOER of the work, this one will be blessed in what he does."  
30 [James 1:25, Bible, NKJV]

31 The government, on the other hand, tells us that we can be criminals under God's law and avoid liability and responsibility  
32 for our sins on earth as long as we join the "collective" and worship the politicians and the government as our false god by  
33 surrendering control over our earnings from labor to that god in the form of income taxes. Basically, we have to serve the  
34 government with our labor, and the Bible calls that kind of servitude "worship". Below is an excerpt from the Ten  
35 Commandments demonstrating this:

36 "You shall have no other gods before Me.

37 "You shall not make for yourself a carved image--any likeness of anything that is in heaven above, or that is in  
38 the earth beneath, or that is in the water under the earth; you shall not bow down to them nor serve  
39 [worship] them. For I, the LORD your God, am a jealous God, visiting the iniquity of the fathers upon  
40 the children to the third and fourth generations of those who hate Me, <sup>6</sup>but showing mercy to thousands, to those  
41 who love Me and keep My commandments."  
42 [Exodus 20:3-4, Bible, NKJV]



1 That false government promise of no liability for sin was the same promise that Satan made when he tempted the first sinner,  
2 Eve. Satan promised Eve that if she sinned by eating the forbidden fruit of the tree, then she would *not* suffer the consequence  
3 of death promised by God. Remember that the Bible says “The wages of sin is death” (Romans 6:23) and Satan lied when  
4 he promised Eve that she would *not* die. In short, there would be no liability for her violation of God’s law and instead, she  
5 would be a “god” herself:

6 *Then the serpent said to the woman, “You will **not** surely die [no liability]. For God knows that in the day you*  
7 *eat of it your eyes will be opened, and you will be like God, knowing good and evil.”*  
8 *[Genesis 3:4-5; Bible, NKJV]*

9 In a “collective” form of government such as a democracy, the “collective” is the false god to be worshipped. That collective  
10 is called the “state” in legal terms. When we join that collective, we become like a god, and share in the unjust authority and  
11 power that it has. That unjust authority expresses itself through the abuse of voting rights and jury service in a way that  
12 actually injures our neighbor and offends God because it attempts to indemnify us from the consequences and liability for  
13 our sin and irresponsibility.

14 A limited liability company is one in which the liability of each shareholder is limited to the amount of his shares or stocks,  
15 or to a sum fixed by guarantee called "limited liability guarantee". The purpose of limited liability laws is to limit  
16 responsibility. Although the ostensible purpose is to protect the shareholders, the practical effect is to limit their responsibility  
17 and therefore encourage recklessness in investment. A limited liability economy is socialistic. By seeking to protect people,  
18 a limited liability economy merely transfers responsibility away from the people to the state, where "central government  
19 planning" supposedly obviates personal responsibility. Limited liability encourages people to take chances with limited risks,  
20 and to sin economically without paying the price. Limited liability laws rest on the fallacy that payment for economic sins  
21 need not be made. In actuality, payment is simply transferred to others. Limited liability laws were unpopular in earlier,  
22 Christian eras but have flourished in the Darwinian world. They rest on important religious presuppositions.

23 In a statement central to his account, C.S. Lewis described his preference, prior to his conversion to Christianity, for a  
24 materialistic, atheistic universe. The advantages of such a world are the very limited demands it makes on a man.

25 *To such a craven and materialist's universe has the enormous attraction that it offered you limited liabilities. No*  
26 *strictly infinite disaster could overtake you in it. Death ended all. And if ever finite disasters proved greater than*  
27 *one wished to bear, suicide would always be possible. The horror of the Christian universe was that it had no*  
28 *door marked Exit...But, of course, what mattered most of all was my deep-seated hatred of authority, my*  
29 *monstrous individualism, my lawlessness. No word in my vocabulary expressed deeper hatred than the word*  
30 *Interference. But Christianity placed at the center what then seemed to me a transcendental Interferer. If this*  
31 *picture were true then no sort of "treaty with reality" could ever be possible. There was no region even in the*  
32 *innermost depth of one's soul (nay, there least of all) which one could surround with a barbed wire fence and*  
33 *guard with a notice of No Admittance. And that was what I wanted; some area, however small, of which I could*  
34 *say to all other beings, "This is my business and mine only."<sup>159</sup>*

35 This is an excellent summation of the matter. The atheist wants a limited liability universe, and he seeks to create a limited  
36 liability political and economic order. The more socialistic he becomes, the more he demands a maximum advantage and a  
37 limited liability from his social order, an impossibility.

38 In reality, living with the fact that the universe and our world carry always unlimited liabilities is the best way to assure  
39 security and advantage. To live with reality, and to seek progress within its framework, is man's best security.

40 The curses and the blessings of the law stress man's unlimited liability to both curses and blessings as a result of disobedience  
41 or obedience to the law. In [Deuteronomy 28:2](#) and [15](#), we are told that the curses and blessings come upon us and "overtake"  
42 us. Man cannot step outside of the world of God's consequence. At every moment and at every point man is overtaken,  
43 surrounded, and totally possessed by the unlimited liability of God's universe.

44 Man seeks to escape this unlimited liability either through a denial of the true God, or by a pseudo-acceptance which denies  
45 the meaning of God. In atheism, the attitude of man is well summarized by William Ernest Henley's poem, "Invictus."  
46 Henley boasted of his "unconquerable soul" and declared,

47 *I am the master of my fate;*  
48 *I am the captain of my soul*

<sup>159</sup> C.S. Lewis, *Surprised by Joy* (New York: Harcourt, Brace, 1956), p. 171 f.

1 Not surprisingly, the poem has been very popular with immature and rebellious adolescents.

2 Pseudo-acceptance, common to mysticism, pietism, and pseudo evangelicals, claims to have "accepted Christ" while denying  
3 His law. One college youth, very much given to evangelizing everyone in sight, not only denied the law as an article of his  
4 faith, in speaking to this writer, but went further. Asked if he would approve of young men and women working in a house  
5 of prostitution as whores and pimps to convert the inmates, he did not deny this as a valid possibility. He went on to affirm  
6 that many of his friends were converting girls and patrons wholesale by invading the houses to evangelize one and all. He  
7 also claimed wholesale conversion of homosexuals, but he could cite no homosexuals who ceased the practice after their  
8 conversion; nor any whores or their patrons who left the houses with their "evangelizers." Such lawless "evangelism" is only  
9 blasphemy.

10 In the so-called "Great Awakening" in colonial New England, antinomianism, chiliasm, and false perfectionism went hand  
11 in hand. Many of these "holy ones" forsook their marriage for adulterous relations, denied the law, and claimed immediate  
12 perfection and immortality.<sup>160</sup>

13 What such revivalism and pietism espouses is a limited liability universe in God's name. It is thus atheism under the banner  
14 of Christ. It claims freedom from God's sovereignty and denies predestination. It denies the law, and it denies the validity  
15 of the curses and blessings of the law. Such a religion is interested only in what it can get out of God: hence, "grace" is  
16 affirmed, and "love," but not the law, nor God's sovereign power and decree. But smorgasbord religion is only humanism,  
17 because it affirms the right of man to pick and choose what he wants; as the ultimate arbiter of his fate, man is made captain  
18 of his soul, with an assist from God. Pietism thus offers limited liability religion, not Biblical faith.

19 According to Heer, the medieval mystic Eckhart gave to the soul a "sovereign majesty together with God. The next step was  
20 taken by the disciple, Johannes of Star Alley, who asked if the word of the soul was not as mighty as the word of the  
21 Heavenly Father."<sup>161</sup> In such a faith, the new sovereign is man, and unlimited liability is in process of being transferred to  
22 God.

23 In terms of the Biblical doctrine of God, absolutely no liabilities are involved in the person and work of the Godhead. God's  
24 eternal decree and sovereign power totally govern and circumscribe all reality, which is His creation. Because man is a  
25 creature, man faces unlimited liability; his sins have temporal and eternal consequences, and he cannot at any point escape  
26 God. Van Til has summed up the matter powerfully:

27 *The main point is that if man could look anywhere and not be confronted with the revelation of God then he could*  
28 *not sin in the Biblical sense of the term. Sin is the breaking of the law of God. God confronts man everywhere.*  
29 *He cannot in the nature of the case confront man anywhere if he does not confront him everywhere. God is one;*  
30 *the law is one. If man could press one button on the radio of his experience and not hear the voice of God then*  
31 *he would always press that button and not the others. But man cannot even press the button of his own self-*  
32 *consciousness without hearing the requirement of God.<sup>162</sup>*

33 But man wants to reverse this situation. Let God be liable, if He fails to deliver at man's request. Let man declare that his  
34 own experience pronounces himself to be saved, and then he can continue his homosexuality or work in a house of  
35 prostitution, all without liability. Having pronounced the magic formula, "I accept Jesus Christ as my personal lord and  
36 savior," man then transfers almost all the liability to Christ and can sin without at most more than a very limited liability.  
37 Christ cannot be accepted if His sovereignty, His law, and His word are denied. To deny the law is to accept a works religion,  
38 because it means denying God's sovereignty and assuming man's existence in independence of God's total law and  
39 government. In a world where God functions only to remove the liability of hell, and no law governs man, man works his  
40 own way through life by his own conscience. Man is saved, in such a world, by his own work of faith, of accepting Christ,  
41 not by Christ's sovereign acceptance of him. Christ said, "Ye have not chosen me, but I have chosen you" ([John 15:16](#)). The  
42 pietist insists that *he* has chosen Christ; it is *his* work, not Christ's. Christ, in such a faith, serves as an insurance agent, as a  
43 guarantee against liabilities, not as sovereign lord. This is paganism in Christ's name.

---

<sup>160</sup> C.C. Goen, *Revivalism and Separatism in New England, 1740-1800, Strict Congregationalists and Separate Baptists in the Great Awakening* (New Haven: Yale University Press, 1962), p. 200 f.

<sup>161</sup> Friedrich Heer, *The Intellectual History of Europe*, p. 179.

<sup>162</sup> Cornelius Van Til, *A Letter on Common Grace* (Philadelphia: Presbyterian and Reformed Publishing Company, 1955), p. 40 f.

1 In paganism, the worshipper was not in existence. Man did not worship the pagan deities, nor did services of worship occur.  
2 The temple was open every day as a place of business. The pagan entered the temple and bought the protection of a god by  
3 a gift or offering. If the god failed him, he thereafter sought the services of another. The pagan's quest was for an insurance,  
4 for limited liability and unlimited blessings, and, as the sovereign believer, he shopped around for the god who offered the  
5 most. Pagan religion was thus a transaction, and, as in all business transactions, no certainty was involved. The gods could  
6 not always deliver, but man's hope was that, somehow, his liabilities would be limited.

7 The "witness" of pietism, with its "victorious living," is to a like limited liability religion. A common "witness" is, "Praise  
8 the Lord, since I accepted Christ, all my troubles are over and ended." The witness of Job in his suffering was, "Though he  
9 slay me, yet will I trust him" ([Job 13:15](#)). St. Paul recited the long and fearful account of his sufferings *after* accepting Christ:  
10 in prison, beaten, shipwrecked, stoned, betrayed, "in hunger and thirst,...in cold and nakedness" ([II Cor. 11:23-27](#)). Paul's  
11 was not a religion of limited liability nor of deliverance from all troubles because of his faith.

12 **The world is a battlefield, and there are casualties and wounds in battle, but the battle is the Lord's and its end is**  
13 **victory. To attempt an escape from the battle is to flee from the liabilities of warfare against sinful men for battle with**  
14 **an angry God. To face the battle is to suffer the penalties of man's wrath and the blessings of God's grace and law.**

15 Apart from Jesus Christ, men are judicially dead, i.e., under a death sentence, before God, no matter how moral their works.  
16 With regeneration, the beginning of true life, man does not move out from under God's unlimited liability. Rather, with  
17 regeneration, man moves from the world of unlimited liability under the curse, to the world of unlimited liability under God's  
18 blessings. The world and man were cursed when Adam and Eve sinned, but, in Jesus Christ, man is blessed, and the world  
19 progressively reclaimed and redeemed for Him. In either case, the world is under God's law. Blessings and curses are thus  
20 inseparable from God's law and are simply different relationships to it.

21 Men inescapably live in a world of unlimited liability, but with a difference. The covenant-breaker, at war with God and  
22 unregenerate, has an unlimited liability for the curse. Hell is the final statement of that unlimited liability. The objections to  
23 hell, and the attempts to reduce it to a place of probation or correction, are based on a rejection of unlimited liability. But the  
24 unregenerate has, according to Scripture, an unlimited liability to judgment and the curse. On the other hand, the regenerate  
25 man, who walks in obedience to Jesus Christ, his covenant head, has a limited liability to judgment and the curse. The  
26 unlimited liability of God's wrath was assumed for the elect by Jesus Christ upon the cross. The regenerate man is judged  
27 for his transgressions of the law of God, but his liability here is a limited one, whereas his liability for blessings in this life  
28 and in heaven are unlimited. The unregenerate can experience a limited measure of blessing in this life, and none in the world  
29 to come; they have at best a limited liability for blessing.

30 **Man thus cannot escape an unlimited liability universe. The important question is this: in which area is he exposed**  
31 **to unlimited liability, to an unlimited liability to the curse because of his separation from God, or to an unlimited**  
32 **liability to blessing because of his faith in, union with, and obedience to Jesus Christ?**

33 Along the lines of this section, a reader sent us the following poem which summarizes why our lives will amount to nothing  
34 if we do not accept personal responsibility for ourself and learn to accept the unlimited liability that God bestowed upon us  
35 as part of his death sentence for our disobedience in the book of Genesis:

36 **Risk..**

37 *To weep...*  
38 *is to risk appearing sentimental,*

39 *To hope...*  
40 *is to risk despair,*

41 *To reach out for another...*  
42 *is to risk involvement,*

43 *To try...*  
44 *is to risk failure,*

45 *To expose feelings...*  
46 *is to risk exposing your true self,*

1 To place your ideas, your dreams before the crowd...  
2 is to risk their loss,

3 To love is to risk...  
4 not being loved in return,

5 To live...  
6 is to risk dying,

7 But risks must be taken because the greatest hazard in life,  
8 is to risk nothing.

9 The person who risks nothing, does nothing, has nothing, and is nothing. They may avoid suffering and sorrow,  
10 but they cannot learn, feel, change, grow, love, and live. Chained by their certitudes, they are a slave, they have  
11 forfeited their freedom.

12 Only a person who risks.  
13 is free.

### 14 **11.3 How government and God compete to provide “protection”**

15 The goal of government is protection of the liberties of the sovereign public from evil and harm. Here is an example from  
16 the Declaration of Independence:

17 “We hold these truths to be self-evident, that all men are created equal, that they are endowed by their Creator  
18 with certain unalienable Rights, that among these are Life, Liberty and the pursuit of Happiness.--That to secure  
19 these rights, Governments are instituted among Men, deriving their just powers from the consent of the  
20 governed, --That whenever any Form of Government becomes destructive of these ends, it is the Right of the  
21 People to alter or to abolish it, and to institute new Government, laying its foundation on such principles and  
22 organizing its powers in such form, as to them shall seem most likely to effect their Safety and Happiness.”

23 Because God loves us, He has exactly the same purpose and goal as any just government should have. Here are a few  
24 examples of how the purpose of God is protection, and there are many more in the book of Psalm:

25 “O you afflicted one, tossed with tempest, and not comforted, behold, I will lay your stones with colorful gems,  
26 and lay your foundations with sapphires. I will make your pinnacles of rubies, your gates of crystal, and all your  
27 walls of precious stones. All your children shall be taught by the Lord, and great shall be the peace of your  
28 children. In righteousness you shall be established; you shall be far from oppression, for you shall not fear; and  
29 from terror, for it shall not come near you. Indeed they shall surely assemble, but not because of Me. Whoever  
30 assembles against you shall fall for your sake.

31 “Behold, I have created the blacksmith who blows the coals in the fire, who brings forth an instrument for his  
32 work; and I have created the spoiler to destroy. No weapon formed against you shall prosper, and every tongue  
33 which rises against you in judgment you shall condemn. This is the heritage of the servants of the Lord, and their  
34 righteousness is from Me,” says the Lord.”  
35 [Isaiah 54:11-17, Bible, NKJV]

36 As Christians, we should prefer God’s protection over government’s protection at all times. This is because we should trust  
37 the Lord and not man:

38 “It is better to trust the Lord  
39 Than to put confidence in man.  
40 It is better to trust in the Lord  
41 Than to put confidence in princes.”  
42 [Psalm 118:8-9, Bible, NKJV]

43 In the scripture above, the term “man” is synonymous with the words “nation” or “government”. Governments are simply  
44 collections of men and if we can’t put confidence in “men”, then we also can’t put confidence or trust in any collection of  
45 men, whether it be a corporation or a government. Here is one reason why:

46 “Arise, O Lord,  
47 Do not let man prevail:  
48 Let the nations be judged in Your sight.  
49 Put them in fear, O Lord,

1 ***That the nations may know themselves to be but men.***  
2 *[Psalm 9:19-20, Bible, NKJV]*

3 No collection of men, whether it be an organized jural society, a government, or simply a mob, can have any more rights than  
4 a single man, because the Constitution makes *the people*, not the government, the sovereigns (kings) and makes us all “equal”  
5 under the law. We covered the section of “equal protection of the law” earlier in the chapter, in fact. In particular, the  
6 Fourteenth Amendment section 1 guarantees “equal protection of the laws” to all. At the point when the Declaration of  
7 Independence was signed in 1776, we eliminated all “kings” and “rulers” in our society because that divinely inspired  
8 document said that *all of us* were endowed by God Himself with *equal*, inalienable rights, which implied that we all are *equal*  
9 under God’s laws and man’s laws:

10 *“We hold these truths to be self-evident, that **all men are created equal, that they are endowed by their Creator***  
11 ***[God] with certain unalienable Rights, that among these are Life, Liberty and the pursuit of Happiness.**”*

12 If we are all equal under the law, then our government may not discriminate against biological people for the benefit of its  
13 own statutory “employees” or the corporate entities which it creates in the furtherance of “commerce”. The real “king” in  
14 our society, then, is the people individually and collectively and public servants in government, from the President on down,  
15 simply serve them. Therefore, government statutory “employees” or public officers cannot have any more “privileges” or  
16 rights than private citizens. The public *servant* cannot be greater than his Master, which is you. The purpose for having  
17 juries in courts is so that the people can govern themselves, which relegates the judge to that of being simply a coach to ensure  
18 that they do it fairly and in a way that is consistent with the Constitution and respects the equal rights of others. The legal  
19 encyclopedia Corpus Juris Secundum and the United States supreme Court both confirmed the above conclusions somewhat  
20 when they said:

21 *“...when the United States enters into commercial business it abandons its sovereign capacity and is treated like*  
22 *any other corporation...”*  
23 *[91 Corpus Juris Secundum, United States, §4 (2003)]*

24 *“It has always been a part of the judicial function to determine whether the act of one party (**whether that party***  
25 ***be a single individual, an organized body, or the public as a whole**) operates to divest the other party of any*  
26 *rights of person or property. In every constitution is the guaranty against the taking of private property for public*  
27 *purposes without just compensation. “*  
28 *[Reagan v. Farmers Loan & Trust Co., 154 U.S. 362 (1894)]*

29 Here is another example of why we should trust the Lord instead of any man or collection of men in government for our  
30 protection, extracted again from the Bible:

31 *“For I was ashamed to request of the king an escort of soldiers and horsemen to help us against the enemy on*  
32 *the road, because we had spoken to the king, saying ‘The hand of our God is upon all those for good who seek*  
33 *Him, but His power and His wrath are against all those who forsake Him.’ So we fasted and entreated our God*  
34 *for this, and He answered our prayer.”*  
35 *[Ezra 8:21-22, Bible, NKJV]*

36 When governments have (or at least “should” have) the same loving goals as God in terms of protecting us (His children and  
37 His sheep/ flock) *equally* from evil and harm, then we are to submit to them. When they cease to be ministers of God’s justice  
38 or turn against God, then we should disobey those government laws that conflict with God’s laws or natural law.

39 *“We ought to obey God rather than men.”*  
40 *[Acts 5:27-29, Bible, NKJV]*

41 This *must* be so because we have a fiduciary duty to God himself to keep justice under His sacred law over and above any  
42 earthly law, and when our *servants* in government don’t or won’t do it, then it becomes *our* job as the Sovereigns and Masters  
43 to do the job they have failed to do as our agents and servants:

44 *“**Keep justice, and do righteousness,** for My salvation is about to come, and My righteousness is revealed.*  
45 *Blessed is the man who does this, and the son of man who lays hold of it; who keeps from defiling the Sabbath,*  
46 *and keeps his hand from doing any evil.”*  
47 *[Isaiah 56:1-2, Bible, NKJV]*

48 If we sit idly by and neglect our civic duties while subsidizing and encouraging our servants in government to breach their  
49 fiduciary duty to protect us because of our negligence and inattention, then we become accountable to God for the acts and

1 omissions of our agents and the harm that causes to our neighbor and our fellow man. This is vividly illustrated by the story  
2 of David and Bathsheeba in the Bible found in 2 Samuel Chapters 11 and 12. In that story, king David lusted after a beautiful  
3 married woman named Bathsheeba and had his servant send Bathsheeba's husband Uriah into battle to be killed (See 2 Sam.  
4 11:14-25). After Uriah was killed and David married Bathsheeba, first the Lord killed the child born of adultery and then here  
5 is what the Lord said to David about the acts of his servant/agent, and note that God held David, not his servant, responsible  
6 for the murder:

7 *[Then Nathan said to David] "Why have you despised the commandment of the Lord, to do evil in His sight? You*  
8 *have killed Uriah the Hittite with the sword; you have taken his wife to be your wife, and you have killed him with*  
9 *the sword of the people of Ammon. Now therefore, the sword shall never depart from your house, because you*  
10 *have despised Me, and have taken the wife of Uriah the Hittite to be your wife."*  
11 *[2 Sa 12:9, Bible, NKJV]*

12 Because both God and government have as their goal protection of their subjects or believers, you could say that both God  
13 and government are competitors for the affections, worship, and obedience of the people. This has been so throughout history.  
14 The whole notion behind the separation of church and state is aimed at making this competition fair and equal between these  
15 two competing sovereigns. That is why churches are not supposed to involve themselves in politics if they want to maintain  
16 their tax exempt status and why governments may not tax churches: because taxation by government of churches or political  
17 advocacy against government by churches would destroy that perfect separation of powers.

18 When government becomes too oppressive, then the healthy competition between church and state ensures a steady  
19 convergence back to the perfect balance of powers that Natural Law requires. For instance, if government raises its tax rates  
20 too high, then everyone will either donate everything they have to the church or become churches (Corporation Sole, for  
21 instance) in order to avoid government taxes and control. Likewise, when church gets to be too big or influential, then the  
22 government tries to step in and pass laws and ordinances to limit its power or worse yet, creates its own state-sanctioned  
23 church, as the kings of England did with the Anglican church. In that case, the church becomes another means of state control.  
24 America was founded by Quakers in the 1600's who were trying to escape state control of the Anglican church so they could  
25 worship freely according to their conscience and without government interference. See section 5.2.1 for a fascinating history  
26 of the creation and founding of America.

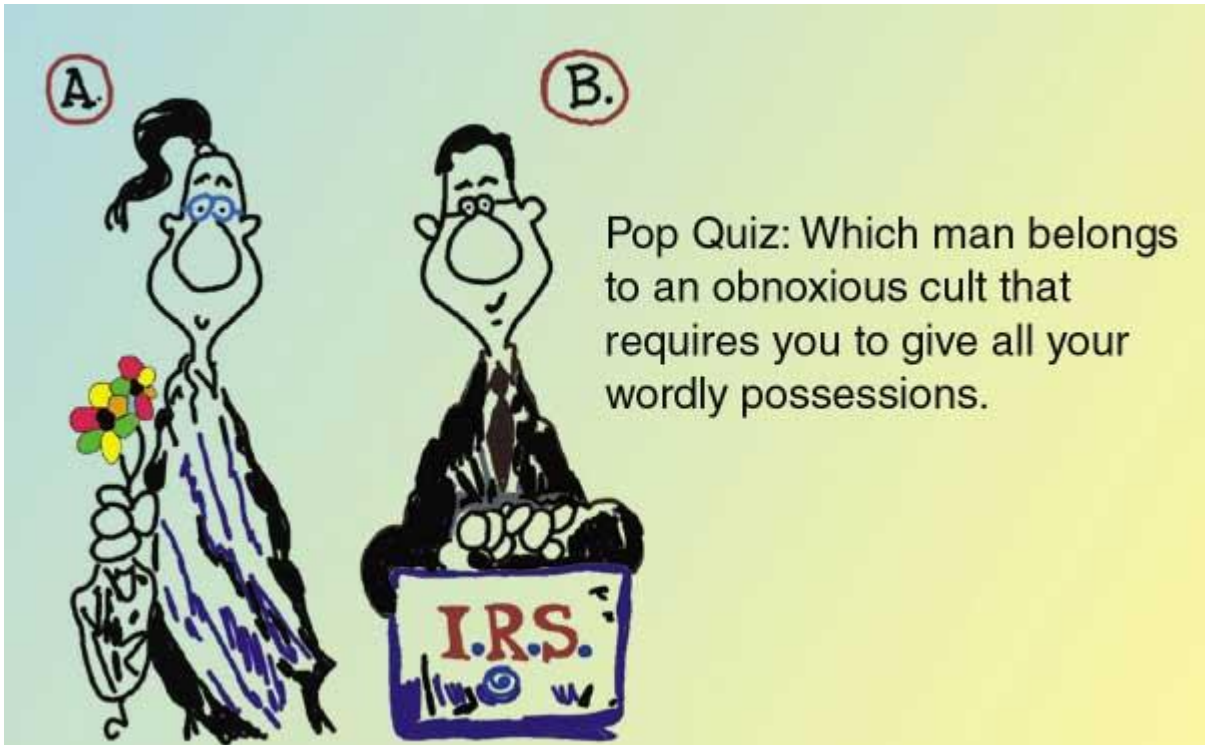
27 When governments grow too big, the competition between church and state for the affections and loyalty of the public favors  
28 government and thereby prejudices the influences of churches and God on the people. At that point, churches and believers  
29 have a moral responsibility for political activism and reform. This political imbalance is perpetuated by a combination of:  
30 1. Media advocacy; 2. Unjust laws that discriminate against religious activities; 3. Dumbing down of the population in  
31 regards to religious issues and legal issues. Government thus becomes a substitute for God or an idol in this case, and this  
32 violates the First Commandment to put God first and have no other gods (see Exodus 20:1-11, Bible, NKJV). Modern  
33 government has indeed replaced God and become an idol, and that this condition poses a great threat to our freedoms and  
34 liberties, and invites the wrath of God. Ultimately, the result will be subjection and slavery of the people to their rulers and  
35 a police state the likes of which this country has never seen. The people will be lead like lemmings into government and  
36 legal profession captivity and slavery because of their ignorance and lack of faith or trust in God.

37 *"The Gentiles shall know that the house of Israel went into captivity for their iniquity: because they were*  
38 *unfaithful to Me, therefore I hid My face from them. I gave them into the hand of their enemies, and they all fell*  
39 *by the [legal] sword. According to their uncleanness and according to their transgressions I have dealt with*  
40 *them, and hidden My face from them."*  
41 *[Ezekiel 39:23-24, Bible, NKJV]*

42 How has God "hidden his face"? By the outlawing of simple prayer in the schools, by the removal of the ten commandments  
43 and crosses from public buildings and parks, by the removal of religious teachings from our classrooms, and by the passing  
44 of government laws that clearly violate God's laws.

#### 45 **11.4 Government has become idolatry and a false religion**

46 **Figure 1: Government Religion Cartoon**



1  
2  
3 *"Tyranny is the inevitable consequence of rule from above, a point that the Founding Fathers understood well when they separated the powers of a small and restrained government.*

4  
5  
6  
7 *"Liberty is a human achievement, the product of a 1,000-year struggle. We have taken too lightly our obligation to "earn it anew." Consequently, we are ceasing to possess 'that which thy fathers bequeathed thee.' Our legislative political order has become an administrative state in which 'We the People' are increasingly fearful of the government that we allegedly control.*

8  
9 *"If Thomas Jefferson was right, we cannot get self-rule back without a revolution."  
[Jeff Bowman]*

10 God, in Exodus 20:3, as part of the Ten Commandments, said:

11 *"You shall have no other gods before Me."*

12 Our life as Christians should revolve around putting God at the **top** of our priority list. That means supporting His causes  
13 with the **first** fruits of our labor and tithing to the church. Here's the scripture to back up this assertion:

14  
15  
16 *"Honor the Lord with your possessions, and with the firstfruits of all your increase; so your barns will be filled with plenty, and your vats will overflow with new wine."  
[Prov. 3:9-10]*

17 But how can we tithe to the church and put God **first**, if we illegally pay almost 50% of our income to all the following  
18 combined taxes before God even gets his first dime in out tithes?:

- 19  
20  
21  
22  
23
1. Federal income tax (25% of our income).
  2. State income tax. (15% of our income)
  3. Property tax. (5% of our income)
  4. Sales tax. (2% of our income)
  5. Estate (Death) taxes. (up to 100% of our income and our assets over a lifetime!)

24 Instead, the first fruits of our labor and almost 50% of our living income (and 100% of our assets when we die) go to the  
25 GOVERNMENT first in the form of income taxes, before we ever even see a dime of our own income, and we put way too  
26 much emphasis and reliance on the government to help us. In effect, we allow or permit or volunteer ourselves to become

1 government slaves and they become our masters and thus we lose our sovereignty and thereby make God of *secondary*  
 2 importance, presumably because we want a hand-out and government “security”. But listen to what God says about this type  
 3 of abomination:

4 *“Cursed is the one who trusts in man [and by implication, governments made up of men], who depends on*  
 5 *flesh for his strength and whose heart turns away from the Lord. He will be like a bush in the wastelands; he*  
 6 *will not see prosperity when it comes. He will dwell in the parched places of the desert, in a salt land where no*  
 7 *one lives. But blessed is the man who trusts in the Lord, whose confidence is in Him. He will be like a tree*  
 8 *planted by the water that sends out its roots by the stream. It does not fear when heat comes; its leaves are always*  
 9 *green. It has no worries in a year of drought and never fails to bear fruit.”*  
 10 *[Jeremiah 17:5-8, Bible, NIV]*

11 By surrendering our sovereignty and letting government become our god or our cult, we have committed idolatry: relying  
 12 more on government and man than we do on God or ourselves to meet our needs. Jesus Himself, however, specifically  
 13 warned us not to do this:

14 *“Away with you , Satan! For it is written, ‘You shall worship the Lord your God, and Him ONLY [NOT the*  
 15 *government!] you shall serve.’”*  
 16 *[Matt. 4:10, Bible, NKJV]*

17 This kind of pernicious evil violates Psalm 118:8-9, which says: *“It is better to trust in the Lord than to put confidence in*  
 18 *man. It is better to trust the Lord than to put confidence in princes.”* I translate “princes” to mean “government”. Likewise,  
 19 such idolatry also violates Psalm 146:3, which says: *“Put not your trust in princes, [nor] in the son of man, in whom [there*  
 20 *is] no help. “*

21 But can government REALLY be a religion from a genuine legal perspective and can we prove this in court? Absolutely!  
 22 Let’s look at the definition of “religion” from Black’s Law Dictionary to answer this question, and notice the highlighted  
 23 words:

24 *“Religion. Man’s relation to Divinity, to reverence, worship, obedience, and submission to mandates and*  
 25 *precepts of supernatural or superior beings. In its broadest sense includes all forms of belief in the existence of*  
 26 *superior beings exercising power over human beings by volition, imposing rules of conduct, with future*  
 27 *rewards and punishments. Bond uniting man to God, and a virtue whose purpose is to render God worship*  
 28 *due him as source of all being and principle of all government of things. Nikulnikoff v. Archbishop, etc., of*  
 29 *Russian Orthodox Greek Catholic Church, 142 Misc. 894, 255 N.Y.S. 653, 663.”*  
 30 *[Black’s Law Dictionary, Sixth Edition, p. 1292]*

31 Now we will take the highlighted words from this definition of “religion” above and put them into a table and compare  
 32 worship of God on the left to worship of government on the right. The results are very surprising. The attributes in the left  
 33 column of the table below are listed in the same sequence presented in the above definition and have asterisks next to them.  
 34 Those attributes without asterisks provide additional means of comparison between worship of God and worship of  
 35 government (god with a little “g”).

36 **Table 3: Worship of God (Christianity) v. Worship of Government (idolatry)**

<i>Attributes of “religion”</i>	<i>Worship of God (Christianity: “God” with a Big “G”)</i>	<i>Worship of Government (Idolatry: “god” with a little “g”) Government=“The Beast”: Rev. 13:11-18</i>
<i>Lawgiver</i>	God (see Isaiah 33:22)	Legislature or democratic majority
<i>Law</i>	Bible	1. Constitution, statutes, and regulations (in a republic) 2. Whatever judge or ruler says (tyranny or oligarchy)
<i>Purpose of obedience to Law</i>	Protection (see Isaiah 54:11-17)	Protection
<i>Method of rendering “worship”</i>	1. Faith 2. Prayer 3. Fasting 4. Service to fellow man/family 5. Reverencing (respecting) God	1. Paying income taxes 2. Surrendering rights to judicial jurisdiction and government authority 3. Not questioning or challenging authority. 4. Dying in defense of (if serving in military).



<i>Attributes of “religion”</i>	<i>Worship of God (Christianity: “God” with a Big “G”)</i>	<i>Worship of Government (Idolatry: “god” with a little “g”) Government=“The Beast”: Rev. 13:11-18</i>
<i>“Submission to mandates and precepts of”*</i>	God	Man (The Beast/Satan)
<i>“Superior being”*</i>	God	President/Congressmen/Mammon (the BEAST/Satan)
<i>What makes “superior beings” superior</i>	Agents of a sovereign God	Not subject to the <u>same</u> laws as everyone else (hypocrisy)
<i>Method of expressing “faith” in and obedience to “superior being”</i>	Trust, obedience, worship, church attendance	1. “Presumption” that government servants have the authority of law. 2. Dependency on and trust in socialistic government welfare programs
<i>“Exercising power”*</i>	1. Church or clergy discipline, censure, or excommunication while alive. 2. Authority over your destiny after you die.	Jurisdiction within the territorial limits of the sovereign
<i>Source of power</i>	Love	Fear, insecurity
<i>“Rules of conduct”*</i>	God’s law (Bible or Natural Law)	Man’s law (statutes)
<i>“Future rewards”*</i>	Eternal life	Absence of IRS harassment for not paying taxes
<i>“Future punishment”*</i>	1. Slavery to sin for those who disobey. 2. Eternal damnation	Harassment, oppression for those who challenge government authority
<i>“Bond uniting man” to “superior being”*</i>	Love	Government- granted “Privileges”, covetousness, limited liability (in the case of corporations)
<i>Source of “virtue”*</i>	“God” and his worship	“Self” and “Vain Rulers” and their aggrandizement
<i>Object of belief/faith*</i>	Trust in God (see Psalm 118:8-9)	Trust in man/the flesh (see Jeremiah 17:5-8)
<i>Influence spread through</i>	Evangelizing	1. Fear, uncertainty, insecurity introduced through media and demagoguery. 2. Propaganda 3. Military and political warfare. 4. Bribing sheep into submission with government benefits derived from stolen/extorted tax money.
<i>Spokesperson</i>	Pope/prophet	Judge (witchdoctor)
<i>How spokespersons are appointed</i>	Ordained	Appointed by President/Governor
<i>Representatives of spokesperson</i>	Priests	Lawyers (scumbag Pharisees)
<i>Attire of spokesperson</i>	Black Robe	Black robe
<i>Title of spokesperson</i>	“Pastor”	“Your honor”
<i>Disciples called</i>	Apostles (qty 12)	Grand Jury (qty 12) Petit Jury (qty 12)
<i>How representatives are appointed</i>	Ordained	Licensed by state Supreme Court
<i>Persons who violate laws are</i>	Sinners ( <u>G</u> od’s law)	Criminals (man’s/ <u>g</u> od’s law)
<i>Submission</i>	“...knowing that a man is not justified by the works of the law but by faith in Jesus Christ, even we have believed in Christ Jesus, that we might be justified by faith in Christ and not by the works of the law; for by the works of the law	“I am a criminal because no one can obey all of man’s laws. There are too many of them!” (see section 5.15 entitled “The Government’s REAL approach to tax law”)

<i>Attributes of “religion”</i>	<i>Worship of God (Christianity: “God” with a Big “G”)</i>	<i>Worship of Government (Idolatry: “god” with a little “g”) Government=“The Beast”: Rev. 13:11-18</i>
	no flesh shall be justified.” (see Gal. 2:16)	
<i>Obedience</i>	“If you love me, keep my commandments” (see John 14:15)	Follow the law or we will throw you in jail and steal your property! (fear)
<i>Control by “superior being” imposed through</i>	Holy Spirit/conscience	Criminal punishment for violating law.
<i>Ultimate punishment exists in</i>	Hell	Jail
<i>Result of punishment is:</i>	Separation from God	Separation from Society (neo-god)
<i>Worship service</i>	Sunday service	Court (worship the judge/lawyers)
<i>Place of worship</i>	Church	Courthouse
<i>Language of worship service</i>	Latin (Roman Catholic church)	Latin (habeus corpus, malum prohibitum, ex post facto, etc)
<i>Method of removing evil from the world</i>	Exorcism	Court and/or jail
<i>Pleadings to the superior being (Sovereign) for help take the form of</i>	Prayer	Prayer (petitions to courts used to be called “prayers” and those that go in front of the Supreme Court are still called “prayers” in some cases).
<i>Source of truth</i>	God’s law	Whatever the judge says
<i>Truth is</i>	Absolute and sovereign	Relative to whoever is in charge (and whatever corrupted politicians will let even more corrupted judges get away with before they get removed from office for misconduct)
<i>Method of supporting “superior being”</i>	Tithes (10%)	Taxes (50-100%)
<i>Power expanded by</i>	Evangelism	1. Obfuscating law 2. Attorney licensing 3. Legal “terrorism” (excessive or unwarranted or expensive litigation) 4. Unconstitutional or unlawful acts 5. Lies, propaganda, and deceit 6. Judges allowing juries to rule only on facts and not law of each case.

1 Isn’t that interesting? The other thing you MUST conclude after examining the above table is that if anyone in government  
2 is a “superior being” relative to any human in the society they govern, then the government unavoidably becomes an idol and  
3 a god to be “worshipped” and submitted to as if the government or its servants individually were a religion. In the feudal  
4 system of British Common Law from which our legal system derives, they even call judges “Your Worship”:

5 *“worship 1. chiefly Brit: a person of importance—used as a title for various officials (as magistrates and some*  
6 *mayors) 2: reverence offered a divine being or supernatural power; also: an act of expressing such reverence*  
7 *3: a form of religious practice with its creed and ritual 4: extravagant respect or admiration for or devotion to*  
8 *an object of esteem <~ the dollar>.”*  
9 *[Webster’s Ninth New Collegiate Dictionary, 1983, ISBN 0-87779-510-X, p. 1361]*

10 We started with a government of law and not of men but we ended up with the opposite because of our apathy and ignorance:

11 *“The government of the United States has been emphatically termed a government of laws, and not of men. It*  
12 *will certainly cease to deserve that high appellation, if the laws furnish no remedy for the violation of a vested*  
13 *legal right.”*  
14 *[Marbury v. Madison, 5 U.S. 137, 1 Cranch 137, 2 L.Ed. 60 (1803)]*

15 A government run by judges, instead of law is called a “kritarchy”. Such a government is described as a government of men  
16 and not of law. Since judges are also “public servants”, then a “kritarchy” also qualifies as a “dulocracy”:

1 *"Dulocracy. A government where servants and slaves have so much license and privilege that they domineer."*  
2 *[Black's Law Dictionary, Sixth Edition, p. 501]*

3 The book of Judges in the Bible shows what happens to a culture that trusts in man and the flesh and their own feelings rather  
4 than in God's law for their sense of justice and morality. Below is an excerpt from our Bible introducing the Book of Judges  
5 to make the moral lessons contained in the book crystal clear:

6 *The Book of Judges stands in stark contrast to Joshua. In Joshua an obedient people conquered the land through*  
7 *trust in the power of God. In Judges, however, a disobedient and idolatrous people are defeated time and time*  
8 *again because of their rebellion against God.*

9 *In seven distinct cycles of sin to salvation, Judges shows how Israel had set aside God's law and in its place*  
10 *substituted "what was right in his own eyes" (21:25). The recurring result of abandonment from God's law is*  
11 *corruption from within and oppression from without. During the nearly four centuries spanned by this book,*  
12 *God raises up military champions to throw off the yoke of bondage and to restore the nation to pure worship. But*  
13 *all too soon the "sin cycle" begins again as the nation's spiritual temperance grows steadily colder.*

14 ...  
15 *The Book of Judges could also appropriately be titled "The Book of Failure."*

16 ***Deterioration** (1:1-3:4). Judges begins with short-lived military successes after Joshua's death, but quickly turns*  
17 *to the repeated failure of all the tribes to drive out their enemies. The people feel the lack of a unified central*  
18 *leader, but the primary reasons for their failure are a lack of faith in God and lack of obedience to Him (2:1-2).*  
19 *Compromise leads to conflict and chaos. Israel does not drive out the inhabitants (1:21, 27, 29, 30); instead of*  
20 *removing the moral cancer [IRS, Federal Reserve?] spread by the inhabitants of Canaan, they contract the*  
21 *disease. The Canaanite gods [money, sex, covetousness] literally become a snare to them (2:3). Judges 2:11-23*  
22 *is a microcosm of the pattern found in Judges 3-16.*

23 ***Deliverance** (3:5-16:31). In verses 3:5 through 16:31 of the Book of Judges, seven apostasies (fallings away*  
24 *from God) are described, seven servitudes, and seven deliverances. Each of the seven cycles has five steps: sin,*  
25 *servitude, supplication, salvation, and silence. These also can be described by the words rebellion, retribution,*  
26 *repentance, restoration, and rest. The seven cycles connect together as a descending spiral of sin (2:19). Israel*  
27 *vacillates between obedience and apostasy as the people continually fail to learn from their mistakes. Apostasy*  
28 *grows, but the rebellion is not continual. The times of rest and peace are longer than the times of bondage. The*  
29 *monotony of Israel's sins can be contrasted with the creativity of God's methods of deliverance.*

30 ***Depravity** (17:1-21:25). Judges 17:1 through 21:25 illustrate (1) religious apostasy (17 and 18) and (2) social*  
31 *and moral depravity (19-21) during the period of the judges. Chapters 19-21 contain one of the worst tales of*  
32 *degradation in the Bible. Judges closes with a key to understanding the period: "everyone did what was right*  
33 *in his own eyes" (21:25) [a.k.a. "what FEELS good"]. The people are not doing what is wrong in their own*  
34 *eyes, but what is "evil in the sight of the Lord" (2:11).*

35 *[The Open Bible, New King James Version, Thomas Nelson Publishers, Copyright 1997, pp. 340-341]*

36 The hypocrisy and idolatry represented by a government of judges or of men rather than law not only violates the first and  
37 greatest Commandment in the Bible found in Exodus 20:3 and Matt. 22:37-38, but is also more importantly violates the First  
38 Amendment to the U.S. Constitution:

39 **First Amendment:**

40 *Congress shall make no law respecting an establishment of religion, or prohibiting the free exercise thereof; or*  
41 *abridging the freedom of speech, or of the press; or the right of the people peaceably to assemble, and to petition*  
42 *the Government for a redress of grievances.*

43 How do government servants make themselves or the government they are part of into a "superior being"? Here are just a  
44 few highly unethical and evil ways:

- 45 1. Write laws that apply to everyone but them.
- 46 2. Manipulate the enforcement of laws so that government servants don't have to obey.
- 47 3. Exceed their jurisdiction or lawful authority and not be punished or prosecuted for it.
- 48 4. Abuse official immunity or sovereign immunity with the blessing and collusion of a corrupted judiciary to protect  
49 themselves from punishment for their wrongdoing.

- 1 5. Lie to or mislead a grand jury and not be held accountable for it because they would have to prosecute themselves if they
- 2 did.
- 3 6. Judges setting courtroom policy prohibiting audio or video recording of any proceeding so that they cannot be held
- 4 accountable for their own violations of law in the courtroom.
- 5 7. Judges suppressing admission of evidence in court that would undermine their power or control over society.
- 6 8. Making cases unpublished where the government was litigated against and lost, thus preventing them from being cited
- 7 as precedent.

Nonpublication.com

<http://www.nonpublication.com/>

- 8 9. Judges telling juries that they must rule in the case based on what the judge says is the law rather than based on a reading
- 9 of the actual law.
- 10 10. Judges issuing general orders to the law librarian in the public/government courthouse prohibiting jurists or litigants
- 11 from using the law library so as to make their profession into a priesthood and prevent jurists from ensuring that they are
- 12 following the law. See:
- 13 <http://famguardian.org/Disks/IRSDVD/Evidence/JudicialCorruption/GenOrder228C-Library.pdf>
- 14 11. Government judges and prosecutors abusing the purpose of the legal system to terrorize and persecute Americans for
- 15 their political activities or to coerce them into giving up some right that the law entitles them to. Most Americans can't
- 16 afford legal representation and government abuses this vulnerability by litigating maliciously and endlessly against their
- 17 enemies to terrorize them into submission and run up their legal bills. This makes their victims into a financial slave of
- 18 an expensive attorney who is licensed by the same state he is litigating against, which imparts a conflict of interest that
- 19 prejudices the rights of his client.

20 [TITLE 18](#) > [PART I](#) > [CHAPTER 77](#) > Sec. 1589.

21 *Sec. 1589. - Forced labor*

22 ***Whoever knowingly provides or obtains the labor or services of a person -***

23 ***(3) by means of the abuse or threatened abuse of law or the legal process,***

24 ***shall be fined under this title or imprisoned not more than 20 years, or both.*** *If death results from the violation*

25 *of this section, or if the violation includes kidnapping or an attempt to kidnap, aggravated sexual abuse or the*

26 *attempt to commit aggravated sexual abuse, or an attempt to kill, the defendant shall be fined under this title or*

27 *imprisoned for any term of years or life, or both*

28 By making itself a “superior being” relative to the people it governs and serves and using the color but not actual *force* of law

29 to compel the people to pay homage to and “worship” and to serve it with their stolen labor (extorted through illegally

30 enforced income taxes), Congress has mandated a religion, with all the many necessary characteristics found in the legal

31 definition of “religion” indicated above, and this is clearly unconstitutional. *The only way to guarantee the elimination of the*

32 *conflict of law that results from putting government above the people is to:*

- 33 1. Make God the sovereign over all of creation.
- 34 2. Make the people **servants to God** and His *fiduciary agents*.
- 35 3. Create government as a **servant to the People** and their fiduciary agent. Make the only source of government authority
- 36 that of protecting the people from evil, injustice, and abuse.

37 *There is no other rational conclusion one can reach based on the above analysis. There is simply no other way to solve this*

38 *logical paradox of government becoming a religion in the process of making itself superior to the people or the “U.S.*

39 *citizens”.* The definition of “religion” earlier confirmed that God must be the origin of an earthly government, when it said:

40 *“Bond uniting man to God, and a virtue whose purpose is to render God worship due him as source of all being*

41 *and **principle of all government of things.**”*

42 One of our readers, Humberto Nunez, wrote a fascinating and funny article showing just how similar government and most

43 religions really are:

44 *GOVERNMENT IS A PAGAN CULT AND WE'VE ALL BEEN DRINKING THE KOOL AID*

45 *By: Humberto Nunez*

1 *Government is a pagan cult. When you join the Armed Forces, the first thing they do is shave your head. Just like*  
2 *in many cults, where they shave your head. The Army also uses sleep deprivation in Boot Camp, just like many*  
3 *cults do, to brainwash their people.*

4 *Secret Service Agents are willing to “die for their beliefs” (in defense of The President: their cult leader).*

5 *Many men say that they would “die for their country”. This is a form of pagan Martyrdom for the pagan cult*  
6 *State.*

7 *Many today say that “religion has caused more war... “ and blah blah blah.*

8 *But the fact is that governments send out draft cards, not churches. Governments started WWI and WWII, not*  
9 *religion. In fact, during times of peace governments hate religion because religion is the governments’ #1*  
10 *competition for allegiance, and during times of war, governments use religion for their own agenda.*

11 *Another similarity to cults: FBI Agents even dress similar to Mormons, and have the same type of haircuts. Many*  
12 *cults have a dress code of some kind, just like in the Army, and even in the Corporate world.*

13 *When you join the Moonies you would probably end up selling flowers for them, and the Moonies will keep all*  
14 *the profits from the work you do. When you work today, the pagan cult State takes your profits (in the form of*  
15 *income taxes), and they won’t let you leave their cult (the State). If you attempt to not pay your taxes, you would*  
16 *be arrested and branded a criminal.*

17 *Now, I did a little research into the symptoms and signs of a cult and found these 5 Warning Signs: (to distinguish*  
18 *a cult from a ‘normal’ religion)*

- 19 3. *The organization is willing to place itself above the law; this is probably the most important*  
20 *characteristic.*
- 21 4. *The leadership dictates, (rather than suggests) important personal (as opposed to spiritual) details of*  
22 *followers’ lives, such as whom to marry, what to study in college, etc.*
- 23 5. *The leader sets forth ethical guidelines members must follow but from which the leader is exempt.*
- 24 6. *The group is preparing to fight a literal, physical Armageddon against other human beings.*
- 25 7. *The leader regularly makes public assertions that he or she knows is false and/or the group has a policy of*  
26 *routinely deceiving outsiders.*

27 *Now, let’s break these down one by one.*

28 *1. The organization is willing to place itself above the law; this is probably the most important characteristic.*

29 *Example: Death Penalty.*

30 *What is the purpose and intention behind State sponsored Death Penalty? The primary purpose and intention*  
31 *behind State sponsored Death Penalty is not to deter crime, nor is it to be tough on crime. To understand the*  
32 *purpose and intent behind this, we must study psychology, in particular, behavioral psychology; like in training a*  
33 *dog. To train a dog, one must use behavioral modification techniques. For example, the primary purpose and*  
34 *intention behind anti-smoking laws is to get you to obey the State. Before you can train a dog to kill, you must*  
35 *first train the dog to obey simple commands; like sit, and roll over. The same is true of recycling laws. Glass*  
36 *bottles are actually much safer for the environment than plastic bottles. The primary purpose and intention behind*  
37 *recycling laws is not to save the environment, it is a behavioral modification technique to get the people to obey*  
38 *the Government.*

39 *Now, back to State sponsored death penalty laws. The primary purpose and intention behind Death Penalty laws*  
40 *is to get people used to the idea that the State is above the law. It is illegal for people to kill and to murder. With*  
41 *State sponsored Death Penalty laws, the State is Above the Law.*

42 *There you have symptom #1:*

43 *1. The organization is willing to place itself above the law; this is probably the most important characteristic.*

44 *2. The leadership dictates, (rather than suggests) important personal (as opposed to spiritual) details of followers’*  
45 *lives, such as whom to marry, what to study in college, etc.*

46 *I can give a dozen examples of this behavioral modification ploy of cults. Recycling and anti-smoking laws were*  
47 *two examples I explained above. Dictating the behavior of Americans today is pervasive throughout our entire*  
48 *society.*

1 3. The leader sets forth ethical guidelines members must follow but from which the leader is exempt.

2 We can see this today very clearly when it comes to violence. Many Americans today are forced to attend Anger  
3 Management Courses while at the same time the State uses violence (like in the Iraq War).

4 4. The group is preparing to fight a literal, physical Armageddon against other human beings.

5 Three words: War on Terrorism

6 5. The leader regularly makes public assertions that he or she knows is false and/or the group has a policy of  
7 routinely deceiving outsiders.

8 I don't think that last symptom (of a cult) needs further explanation.

9 Well there you have it; the Government has all of the 5 major signs/symptoms of being a cult.

10 For the philosophy behind The Nature of Government I recommend this read:

11 [http://www.apfn.org/apfn/nature\\_gov.htm](http://www.apfn.org/apfn/nature_gov.htm)

12 It is A MUST READ for all Americans and all freedom loving peoples of the world. It is so good that if I start  
13 quoting from it, I'll just end up pasting the entire article here in my article. So I'll just leave it at that and say you  
14 the reader here MUST READ IT.

15 Now, the atheist says "Show me God." I say, "Show me government." I do not believe in the existence of  
16 government. Now hold your horses, I know that sounds silly at first, but let me explain.

17 Let's say you were on a ship full of people. Now the people in that ship went insane and started hallucinating,  
18 thinking that you were an alien from another planet and that you must be killed. If those people on that ship killed  
19 you, you would really be dead, literally. Just because of the reality of the consequences of that mass hallucination  
20 (you being dead) does not prove that you were really an alien. It just proves that the people were suffering from  
21 mass hallucination. So, just because the so-called 'government' can arrest you and put you in jail, that does not  
22 prove the existence of government. It just proves mass hallucination.

23 Let's start again now:

24 The atheist says "Show me God." I say, "Show me government." Now don't tell me the White House. That is  
25 not 'government'. That is a building. That's just as if I were to show an atheist a church (a building), that would  
26 not prove the existence of God.

27 Ok now, you might show me a Police Officer in uniform, and offer proof on how he can actually arrest me, to  
28 prove the existence of Government.

29 Well, I can show an atheist a priest in uniform, but that would not prove the existence of God. Even if Congress  
30 gave priests the authority to arrest people on the streets that would still not prove the existence of God to an  
31 atheist. Just like a cop in uniform does not prove the existence of government, it only proves that the people are  
32 suffering from mass hallucination.

33 People today are obsessed with the laws of the pagan-cult State. The Constitution, the Bill of Rights, etc. etc,  
34 people meditating day and night on the 'laws' of the pagan-cult State, as opposed to the Law of God. Thomas  
35 Jefferson, Benjamin Franklin, these men have become cult figures. They have replaced Abraham, Isaac, Jacob,  
36 Noah, Moses, as the men of God to be pondered on and studied.

37 **Sacrifice for Protection**

38 In ancient times, people performed human sacrifice to their pagan false gods for 'Protection' from the gods. They  
39 believed their gods also played the role of 'Provider' by performing human sacrifice for rain for their crops for  
40 example.

41 Today, the U.S. Fed. Govt. is asking for "Sacrifice for Protection'. The State today is now saying that the people  
42 must sacrifice their Freedoms and Liberties for 'Protection' from terrorism (demons, evil spirits, etc.) and that  
43 the State will then 'Provide' them with safety.

44 This is metaphorically a form of human sacrifice. It is not a human sacrifice where you literally kill someone (like  
45 in the Death Penalty), but it is a "human" sacrifice. I mean, the State is not asking the animals to sacrifice their

1 *Freedoms and Liberties, it is asking us humans, so it is a "human" sacrifice as opposed to an 'animal' sacrifice*  
2 *in that sense. Also, there is death involved; the death of our Freedoms and Liberty.*

3 *By the way, State sponsored Death Penalty is another form of human sacrifice for the pagan-cult State, and State*  
4 *sponsored abortion is a form of child sacrifice for this pagan-cult State.*

5 **Black Robes: Judges and Devil worshippers**

6 *Judges wear Black Robes just like Devil worshippers. The Judges' Desk is the altar of Baal. They bring men tied*  
7 *up in handcuffs before the altar (Judges' desk) and these men are for the human sacrifice and the entire court*  
8 *proceeding is a satanic ritual.*

9 *Sounds crazy? Is it a coincidence that the 'language of the court' is Latin (ex: Habeas Corpus) just like the*  
10 *'language of a Catholic Exorcism' is also in Latin? Lawyers speak Latin in the court room just like Priests use*  
11 *Latin when performing exorcisms when you have a 'case' of full DEMONIC POSSESSION.*

12 *Also, the same type of 'respect' a Priest would expect from a visitor to his church is the same type of respect a*  
13 *Judge expects in his court room. There's even a penalty for disobeying this 'respect'; it's called "Contempt of*  
14 *Court".*

15 *Another psychological conditioning behavior modification technique being applied on the American Public is*  
16 *this: Television shows like Judge Judy, Judge Joe, all these People's Courts television shows. The primary*  
17 *intention and purpose behind these so-called Court Room Justice shows is to condition the public to get used to*  
18 *entering a court room with NO Trial by Jury. In not one of any of these types of shows do you ever see a Trial by*  
19 *Jury; that is not a mistake, it is intentional, and by design.*

20 *I can go on and on with this article and offer a million more details.*

21 *To conclude, if the U.S. Govt. plans to attack Iran, North Korea, etc. in the future. And if there is the possibility*  
22 *that this War on Terrorism might lead to WWII. Then, that is nothing but pagan-cult MASS SUICIDE. And the*  
23 *U.S. Govt. is a pagan cult, and WE'VE ALL BEEN DRINKING THE KOOL AID. [Does Jim Jones from Ghana*  
24 *ring a bell?]*

25 *Now, some readers of this article (especially neo-conservatives) would automatically brand me an Anarchist. I*  
26 *am not an Anarchist, what I am questioning is the role of government. According to the Founding Fathers of*  
27 *America, the role of government was to protect your Individual Rights. NOT TO TAKE THEM AWAY.*

28 *And finally, if the people will not serve God, they will end up serving and being slaves of government. I am sure*  
29 *many Christians would believe this, and even some followers of eastern philosophies; for this is a form of 'Bad*  
30 *Karma'.*

31 *And, if man will not serve God, then woman will not serve man. This is also a form of 'bad karma' [and it may*  
32 *also explain why the divorce rate is so high].*

33 Another fascinating and funny article that helps to clarify just how God-like our government has become is as follows:

34 **The Ten Commandments of the U.S. Government**

35 *I. I am the Lord of the Talmud, thou shalt have no Biblical God before me.*

36 *II. Thou shalt not make unto thee any but Satanic images: the witch, symbol of the city government and police*  
37 *department of Salem, Massachusetts; the five-pointed occult pentagram of Sirius, of the state religion of Egypt,*  
38 *emblem of the Department of Defense and our Armed Forces, and the badge of U.S. law enforcement at all levels;*  
39 *the pyramid of Pharaoh, capped by the all-Seeing Eye of Horus, emblazoned on the currency in the denomination*  
40 *of one shekel.*

41 *III. Thou shalt not take the name of thy god in vain: thou shalt not blaspheme the name Rabbi, Israeli, Zionism,*  
42 *"U.S. government", or any politician or agency.*

43 *IV. Remember the Wal Mart sale on the Sabbath Day, and keep it holy by spending. Seven days must thou labor,*  
44 *that thereby thou shalt spend ever more.*

45 *V. Honor thy son and thy daughter. Neither spank nor say no to them when they seek to consume the sex and*  
46 *violence that is dangled before them from every lawful venue. Thy daughter shalt dress like a cheap harlot from*  
47 *the age of eight onward, and thy son shall engage in bloody video games, likewise from his eighth year. All of*  
48 *these are legal and profitable, saith the Lord.*

1 VI. Thou shalt not kill the molester of 150 children in his prison cell, and thou shalt condemn the convict who  
2 executes the molester, lest such justice be encouraged, and lest it be known that the convict had greater common  
3 sense and honor than a legion of our judges.

4 VII. Thou shalt commit adultery and televise and popularize it throughout the land, and broadcast it into  
5 Afghanistan and Iraq, that thereby the Muslims shall be vouchsafed a share in our democracy and freedom.

6 VIII. Thou shalt not steal from us, for we detest competition.

7 IX. Thou shalt indeed bear false witness, for by perjury our Law is established.

8 X. Covet thy neighbor's goods and thy neighbor's wife, for thereby doth our Order prosper.

9 [SOURCE: <http://famguardian.org/Subjects/Spirituality/ChurchvState/TenCmndmtsUSGovt.htm>]

10 I'll bet you never even dreamed that there were so many parallels between Christianity and government, did you? I'll bet  
11 you also never thought of government as a religion, but that is exactly what it has become. The idea of making government  
12 a religion or creating false idols for the people to worship is certainly not new. Here is an example from the bible, where  
13 "cities" are referred to as "gods". Notice this passage also criticizes evolutionists when it says "Saying to.. a stone 'you gave  
14 birth to me.'". Evolutionists believe that we literally descended from rocks that evolved from a primordial soup:

15 *"As the thief is ashamed when he is found out,*  
16 *So is the house of Israel ashamed;*  
17 **They and their kings and their princes, and their priests and their prophets,**  
18 **Saying to a tree, "You are my father,"**  
19 **And to a stone, "You gave birth to me."**  
20 *For they have turned their back to Me, and not their face.*  
21 *But in the time of their trouble*  
22 *They will say, "Arise and save us."*  
23 *But where are your gods [governments] that you have made for yourselves?*  
24 *Let them arise,*  
25 *If they can save you in the time of your trouble;*  
26 **For according to the number of your cities**  
27 **Are your gods, O Judah."**  
28 [Jeremiah 2:26-28, Bible, NKJV]

29 Leaders know that if you can get people to worship false idols and thereby blaspheme God with their sin, then you can use  
30 this idolatry to captivate and enslave them. For instance, in the Bible in 1 Kings Chapters 11 and 12, we learn that Solomon  
31 disobeyed the Lord by marrying foreign wives and worshipping the idols of these foreign wives. When Solomon died, his  
32 son Rehoboam hardened his heart against God and alienated his people. Then he fought a competitor named Jeroboam over  
33 the spoils of his vast father's remnant kingdom (1 Kings 12). The weapon that Jeroboam used to compete with Rehoboam  
34 was the creation of a false idol for the ten tribes of Israel that were under his leadership. This false idol consisted of two  
35 calves of solid gold. The false idol distracted ten of the 12 tribes of Israel from wanting to reunite with the other two tribes  
36 and worship the true God. To this day, the twelve tribes have never again been able to reunite, because they were divided by  
37 idolatry toward false gods. Here is a description of how Jeroboam did it from 1 Kings 12:25-33:

38 Golden Calves at Bethel and Dan

39 <sup>25</sup> Then Jeroboam fortified Shechem in the hill country of Ephraim and lived there. From there he went out and  
40 built up Peniel.

41 <sup>26</sup> Jeroboam thought to himself, "The kingdom will now likely revert to the house of David. <sup>27</sup> If these people  
42 go up to offer sacrifices at the temple of the LORD in Jerusalem, they will again give their allegiance to their  
43 lord, Rehoboam king of Judah. They will kill me and return to King Rehoboam."

44 <sup>28</sup> After seeking advice, the king made two golden calves. He said to the people, "It is too much for you to go  
45 up to Jerusalem. Here are your gods, O Israel, who brought you up out of Egypt." <sup>29</sup> One he set up in Bethel,  
46 and the other in Dan. <sup>30</sup> And this thing became a sin; the people went even as far as Dan to worship the one  
47 there.

48 <sup>31</sup> Jeroboam built shrines on high places and appointed priests from all sorts of people, even though they were  
49 not Levites. <sup>32</sup> He instituted a festival on the fifteenth day of the eighth month, like the festival held in Judah, and  
50 offered sacrifices on the altar. This he did in Bethel, sacrificing to the calves he had made. And at Bethel he  
51 also installed priests at the high places he had made. <sup>33</sup> On the fifteenth day of the eighth month, a month of his  
52 own choosing, he offered sacrifices on the altar he had built at Bethel. So he instituted the festival for the  
53 Israelites and went up to the altar to make offerings.  
54 [1 Kings 12:25-33, Bible, NIV]



1 Similar to Jeroboam, our present government conquers the people by encouraging them to become distracted with false idols.  
2 These false idols include:

- 3 1. **Government.** This translates into worship of and slavery to government through the income tax and an obsession with  
4 petitioning government to protect people from discrimination or punishment for the consequences of their sins, including  
5 homosexuality, dishonesty, and infidelity.
- 6 2. **Money.** They use this lust for money to divide and conquer and control families by getting them fighting over money  
7 within their marriage. They encourage people to get marriage licenses they never needed in order to get jurisdiction over  
8 the spouses and their assets, and then they make it so easy to get divorced that it becomes economically attractive to  
9 marry people for their money. This means that people get married for all the wrong reasons, and make themselves into  
10 slaves of the state in the process of using the state courts as a vehicle to plunder their partner using community property  
11 laws.
- 12 3. **Sex.** A fixation with sex, homosexuality, fornication, and adultery. People who are obsessed with anything, and  
13 especially sex, are far less likely to be informed about the law or vigilant about holding their government accountable.
- 14 4. **Sports and television.** People who are hooked on Monday night football or the latest host soap or sitcom aren't likely  
15 to be caught visiting the law library or reading the Bible as God says they should.
- 16 5. **Materialism.** This manifests itself in an obsession to acquire and keep "things".
- 17 6. **Sin.** In the past, the government outlawed gambling and lotteries. Now most states have actually institutionalized this  
18 kind of sin. The government holds lotteries and even advertises them. Indian reservations have become havens for  
19 legalized gambling.

20 Have you ever visited a doctor's office for minor surgery? What the doctor does is administer a local anesthetic to numb  
21 your senses in the area he will be cutting and operating on so you won't experience pain or feel what he is doing. The  
22 government does the same thing. Before they hook you up to "The Matrix" using their umbilical called the "income tax" to  
23 painfully suck you dry, they use a "local anesthetic" that numbs your senses and your discretion. This "local anesthetic" is  
24 the sin and hedonism and idolatry they try to get you addicted to and distracted with that they use to make you into a slave:

25 *"Most assuredly, I say to you, whoever commits sin is a slave of sin."*  
26 *[Jesus in John 8:34, Bible, NKJV]*

27 Once you are a slave to your sin, you are far less likely to give them any trouble about being a host organism for the federal  
28 parasite that sucks your life and your labor and your property dry. They supplement this local anesthetic called "sin" with a  
29 combination of cognitive dissonance, lies and propaganda, ignorance generated by the public fool (school) system, and an  
30 occasional media report about how they trashed a famous person to keep you in fear and immobilized to oppose their  
31 organized extortion and racketeering. This trains you never to trust or respect your own judgment well enough to even  
32 conceive of questioning authority or challenging their jurisdiction.

33 *"Surely oppression destroys a wise man's reason.*  
34 *And **a [compelled] bribe [called income tax] debases the heart."***  
35 *[Ecclesiastes 7:7, Bible, NKJV]*

36 The concept of government as a religion especially applies to the field of taxation. The Internal Revenue Code is 9,500 pages  
37 of very fine print. We know because we have a personal copy and read it often. Our own former Treasury Secretary Paul  
38 O'Neill calls it, and I quote:

39 *"9,500 pages of gibberish."*

40 *[See this quote in a news article at: [http://famguardian.org/TaxFreedom/Evidence/OrgAndDuties/IRSExhibit-](http://famguardian.org/TaxFreedom/Evidence/OrgAndDuties/IRSExhibit-PaulONeill-IRSCo9500PgsOfGibberish.pdf)*  
41 *[PaulONeill-IRSCo9500PgsOfGibberish.pdf](http://famguardian.org/TaxFreedom/Evidence/OrgAndDuties/IRSExhibit-PaulONeill-IRSCo9500PgsOfGibberish.pdf)]*

42 How many people have taken the time to read the Internal Revenue Code in its entirety, and even among those very few  
43 people who have read it completely, how many believe that they fully and completely understand it well enough to swear  
44 under penalty of perjury that facts they reveal and statements they might make about their own personal tax liability would  
45 be completely consistent with it? If you don't meet these two criteria of having read it completely and often and having a  
46 full and accurate understanding about it that is truthful and consistent with its legislative intent, then any statement you make  
47 on a tax return that is based on your state of mind in that instance becomes simply a matter of usually misinformed or ignorant  
48 "belief". There's a good word for this condition of believing something without knowing all the facts. It is called "faith"  
49 and it is the foundation of all religions in the world!:

1 *"Now faith is the substance of things hoped for, the evidence of things not seen."*  
2 *[Heb. 11:1, Bible, NKJV]*

3 Isn't "faith" based on a "belief" in something which you have not seen sufficient scientific evidence to prove? If you are like  
4 most Americans who have *never* read or even seen any part of the Internal Revenue Code, which is the only admissible  
5 "evidence" of your legal tax obligation, then any action you might take and any statement you might make regarding your  
6 tax "liability" under such circumstances could be rationally described only as an act of "faith" and "belief". Here's the legal  
7 definition of "faith":

8 *"**Faith.** Confidence; credit; reliance. Thus, an act may be said to be done 'on the faith' of certain*  
9 *representations.*

10 *"**Belief; credence; trust.** Thus, the Constitution provides that 'full faith and credit' shall be given to the*  
11 *judgments of each state in the courts of the others.*

12 *Purpose; intent; sincerity; state of knowledge or design. This is the meaning of the word in the phrase "good*  
13 *faith" and "bad faith". See Good faith."*  
14 *[Black's Law Dictionary, Sixth Edition, p. 599]*

15 Even when you hire an expensive professional to prepare your tax return, you still have all of the responsibility and liability  
16 for the content and the accuracy of the return and if the IRS institutes a penalty for errors or omissions, isn't it you rather than  
17 your tax preparer who has to pay the penalty? What exactly are you "trusting" (see the definition of "faith" above) when you  
18 sign a tax return and state under penalty of perjury that it is truthful without even reading or knowing or understanding the  
19 tax code? What you are in fact "trusting" is "man" or your "government". You are trusting what the IRS told you in its  
20 publications, right? Or you're trusting an ignorant and greedy and unethical tax lawyer or a misinformed accountant to tell  
21 you what your legal responsibilities are, aren't you? That is called trusting "man" because a man wrote those publications or  
22 gave you the advice that you formed your "belief" from. The Bible says we shouldn't trust men or a "worthless" government,  
23 and instead ought to trust only Him:

24 *"Cursed be he that confirmeth not all the words of this law [God's Law, not Caesar's law] to do them. And all*  
25 *the people shall say, Amen."*  
26 *[Deu 27:26, Bible, NKJV]*

27 *"Behold, the nations are as a drop in the bucket, and are counted as the small dust on the scales."*  
28 *[Isaiah 40:15, Bible, NKJV]*

29 *"All nations before Him are as nothing, and they are counted by Him less than nothing and worthless."*  
30 *[Isaiah 40:17, Bible, NKJV]*

31 *"Cursed is the one who trusts in man [or by implication man-made government], who depends on flesh for his*  
32 *strength and whose heart turns away from the Lord. He will be like a bush in the wastelands; he will not see*  
33 *prosperity when it comes. He will dwell in the parched places of the desert, in a salt land where no one lives.*  
34 *But blessed is the man who trusts in the Lord, whose confidence is in Him. He will be like a tree planted by the*  
35 *water that sends out its roots by the stream. It does not fear when heat comes; its leaves are always green. It has*  
36 *no worries in a year of drought and never fails to bear fruit."*  
37 *[Jeremiah 17:5-8, Bible, NIV]*

38 Now if our government had stuck to its original charter to be "a society of laws and not men", then we wouldn't be forced to  
39 have to depend on "men" to know what our tax responsibilities are because we would be able to read the law ourselves  
40 without consulting an "expert" and KNOW what we are supposed to do:

41 *"The government of the United States has been emphatically termed a government of laws, and not of men. It*  
42 *will certainly cease to deserve that high appellation, if the laws furnish no remedy for the violation of a vested*  
43 *legal right."*  
44 *[Marbury v. Madison, [5 U.S. 137](#), 1 Cranch 137, 2 L.Ed. 60 (1803)]*

45 If our government had remained honorable and honest, the laws would be simple and clear and short. Read the earlier tax  
46 laws: they are very short and easy to understand. These laws were KNOWABLE by the common man. The easiest way to  
47 make the law respectable is to make it short and simple enough so that every person can read and understand it. When it  
48 grows too large and/or too complicated to be knowable by every citizen, then at that point, we have transformed our society  
49 from a society of laws to a society of men, which is the root and the foundation of tyranny and the very reason we rebelled  
50 against English monarchs to form this country! That kind of corruption of our laws began starting in around 1913, shortly

1 after the Federal Reserve Act and the Sixteenth Amendment were passed. At that point, our government became a gigantic  
2 parasite completely unrestrained by the Constitutional limits that had kept it under control. It became a socialist bureaucracy  
3 bent on destroying our liberties and making itself into a false god.

4 The IRS publications are the only thing that most Americans have ever read that even comes close to claiming to represent  
5 what is in the real tax code found in the Internal Revenue Code. Because most people can't afford a high-priced lawyer or  
6 accountant who understands the tax code completely, and don't have the time to read the entire IRC or buy and read a  
7 comprehensive and complete book on taxes, then Americans in effect are economically coerced into relying on and having a  
8 "religious faith" in the IRS publications as their only source to understand what the tax code requires. Add to that the legal  
9 ignorance perpetuated in them by our government schools and you have additional government duress. Worst yet, the federal  
10 courts have said that none of these IRS publications are credible and that they "confer no rights". Read the article on our  
11 website about this scam because it will blow your mind!:

12 <http://famguardian.org/Subjects/Taxes/Articles/IRSNotResponsible.htm>

13 Even the IRS says you can't rely on their own publications in their Internal Revenue Manual:

14 *"IRS Publications, issued by the National Office, explain the law in plain language for taxpayers and their*  
15 *advisors... While a good source of general information, publications should not be cited to sustain a position."*  
16 *[IRM 4.10.7.2.8 (05-14-1999)]*

17 So once again, if you haven't personally read the entire Internal Revenue Code, don't understand it completely, or have  
18 trusted the IRS publications, then your "faith" is ill-founded and in effect becomes "bad faith" because you are relying on a  
19 completely unaccountable, criminal, and lawless organization called the IRS to define and fulfill your purported legal  
20 responsibilities, and that can only be described as despicable, morally wrong, and biblically unsound:

21 *"**Bad faith.** The opposite of "good faith," generally implying or involving actual or constructive fraud, or a*  
22 *design to mislead or deceive another, or a neglect or refusal to fulfill some duty or some contractual obligation,*  
23 *not prompted by an honest mistake as to one's rights or duties, but by some interested or sinister motive. Term*  
24 *'bad faith' is not simply bad judgment or negligence, but rather it implies the conscious doing of a wrong because*  
25 *of dishonest purpose or moral obliquity; it is different from the negative idea of negligence in that it contemplates*  
26 *a state of mind affirmatively operating with furtive design or ill will..."*  
27 *[Black's Law Dictionary, Sixth Edition, p. 139]*

28 You are not alone in your compelled depravity and violation of God's law because most Americans, including us, are just  
29 like you. But you have to trust "somebody" on this tax subject don't you, because if you don't file the government is going  
30 to go after you and penalize you, aren't they? So you are compelled to have "faith" in something, right? You get to choose  
31 what that "something" is, but the result is a compelled "faith" or "trust" in "something" because of demands the government  
32 is making on you to satisfy your alleged tax responsibilities.

33 Now if the Constitution says in the First Amendment that "*Congress shall make no law respecting an establishment of*  
34 *religion, or prohibiting the free exercise thereof*", and yet the IRS tells you under the "color of law" that you have to in effect  
35 trust or have "religious faith" in "something" in order to satisfy their criminal extortion under the "color of law", then isn't  
36 the government in effect "making a law respecting the establishment of a religion"? When corrupt judges make rulings on  
37 tax issues that violate the Constitution and prejudice our sacred rights, aren't they making law? Isn't this kind of judicial  
38 activism called "judge-made law" and isn't Congress' failure to discipline such tyrant judges the equivalent of allowing them  
39 to write law that will then be used as precedent in the future? Isn't the object of that "religious faith" and "trust" that the  
40 government compels us to have the fraudulent IRS Publications directly, and the IRS who prepares them indirectly? So in  
41 effect, if the income tax is indeed an "enforced" or "compelled" tax, then the government has established "faith in the IRS"  
42 as a religion by the operation of law. And then the federal courts of that same government have turned around and said that  
43 even though the only basis for most people's beliefs is the IRS publications, they aren't trustworthy nor credible, and in fact,  
44 you can be penalized for relying on what the IRS told you in them! So you are in effect being compelled to trust or have  
45 "religious faith" in a lie, aren't you? But then out of the other side of that same hypocritical and criminal government's  
46 mouth, the U.S. supreme Court says:

47 *"**Courts, no more than the Constitutions, can intrude into the consciences of men or compel them to believe***  
48 ***contrary to their faith or think contrary to their convictions,** but courts are competent to adjudge the acts men*  
49 *do under the color of a constitutional right, such as that of freedom of speech or of the press or the free exercise*  
50 *of religion and to determine whether the claimed right is limited by other recognized powers, equally precious to*

1 mankind. So the mind and the spirit of man remain forever free, while his actions rest subject to necessary  
2 accommodation to the competing needs of his fellows.”

3 **“If all expression of religion or opinion, however, were subject to the discretion of authority, our unfettered**  
4 **dynamic thoughts or moral impulses might be made only colorless and sterile ideas. To give them life and**  
5 **force, the Constitution protects their use.** No difference of view as to the importance of the freedoms of press or  
6 religion exist. They are “fundamental personal rights and liberties” *Schneider v. State*, 308 U.S. 147, 161, 60  
7 S.Ct. 146, 150, 84 L.Ed. 155. To proscribe the dissemination of doctrines or arguments which do not transgress  
8 military or moral limits is to destroy the principal bases of democracy, --knowledge and discussion. One man,  
9 with views contrary to the rest of his compatriots, is entitled to the privilege of expressing his ideas by speech or  
10 broadside to anyone willing to listen or to read. ...

11 **“Ordinances absolutely prohibiting [or penalizing] the exercise of the right to disseminate information are, a**  
12 **fortiori, invalid.”**  
13 [*Jones v. City of Opelika*, 316 U.S. 584, 62 S.Ct. 1231 (1942), *Emphasis added*]

14 And when we raise the issue in court that the payment of federal income taxes violates our religious beliefs as documented  
15 here, then the courts frequently say that our arguments are “frivolous”. See *U.S. v. Lee*, 455 U.S. 252 (1982) for further  
16 confirmation of how the government essentially labels our religious beliefs as being frivolous in the process of enforcing  
17 their “love for your money” in the courts. That too is a government action to create a religion, because all of the arguments  
18 here are based on the law and words right out of the mouths of the government’s own judges and lawyers. Indirectly, they  
19 are saying that their own words are frivolous! That’s religion and idolatry, and the object of worship is the almighty dollar.  
20 The result of them calling our claims “frivolous” is a maximization of federal revenues and personal retirement benefits of  
21 federal judges through illegal and unconstitutional extortion. That too violates Christian beliefs, which say that  
22 “covetousness” is idolatry, which is the religious worship of idols:

23 *“Therefore put to death your members which are on the earth: fornication, uncleanness, passion, evil desire, and*  
24 **covetousness, which is idolatry.”**  
25 [*Colossians 3:5, Bible, NKJV*]

26 *“Behold, to obey [God and His Law] is better than sacrifice, and to heed than the fat of rams. **For***  
27 **rebellion is as the sin of witchcraft, and stubbornness is an iniquity and**  
28 **idolatry. Because you have rejected the word of the Lord, He also has**  
29 **rejected you from being king [or sovereign over government].”**  
30 [*1 Sam. 15:22-28, Bible, NKJV*]

31 The implication of the above scripture is that when public servants in the government violate God’s law, they cease to be part  
32 of the government and are acting as private individuals absent the authority of law. They are no longer the sovereigns who  
33 are serving the public they are there to protect. Instead they are serving themselves mainly and thereby violating the fiduciary  
34 relationship they have as part of the public trust and federal corporation known as the “United States government”. Christians  
35 are supposed to disobey such unlawful and immoral actions, including those of courts.

36 *“We ought to obey God rather than men.”*  
37 [*Acts 5:27-29, Bible, NKJV*]

38 So we have a paradox, folks. Either Subtitle A income taxes are *mandatory* and *enforced* and “religious faith in the IRS” has  
39 become the new religion, or the taxes are instead entirely “voluntary” donations and therefore do not conflict with religious  
40 views or the First Amendment. We can’t have it both ways, but the government’s fraudulent way of calling them *mandatory*  
41 conflicts with so many aspects of our Constitution that we may as well throw the whole Bill of Rights in the toilet and tell  
42 everyone the truth: which is that all their freedoms are suspended to pay for the extravagant debts of an out-of-control  
43 government and everyone is an economic slave and a serf to the government.

44 In our time, government has not only become a religion, but it has also become an anti-religion intent on driving Christianity  
45 out of public life so that its only competitor (God) can be eliminated and it can continue to grow in power without resistance  
46 and graduate to that of a totalitarian communist state. Christianity, it turns out, is the only competitor to government at the  
47 moment for the worship of the people, and the one thing that most minority groups focused on rights (homosexuals, women’s  
48 liberation, abortion, etc) have in common is a hate for Christianity, because Christianity is the only check on their corruption  
49 and hedonism. Christianity is the salt, the preservative, and the immune system for our society, and when you want to  
50 overtake society with sin and disease and death, the first thing you have to attack is its immune system.

1 The kind of idolatrous thinking that accepts the income tax as legal therefore leads to socialism ultimately, and turns the  
2 government into a tyrannical police state that robs citizens of their assets and puts them to use for the alleged "common good."  
3 It is a product of mobocracy masquerading as democracy, where less privileged or poorer groups use their voting power to  
4 compel the government to plunder the assets of wealthier people for their personal benefit. This is the central approach the  
5 demagogues (I mean democrats) use: buy votes with money extorted from hard-working citizens. The Supreme Court agreed  
6 precisely with these conclusions below in the case of *Loan Association v. Topeka*, 20 Wall. 655 (1874):

7 *"To lay with one hand the power of government on the property of the citizen, and with the other to bestow it on*  
8  *favored individuals.. is none the less robbery because it is done under the forms of law and is called taxation.*  
9 *This is not legislation. It is a decree under legislative forms."*

10 The only way a socialist state can justify its existence is to assert that the government knows better how to take care of you  
11 than you do, and past experience, especially with the Soviet Union, proves that approach **doesn't work!** Forcing you to have  
12 "faith" in the government is a violation of the First Amendment by establishing government as a "religion". Worship of  
13 government as a religion is the essence of socialism. Socialism has never worked throughout all of history, because the  
14 corruption of men at the highest levels who are in charge of the public funds always leads to usury, abuse, evil, and tyrannical  
15 oppression of the people they are supposed to serve.

16 *"Remember the word that I said to you , 'A servant is not greater than his master.' If they persecuted Me, they*  
17 *will also persecute you. If they kept My word, they will keep yours also. But all these things they will do to you*  
18 *for My name's sake, because they do not know Him who sent Me."*  
19 *[Jesus speaking in the Bible, John 15:20-21]*

20 Our own country was formed by Christian patriots more than 200 years ago because they rejected this very thing happening  
21 to us! They founded the first country whose legal system was based entirely on Natural Law and Natural Order.

22 Socialism also makes us into unwitting slaves of the government. Would anyone argue that we don't already have a police  
23 state, where the Gestapo are the tyrants at the IRS, and fear of the IRS is what keeps us paying our "tribute to the king" in the  
24 form of income taxes? Would anyone argue that we are not a country full of cowards when it comes to facing our oppressors?  
25 Realistically speaking: How long can cowards remain free and sovereign? Remember that the original American colonies  
26 waged an entire violent war of independence and risked everything they had to fight against Britain when their taxes to Britain  
27 were only 7%? Now some of us are paying 50% of our income in taxes without even flinching or whimpering or fighting.  
28 We're a bunch of wimps if you ask me!

29 The point is that it's much more difficult to put God first with federal income taxes because out of the remaining 50% of our  
30 income left after we pay taxes, we have to feed our families and pay our bills. Is it any wonder then that less than 1% of  
31 Christians tithe 10% of their income to the church as the Bible requires in Malachi 3:8-10? They can't afford to because they  
32 are being taxed/raped and financially enslaved by the government illegally! And then the IRS compels churches to shut up  
33 about this kind of abuse by taking away their 501(c)(3) tax-exempt status if they speak up!

34 But if you didn't have to pay income taxes and the IRS would honor your right to do so legally (why does the IRS call it  
35 "voluntary compliance" if we can't choose not to pay?), wouldn't you give MUCH more to God and put God first? I certainly  
36 would! Therefore, implementing the advice found in this document will, in the long run, result in equipping you with the  
37 income you need to be more generous to your local church and to the noble causes and preservation of American liberties  
38 and freedoms that we all believe in.

39 **HOWEVER:** *If your intent is to take the money you saved in taxes as a result of following the guidance*  
40 *in this document and spend it on your own selfish desires and not on the church (whatever church you*  
41 *belong to) or helping others, then you are violating the copyright on this document and acting illegally.*  
42 *We demand that you destroy this book and **NOT** read or use this document because we would submit*  
43 *that you are a less than honorable steward over the gracious gifts that God (whatever God you believe*  
44 *in) has bestowed upon you and deserve to have your income taken away by the tyrants at the IRS.*  
45 *Selfishness and deceit are their own best avengers, and we should rightly reap what we sow. Anything*  
46 *less would be to promote anarchy, hypocrisy, injustice, and oppression in our society. Recall that it was*  
47 *selfishness and vanity on the part of government employees which created the problems so clearly*  
48 *documented in this book to begin with. You can't cure selfishness with more selfishness, and you will*

1 *be maligning the tax honesty movement and other noble patriots by abusing these materials for your*  
2 *own selfish gain and associating yourself with them in so doing.*

3 The above comment is based on the following scriptures:

4 *“A man with an evil eye hastens after riches, and does not consider that poverty will come upon him.”*  
5 *[Prov. 28:22, Bible, NKJV]*

6 *“Do not lay up for yourselves treasures on earth, where moth and rust destroy and where thieves [the IRS and*  
7 *the government] break in and steal; but lay up for yourselves treasures in heaven, where neither moth nor rust*  
8 *destroys and where thieves do not break in and steal. For where your treasure is, there your heart will be also.”*  
9 *[Matt. 6:19-21, Bible, NKJV]*

10 Now some of you, in fear, might say that we need to obey the government and not make any noise. *When should a Christian*  
11 *disobey the civil government? (Rom. 13:7; Acts 5:27-29) When a civil government refuses people the liberty to worship and*  
12 *obey God freely or violates God’s law, it has lost its mandate of authority from God. Then the Christian should feel justified*  
13 *and maybe even compelled in disobeying. How are we to worship God freely? With the first fruits of our labor and our*  
14 *income!*

15 Ben Franklin , who incidentally was one of the attendees at the Constitutional Convention, believed that when a government  
16 began to be tyrannical, it was the right and even the DUTY of the citizens to rebel against that government. Here is what he  
17 said:

18 *“Resistance to tyrants is obedience to God.”*

19 The Christian, however, is called to bear with his government whenever possible, but there must be a limit to that forbearance.

20 *“Those who stand for nothing will fall for anything.”*  
21 *[Alex Hamilton]*

22 Jesus did not call for revolution against Rome, even though it was an oppressive conqueror of Israel. On the other hand, the  
23 apostles refused to obey a government order not to preach and teach in Jesus' name (Acts 5:27-29). On that occasion, one of  
24 Jesus' apostles said:

25 *“We ought to obey God rather than men.”*

26 Whenever the civil government forbids the practice of things that God has commanded us to do, or tells us to do things He  
27 has commanded us not to do, then we are on solid ground in disobeying the government. Blind obedience to government is  
28 never right or biblically sound. However difficult or costly it may be, we all must reserve the right to say no to things that  
29 we consider oppressive or immoral or sinful. If we don’t and we make government our unquestioned god, here is the future  
30 that awaits us:<sup>163</sup>

31 *The 23rd Psalm (A present-day Lamentation)*

32 *The politician is my shepherd...I am in want;*  
33 *He maketh me to lie down on park benches,*  
34 *He leadeth me beside still factories;*  
35 *He disturbeth my soul.*  
36 *Yea, thou I walk through the valley of the shadow of depression and recession,*  
37 *I anticipate no recovery, for he is with me.*  
38 *He prepareth a reduction in my salary in the presence of my enemies;*  
39 *He anointeth my small income with great losses;*  
40 *My expenses runneth over.*  
41 *Surely unemployment and poverty shall follow me all the days of my life,*  
42 *And I shall dwell in a mortgaged house forever.*

---

<sup>163</sup> A parody of the Bible, Psalm 23. Submitted by Pastor Wayne Teel and authored by Bob Phillips in his book *The Best of the Good Clean Jokes*.

## 11.5 Comparison of the Government/Socialist Church to the Christian Church

This section will compare the modern Government/Socialist Church to that of Christianity, so you can see all the parallels. It compares God v. Government as competitors for the affection, worship, allegiance, and obedience of the people. Both implement religions of their own. Unfortunately, many Americans are fooled by government propaganda into joining and obeying the government's state-sponsored religion and thereby:

1. Committing the worst sin in the Bible, which is idolatry.
2. Serving two masters.
3. Firing God as their protector.
4. Bringing judgment, slavery, and subjection upon themselves.

Any attempt to treat any government as having more power, authority, or rights than a single human, in fact, constitutes idolatry. All corrupted governments create and promote inequality as a way to profit personally and illegally. By doing so they are indirectly implementing a state-sponsored religion that "worships"/obeys the state rather than the true and living and only God.

The source of all government power in America is The Sovereign People, who are humans and are also called "natural persons". Any power that did not come from this "natural" source is, therefore "supernatural". All religions are based on the worship of such "supernatural beings" or "superior beings".

***"Religion. Man's relation to Divinity, to reverence, worship, obedience, and submission to mandates and precepts of supernatural or superior beings. In its broadest sense includes all forms of belief in the existence of superior beings exercising power over human beings by volition, imposing rules of conduct, with future rewards and punishments. Bond uniting man to God, and a virtue whose purpose is to render God worship due him as source of all being and principle of all government of things. Nikulnikoff v. Archbishop, etc., of Russian Orthodox Greek Catholic Church, 142 Misc. 894, 255 N.Y.S. 653, 663."***  
[Black's Law Dictionary, Sixth Edition, p. 1292]

By "worship", we really mean "obedience" to the dictates of a supernatural or superior being.

***"worship 1. chiefly Brit: a person of importance—used as a title for various officials (as magistrates and some mayors) 2: reverence [obedience] offered a divine being or supernatural power; also: an act of expressing such reverence 3: a form of religious practice with its creed and ritual 4: extravagant respect or admiration for or devotion to an object of esteem <~ the dollar>."***  
[Webster's Ninth New Collegiate Dictionary, 1983, ISBN 0-87779-510-X, p. 1361]

In this respect, both law and religion are twin sisters, because the object of BOTH is "obedience" and "submission" to a "sovereign" of one kind or another. Those in such "submission" are called "subjects" in the legal field. The only difference between REAL religion and state worship is WHICH sovereign: God or man:

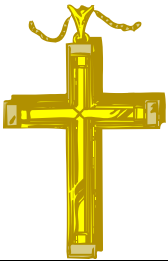

***"Obedientia est legis essentia. Obedience is the essence of the law. 11 Co. 100."***  
[Bouvier's Maxims of Law, 1856;  
SOURCE: <http://famguardian.org/Publications/BouvierMaximsOfLaw/BouviereMaxims.htm>]

A quick way to determine whether you are engaging in idolatry is to look at whether the authority being exercised by a so-called "government" has a "natural" source, meaning whether any human being who is not IN the government can lawfully exercise such authority. If they cannot, you are dealing with a state-sponsored religion and a de facto government rather than a REAL, de jure government. The nature of that de facto government is described in:

*Socialism: The New American Civil Religion*, Form #05.016  
<http://sedm.org/Forms/FormIndex.htm>

1 Below is a table that compares God’s Religion v. Government’s Counterfeit Satanic Religion in the context of many of the  
 2 subjects discussed in the preceding section so that you can see all the parallels. The sheer number of parallels between the  
 3 two is astounding. Few people even consider these and are amazed when they see them for the first time:

4 **Table 4: Comparison between God’s Religion and Government’s Religion**

#	Description	God	Government (socialist church)
1	Lawgiver	God (see Isaiah 33:22)	Legislature or democratic majority
2	Law	Bible	1. Constitution, statutes, regulations (in a republic). 2. Whatever judge or ruler says (tyranny or oligarchy)
3	Purpose of obedience to law	Protection (See Isaiah 54:11-17)	Limited liability/responsibility
4	Mission or goal	Proclaim the gospel Hallowed be thy name, thy Kingdom come thy will be done	Total subjugation of the total man to total government Complete surrender of personal individuality
5	Symbol for the Church	Cross 	National flag 
6	Superior being/object of worship (“Sovereign”)	God (deism)	The “state” (humanism)
7	What makes superior being superior	Creator of universe	Grantor of privileges. Not subject to the same laws or rules as everyone else (hypocrisy, inequality)
8	Authority of superior being based on	Power to create	Power to destroy
9	Superior being protects us from	Sin (Mala in se)	Crime and mala prohibitum Their own crimes (protection racket)
10	Source of power	Love	Fear, insecurity
11	Faith in superior being takes the form of	Religious faith	Unsubstantiated “presumption” of authority (see Form #05.017)
12	Object of belief/faith	Trust in God (see Psalm 118:8-9)	Trust in man/flesh (see Jeremiah 17:5-8)
13	Bond uniting man to superior being	Love	1. Government-granted “privileges” (see <i>Great IRS Hoax, Form #11.302, Section 4.3.12</i> ) 2. Covetousness 3. Avoidance of personal liability
14	Property ownership	Families with ONLY PRIVATE ownership	Government with ONLY PUBLIC ownership of everything. All PRIVATE ownership converted to public (socialism) without consent of owner.
15	Rights	Created by God and absolute	Created by government as franchise privileges
16	Ultimate owner of all property	God (Ps. 24:1; 50:12; 1 Cor. 10:26, 28, etc.) Christians are just “stewards”	Government (public property)
17	Scripture	Holy Bible	Codes that are not “positive law”



#	Description	God	Government (socialist church)
			(e.g. the Internal Revenue Code, Social Security Act, Draft laws, etc.)
18	Obedience to scripture of church promoted through	Studying the Bible Prayer	1. Dumbing down in public school 2. Propaganda 3. Deception 4. Keeping the truth secret from church members
19	Lawgiver	God	Man
20	Founding document(s)	Ten Commandments	Declaration of Independence Constitution
21	Members of the church believe that founding document(s) are	Divinely inspired	Divinely inspired
22	Founders of church (founding fathers)	Jesus John the Baptist David Moses Paul Apostles	Franklin Delano Roosevelt (socialist) George Washington Thomas Jefferson
23	Place of worship	Church building	Court Government buildings
24	Priests called	Pastors (also believers (1 Peter 2:5))	Judges
25	Priests appointed by	Ordination ceremony	Passing the bar Presidential appointment
26	Clergy of church	Deacons	Licensed attorneys
27	Role of leaders	Servants of the people	Masters (Lords)
28	Attire of priests	Black robe	Black robe
29	School to become priests	Seminary	Law school
30	Source of virtue	“God” and His worship	Man, “Self” and “Vain Rulers”
31	Influence spread through	1. Evangelizing. 2. Missionary work. 3. Good example.	1. Deceit. 2. Rewarding irresponsibility. 3. Promotion and exploitation of legal ignorance. 4. Fear, uncertainty, insecurity introduced through media and demagoguery. 5. Propaganda. 6. Military and political warfare. 7. Bribing sheep into submission with government benefits derived from stolen/extorted tax money.
32	Main attraction of church membership	Forgiveness for sin/salvation	Legalization of sin or immorality Limited liability
33	Pleadings to the superior being (Sovereign) for help take the form of	Prayer	Prayer (Petitions to courts are sometimes called “prayers” and those that go in front of the Supreme Court are still called “prayers”)
34	Persons who violate Scripture are called	Sinners ( <u>G</u> od’s laws)	Criminals (man’s/ <u>g</u> od’s laws) Political dissidents
35	Method of dealing with evil	Obedience to God’s word Repentance and regeneration Excommunication Exorcism	Court and/or jail

#	Description	God	Government (socialist church)
36	Failure of man to deal with evil in their own life	Eternal separation from God	Separation from Society (neo-god)
37	Ultimate punishment exists in	Hell	Jail
38	Disciples called	Apostles (qty 12) Christians	Petit Jury (qty 12) Grand Jury (qty 12)
39	Title of Priest	Pastor Bishop (All Christians (1 Peter 2:5))	“Your Honor”
40	Contributions to church called	Tithes (limited to 10%) Gifts	Taxes or tribute (unlimited)
41	Contributions to church are	Voluntary	Mandatory and punitive (enforced illegally by the authority of non-positive law)
42	Contributions to the church are used for	Charity Grace Social Justice	To compete with churches in charity and grace
43	Joining the church requires	Allegiance to God	Allegiance to the state (collective) ABOVE God
44	How people join church	Being baptized as a statement that their domicile is in Heaven and NOT Earth (James 4:4)	1. Choosing a civil domicile within the jurisdiction of the government (see: <a href="http://sedm.org/Forms/05-MemLaw/Domicile.pdf">http://sedm.org/Forms/05-MemLaw/Domicile.pdf</a> ) 2. Swearing a naturalization oath. (see <a href="http://www.uscourts.gov/8-usc-1448">8 U.S.C. §1448</a> ) 3. Signing a tax form under penalty of perjury. 4. Being born within the jurisdiction of the church.
45	Change in legal status from joining	God gives us a new name (Rev. 2:17, Rev. 14:1, Rev. 22:4)	Members assigned number (SSN, TIN. The BEAST. 666) Become “human resource” Appointed as public officer of government.
46	Change in wealth from joining church	Redeemed are blessed with all spiritual blessings (Eph. 1:3, 4:7)	Stripped of all wealth and all property. Everything held as public officer managing government property. Taxed into poverty.
47	Church members called	Saints Sheep Chosen God’s people Congregation Church Godly ones Redeemed Holy Priesthood Royal Priesthood	Taxpayers Citizens Residents Inhabitants Persons
48	Salvation occurs through	Faith in the Person and work of the Lord Jesus Christ	Denying personal responsibility and surrendering personal sovereignty to the state (passing buck to government)
49	Management of church called	Board of elders	Citizens Civil servants Bureaucrats

#	Description	God	Government (socialist church)
			Public servants Public officers Corporate boards
50	Enforcement unit for church	Board of elders	IRS
51	Members disciplined through	Excommunication	Jail Fines, fees, and penalties
52	Confession held with	Priest Ministers with integrity	Judge (entering a plea)
53	Confessions are communicated	Orally to priest or minister	Entering a plea to judge On a tax form
54	Money paid to priest during confession	Absolves you of liability for sin	Absolves you of tax liability and threat of prison and jail
55	Those who oppose church doctrine are called	Heretic	Frivolous
56	View towards those who break laws of the church ("sin")	Repentance	Tolerance (except those who refuse to subsidize the group, who are "nontaxpayers", who get intolerance)
57	Court trials among believers focus on	Law that was violated	Political persecution (franchise court)
58	Missionaries ("Come to Jesus")	Volunteers Ministers	U.S. Department of Justice IRS revenue agents Police
59	Purpose of sex within church	Procreation	Recreation Fornication
60	Truth is	Absolute and sovereign	Relative to whoever is in charge (and whatever corrupted politicians will let even more corrupted judges get away with before they get removed from office for misconduct)

## 11.6 The "Tax Code" is the Bible of a state-sponsored Religion, not a "law"<sup>164</sup>

*"Preach the Word; be prepared in season and out of season [by diligent study of this book and God's Word]; correct, rebuke and encourage—with great patience and careful instruction. For the time will come when men [in the legal profession or the judiciary] will not put up with sound [legal] doctrine [such as that found in this book]. Instead, to suit their own desires, they [our covetous public dis-servants] will gather around them a great number of teachers [court-appointed "experts", "licensed" government whores called attorneys and CPA's, and educators in government-run or subsidized public schools and liberal universities] to say what their itching ears want to hear. They will turn their ears away from the truth and turn aside to [government and legal-profession] myths [and fables]. But you [the chosen of God and His servants must], keep your head in all situations, endure hardship, do the work of an evangelist, discharge all the duties of your [God's] ministry."*  
[2 Tim. 4:2-5, Bible, NKJV]

As a consequence of the considerations in our paper below:

*Requirement for Consent*, Form #05.003  
<http://sedm.org/Forms/FormIndex.htm>

..one may safely conclude the following with regard to the Internal Revenue "Code":

1. The Internal Revenue Code is not *positive law, and therefore imposes no obligation upon anyone except federal "public officials", agents, and contractors and those who consented (called "elected" in IRS publications) to be treated as one of these, even if they in fact are not.* Instead, it is "special law", which applies to particular persons and things and not

<sup>164</sup> Extracted from *Great IRS Hoax, Form #11.302, ver. 4.51, Section 5.6.17.* See: <http://famguardian.org/Publications/GreatIRSHoax/GreatIRSHoax.htm>

1 to all people generally throughout the country. Personal consent is required to give the I.R.C. the status of enforceable  
2 law, and we can choose to withhold our consent with no adverse legal consequence.

- 3 2. The I.R.C. effectively amounts to an offer and a proposal by the government to put you under their “special protection”  
4 from the abuses and tyranny of the IRS. If you accept their offer, you are a party to a private contract with them and are  
5 in receipt of taxable federal privileges. The privilege you agreed to accept was that of being left alone and not harassed  
6 by the IRS for your decision to keep or retain whatever money and property is left over after the Federal Mafia has raped  
7 and pillaged their share from your estate.
- 8 3. Every contract requires four things to be valid:  
9 3.1. An offer: The Internal Revenue Code.  
10 3.2. Informed and voluntary Consent/Acceptance. Both parties must voluntarily accept the terms of the offer and duress  
11 may not be used to procure consent.  
12 3.3. Mutual Consideration: Something valuable that both parties receive from the agreement.  
13 3.4. Mutual assent. Both parties were fully informed about the rights they were surrendering and the consideration they  
14 were receiving in return, and all terms of the contract were fully disclosed in writing.
- 15 4. In the case of the voluntary contract called the Internal Revenue Code, the consideration is the right to be left alone *after*  
16 you pay the IRS a large bribe and that essentially amounts to “protection money”. Keeping whatever is left over *after*  
17 you bribe them and pay them their extortion is the consideration you derive from this private contract. This is not,  
18 however, true consideration, mind you, because it is *not* an exercise of free will. Instead, if you *don't* accept the contract,  
19 then you become the target of IRS harassment and terrorism, may lose your job (especially your federal job) and be  
20 persecuted by your coworkers for being a “crackpot”. Voluntary consent is impossible under such conditions. Therefore,  
21 it is impossible for you to agree to such a legal contract, which is why the government never bothers to disclose it to  
22 begin with!
- 23 5. The contract is also void on its face because it was not based on informed consent. The IRS and the government never  
24 fully disclosed to you the terms of their “invisible adhesion contract”, and chances are you never even read any part of  
25 the contract by reading Title 26 for yourself. As a matter of fact, they have exercised every opportunity available to stifle  
26 and persecute those freedom advocates who were trying to educate others about the nature of this contract. Consequently,  
27 like the marriage license you never should have gotten, you signed away your whole life and all your rights by filing  
28 your first 1040 or W-4 form and thereby declaring yourself to be a “taxpayer” under penalty of perjury.

29 *“Waivers of Constitutional rights not only must be voluntary, but must be knowing, intelligent acts done with*  
30 *sufficient awareness of the relevant circumstances and likely consequences.”*  
31 *[Brady v. U.S., 397 U.S. 742 (1970)]*

32 *“The question of a waiver of a federally guaranteed constitutional right is, of course, a federal question controlled*  
33 *by federal law. There is a presumption against the waiver of constitutional rights, see, e.g. Glasser v. United*  
34 *States, 314 U.S. 60, 70-71, 86 L.Ed. 680, 699, 62 S.Ct. 457, and for a waiver to be effective it must be clearly*  
35 *established that there was an ‘intentional relinquishment or abandonment of a known right or privilege.’ Johnson*  
36 *v. Zerbst, 304 U.S. 458, 464, 82 L.Ed. 1461, 1466, 58 S.Ct. 1019, 146 A.L.R. 357.”*  
37 *[Brookhart v. Janis, 384 U.S. 1; 86 S.Ct. 1245; 16 L.Ed.2d. 314 (1966)]*

- 38 6. The decision to accept the terms of the I.R.C. contract also involved fraud on the part of the government. The employees  
39 of the IRS who directly or indirectly influenced you to make the decision to accept the contract also never fully disclosed  
40 to you that they had no authority to enforce the Internal Revenue Code to begin with. If they never had authority to  
41 enforce the I.R.C. against a private citizen who is not employed by the federal government, then they couldn't offer to  
42 stop doing that which they were never authorized to do to begin with! Therefore, they deceived you to believe that they  
43 really were giving you something of value (a “benefit” or “consideration”) that they had the legal authority to provide,  
44 which is the absence of lawful enforcement actions directed against you. In effect, they convinced you to pay for  
45 something that they didn't have the legal authority to provide to begin with! It's all based on fraud.

46 *Unquestionably, the concealment of material facts that one is, under the circumstances, bound to disclose may*  
47 *constitute actionable fraud. 3 Indeed, one of the fundamental tenets of the Anglo-American law of fraud is that*  
48 *fraud may be committed by a suppression of the truth (suppressio veri) as well as by the suggestion of falsehood*  
49 *(suggestio falsi). 4 It is, therefore, equally competent for a court to relieve against fraud whether it is committed*  
50 *by suppression of the truth—that is, by concealment—or by suggestion of falsehood. 5*

51 [...]

52 *Where failure to disclose a material fact is calculated to induce a false belief, the distinction between concealment*  
53 *and affirmative misrepresentation is tenuous. Both are fraudulent. 11 An active concealment has the same*  
54 *force and effect as a representation which is positive in form. 12 The one acts negatively, the other positively;*  
55 *both are calculated, in different ways, to produce the same result. 13 The former, as well as the latter, is a*

1 violation of the principles of good faith. It proceeds from the same motives and is attended with the same  
2 consequences; 14 and the deception and injury may be as great in the one case as in the other.  
3 [37 American Jurisprudence 2d, Fraud and Deceit, §144 (1999)]  
4

5 “Fraud vitiates every transaction and all contracts. Indeed, the principle is often stated, in broad and sweeping  
6 language, that fraud destroys the validity of everything into which it enters, and that it vitiates the most solemn  
7 contracts, documents, and even judgments. 8 Fraud, as it is sometimes said, vitiates every act, which statement  
8 embodies a thoroughly sound doctrine when it is properly applied to the subject matter in controversy and to  
9 the parties thereto and in a proper forum. As a general rule, fraud will vitiate a contract notwithstanding  
10 that it contains a provision to the effect that no representations have been made as an inducement to enter into it,  
11 or that either party shall be bound by any representation not contained therein, or a similar provision attempting  
12 to nullify extraneous representations. Such provisions do not, in most jurisdictions, preclude a charge of fraud  
13 based on oral representations.”  
14 [37 American Jurisprudence 2d, Fraud and Deceit, §144 (1999)]

15 Since the people living in the states never enacted the Internal Revenue Code into “positive law”, then they as the “sovereigns”  
16 in our system of government never consented to enforce it upon themselves collectively. “Positive law” is the only evidence  
17 that the people ever explicitly consented to enforcement actions by their government, because legislation can only become  
18 positive law by a majority of the representatives of the sovereign people voting (consenting) to enact the law. Since the  
19 people never consented, then the “code” cannot be enforced against the general public. The Declaration of Independence  
20 says that all just powers of government derive from the “consent” of the governed. Anything not consensual is, ipso facto,  
21 unjust by implication. In fact, the sovereign People REPEALED, not ENACTED the Internal Revenue Code. It has been  
22 nothing but a repealed law since 1939, in fact. An examination of the Statutes At Large, 53 Stat 1, Section 4, reveals that the  
23 Internal Revenue Code and all prior revenue laws were REPEALED. See:

24 <http://sedm.org/ProductInfo/Respltrs/Exhibits/EX1023.pdf>

25 Even state legislatures recognize that the Internal Revenue Code is not law. Below is a cite from the Oregon Revised Statutes  
26 (ORS), section 316.012, which refers to the Internal Revenue Code. Notice below the use of the phrase “laws of the United  
27 States or to the Internal Revenue Code”. If the Internal Revenue Code were “law”, then that phrase would be redundant, now  
28 wouldn’t it?:

29 **316.012 Terms have same meaning as in federal laws; federal law references.** Any term used in this chapter  
30 has the same meaning as when used in a comparable context in the laws of the United States relating to federal  
31 income taxes, unless a different meaning is clearly required or the term is specifically defined in this chapter.  
32 Except where the Legislative Assembly has provided otherwise, any reference in this chapter to the laws of the  
33 United States or to the Internal Revenue Code:

34 (1) Refers to the laws of the United States or to the Internal Revenue Code as they are amended  
35 and in effect:

36 (a) On December 31, 2002; or

37 (b) If related to the definition of taxable income and attributable to a change in the laws of the  
38 United States or in the Internal Revenue Code that is enacted after December 31, 2005, as applicable to the  
39 tax year of the taxpayer.

40 (2) Refers to the laws of the United States or to the Internal Revenue Code as they are amended  
41 and in effect and applicable for the tax year of the taxpayer, if the reference relates to:  
42 [SOURCE: <http://landru.leg.state.or.us/ors/316.html>]

43 If the Internal Revenue Code is not “positive law”, but a voluntary contract, then what exactly is it? It is a de facto state-  
44 sponsored Federal/Political Religion. Below is how one Christian Writer describes this state-sponsored de facto religion:

45 “There is a war on. Since 1975, hundreds of thousands of Christians in the United States have become aware of  
46 the threat to Christianity posed by humanism. It is amazing how long it took for Christians to recognize that  
47 humanism is a rival religion: about a century.”  
48 [75 Bible Questions Your Instructors Pray You Won’t Ask, Second Edition, Gary North, 1984, 1988, ISBN 0-  
49 930462-03-3, p. 1]

50 You can read the above free book yourself on the website at:

The Internal Revenue Code is “de facto” because there is no positive law passed by Congress that actually implements it. Only those who consent to follow it can have any legal obligation to follow it, because it prescribes no legal duties upon anyone but federal “employees”, contractors, agencies, and benefit recipients. Its existence outside of the federal workplace, such as in the lives of private Americans living or working in the states of the Union, was created and continues to be maintained by constructive fraud using “judge-made law”, which is de facto law put in place by the edicts of covetous criminals sitting on the federal bench. This type of law can only exist as long as there are guns and prisons in the hands of government thieves and idolaters, but as soon as the unlawful duress stops, so does the “[in]voluntary compliance”, as the government likes to call it. Remember what the First Amendment says?:

*“Congress shall make no law respecting the establishment of religion or prohibiting the free exercise thereof.”  
[First Amendment]*

The First Amendment doesn't say anything at all about “judges making law”, so that is exactly what our corrupted state and federal judiciaries have done! A religion is simply a “voluntary” association of people who espouse certain common beliefs and behaviors, the object of which is to reverence or hold in high esteem a “superior being”. If that superior being is anything but the true living God mentioned in the Bible, then we are involved in pagan idol worship.

*“Religion, Man's relation to Divinity, to reverence, worship, obedience, and submission to mandates and precepts of supernatural or superior beings. In its broadest sense includes all forms of belief in the existence of superior beings exercising power over human beings by volition, imposing rules of conduct, with future rewards and punishments. Bond uniting man to God, and a virtue whose purpose is to render God worship due him as source of all being and principle of all government of things. Nikulnikoff v. Archbishop, etc., of Russian Orthodox Greek Catholic Church, 142 Misc. 894, 255 N.Y.S. 653, 663.”  
[Black's Law Dictionary, Sixth Edition, p. 1292, emphasis added]*

Our society is based on “equal protection of the laws” (see section 4.3.2 of the Great IRS Hoax, Form #11.302), so there simply can't be any “superior beings” in America, but the judiciary has changed all that with “judge made law” so that judges become the object of idol worship. We call this “neo-religion” or state-sponsored pagan federal religion “The Civil Religion of Socialism”. This religion is described in detail in section 11.4. Unlike Christianity, the foundation of this state-sponsored judicial religion is fear, not love. This state religion of humanism and socialism is based entirely on “the power to destroy”, which is why it produces fear and why people comply at all. In that sense, it is Satanic and evil. The only basis for a righteous justice system is “the power to create” and not the “power to destroy”, as was pointed out at the beginning of this chapter in section 5.1.1 of the Great IRS Hoax, Form #11.302.

*“The great principle is this: because the constitution will not permit a state to destroy, it will not permit a law involving the power to destroy. [...] They decided against the tax; because the subject had been placed beyond the power of the states, by the constitution. They decided, not on account of the subject, but on account of the power that protected it; they decided that a prohibition against destruction was a prohibition against a law involving the power of destruction.”  
[Providence Bank v. Billings, 29 U.S. 514 (1830)]*

The “law” described above that is doing the destruction to our society presently is “judge made law”, and not statutes passed by Congress. The superior being that is being worshipped in this false religion is “The Beast”, mentioned in the book of Revelation chapters 17 and 18 in the Bible. That book describes “The Beast” as the political rulers (politicians, Congressmen, Judges, and the President) of the earth. The worship and servitude of this “Beast” occurs mostly out of fear but also because of ignorance and laziness.

*“And I saw the beast, the kings [political rulers] of the earth, and their armies [of nonbelievers under a democratic form of government], gathered together to make war against Him [God] who sat on the horse and against His army.”  
[Revelation 19:19, Bible, NKJV]*

Those who took the mark of this “Beast”, the Socialist Security Number, will be the first to be judged and condemned by God, as described in Revelation 16:1-2. See the book below:

1 This Beast is personified by the corruption evident in the political realm and the Federal and state Judiciaries in their  
2 treasonous and illegal enforcement of our revenue codes (not “laws”, but “codes”). The judges in courts everywhere have  
3 become the “Priests” of this pagan neo-religion, and by virtue of the fact that they are ignoring the federal and state  
4 Constitutions and are not being held accountable for such Treason, everything that comes out of their mouth becomes law,  
5 or “common law” or “judge-made law”:

6 *“Judge-made law. A phrase used to indicate judicial decisions which construe away the meaning of statutes, or  
7 find meanings in them the legislature never intended. It is perhaps more commonly used as meaning, simply, the  
8 law established by judicial precedent and decisions. Laws having their source in judicial decisions as opposed  
9 to laws having their source in statutes or administrative regulations.”*  
10 *[Black’s Law Dictionary, Sixth Edition, p. 841]*

11 This “judge-made law” has created a new, “de facto” government that is in complete conflict with the “de jure” government  
12 described by our federal and state Constitutions and the public acts that implement them. This process of corruption is shown  
13 graphically in section 6.1 of the Great IRS Hoax, Form #11.302, where it is shown how the history of how the Executive,  
14 Legislative, and Judicial branches have conspired over the last 100 years to strip us of our Constitutional rights and thereby  
15 make us into tax slaves residing on the “federal plantation” called the federal zone. Only a pagan “god” called a “judge” can  
16 create law out of nothing and without explicit consent of the people found in the Constitution. Only a pagan “god” called a  
17 “judge” can deprive the people of “equal protection” by protecting IRS wrongdoers while coercing those who refuse to  
18 consent to their abuses. Only a pagan “god” can create man-made “law” which conflicts with the Ten Commandments and  
19 the Constitution and do so with impunity.

20 *“...it must be recognized that in any culture the source of law is the god of that society. If law has its source  
21 in man’s reason, then reason is the god of that society. If the source is an oligarchy, or in a court, senate, or  
22 ruler, then that source is the god of that system.*

23 *[...]*

24 *Modern humanism, the religion of the state, locates law in the state and thus makes the state, or the people as  
25 they find expression in the state, the god of the system. As Mao Tse-Tung has said, “Our God is none other than  
26 the masses of the Chinese people.” [2] In Western culture, law has steadily moved away from God to the people  
27 (or the state) as its source, although the historic power and vitality of the West has been in Biblical faith and law.*

28 *“Third, in any society, any change of law is an explicit or implicit change of religion. Nothing more clearly  
29 reveals, in fact, the religious change in a society than a legal revolution. When the legal foundations shift from  
30 Biblical law to humanism, it means that the society now draws its vitality and power from humanism, not from  
31 Christian theism.*

32 *“Fourth, no disestablishment of religion as such is possible in any society. A church can be disestablished, and  
33 a particular religion can be supplanted by another, but the change is simply to another religion. Since the  
34 foundations of law are inescapably religious, no society exists without a religious foundation or without a law-  
35 system which codifies the morality of its religion.”*  
36 *[The Institutes of Biblical Law, Rousas John Rushdoony, 1973, The Craig Press, Library of Congress Catalog  
37 Card Number 72-79485, pp. 4-5]*

38 The purpose of the “Civil Religion of Socialism” is to steal the sovereignty of the People and to replace it with a dictatorship  
39 and a totalitarian police state devoid of individual rights. This is accomplished through “judge-made law” and social  
40 engineering in the tax “code”. The result is that the people comply out of their desire to take the path of least resistance which  
41 minimizes fear and personal liability. The Internal Revenue Code is just such a voluntary federal religion. When we join  
42 this feudal religion and figuratively move our “domicile” and our primary political “allegiance” to the federal plantation  
43 under 26 U.S.C. §7701(a)(39) and 26 U.S.C. §7408(c ). By doing so, we surrender our sovereignty, turn it over to the  
44 Congress, and become “subjects” who live on the “federal plantation” (federal zone), which we call the “matrix”. To join  
45 such a state-sponsored religion, we need only lie about our status as federal “employees” on either a Form W-4 or submit a  
46 1040 Form with a nonzero liability. Once we shift our primary allegiance from God to the “state”, Congress becomes our  
47 new “king” because they can pass any statute and it will apply to us, including those statutes that are not “positive law”, and  
48 they can disregard the need for implementing regulations because they don’t need implementing regulations for federal  
49 “employees”. The benefits of this religion are that we are insulated from responsibility for ourselves and from fear of the  
50 IRS or the government. Acceptance of this religion represents a formal and complete transfer of sovereignty over your  
51 person, labor and property from you to your public “dis-servants”. You turn over responsibility for yourself to the government  
52 in exchange for them taking care of you when you get old or unemployed. You become federal property: a slave, in effect,  
53 through the operation of a voluntary contract called the Internal Revenue Code. This, friends, is nothing short of idolatry, in  
54 stark violation of the First Commandment in the Ten commandments (see Exodus 20 in the Bible) to not have any other idols

1 before God. We are supposed to trust God, not government, to provide for us. Trusting government is putting the vanity of  
2 man ahead of the grace and majesty and sovereignty of God.

3 *"It is better to trust the Lord*  
4 *Than to put confidence in man.*  
5 *It is better to trust in the Lord*  
6 *Than to put confidence in princes [or government, or the 'state']."*  
7 *[Psalm 118:8-9]*

8 Such man-centric (rather than God-centric) idolatry is the worst of all sins described in the Bible, and a sin for which God  
9 repeatedly and violently killed those who committed it. Refer to sections 4.1 and 4.3.1 through 4.3.13 for an in-depth  
10 exposition backing up these conclusions. This type of idolatry describes the original sin of Lucifer, who wanted to do it "his  
11 [man's] way" instead of God's way.<sup>165</sup> God pronounced a death sentence upon us for the original sin of Adam and Eve, and  
12 He said life would be a struggle as a consequence of this death sentence meted out under His sovereign Law.

13 *"Cursed is the ground for your sake;*  
14 *In toil you shall eat of it*  
15 *All the days of your life.*  
16 *Both thorns and thistles it shall bring forth for you,*  
17 *And you shall eat the herb of the field.*  
18 *In the sweat of your face you shall eat bread*  
19 *Till you return to the ground,*  
20 *For out of it you were taken;*  
21 *For dust you are,*  
22 *And to dust you shall return."*  
23 *[Genesis 3:17-19, Bible, NKJV]*

24 Ever since the original fall described above, we have been trying to escape God's sovereign judgment and punishment for  
25 our sin by escaping liability for ourselves and accountability to Him. We have been doing this by making an atheistic  
26 government into our false god, parent, caretaker, and social insurance company. The purpose of law within a society based  
27 on this "Civil Religion of Socialism" is to facilitate irresponsibility and thereby undermine God's sovereignty by interfering  
28 with the curse He put on us for our original sin and disobedience against His sovereign command. This was described much  
29 more thoroughly in section 11.2 if you would like to investigate further. In so doing, we fornicate with the Beast, which is  
30 the political rulers of the world. Black's Law Dictionary defines "commerce" as "intercourse".

31 *"Commerce. ...Intercourse by way of trade and traffic between different peoples or states and the citizens*  
32 *or inhabitants thereof, including not only the purchase, sale, and exchange of commodities, but also the*  
33 *instrumentalities [governments] and agencies by which it is promoted and the means and appliances by which it*  
34 *is carried on..."*  
35 *[Black's Law Dictionary, Sixth Edition, p. 269]*

36 When we, as natural persons, send our money to the government or receive money from the government, we are involved in  
37 "intercourse". The Bible in Isaiah 54:5-6 describes God as the "husband" of believers and it describes believers as His  
38 "bride". We as His bride are committing adultery and fornication when we conduct "commerce" with the government as  
39 private individuals. See section 4.3.1 of the Great IRS Hoax, Form #11.302 for a complete explanation of this analogy that  
40 is quite frightening and completely fulfills the prophesy found in the book of Revelation in the Bible.

41 Now that we have established that the "Tax Code" is in fact a state sponsored religion, we will now document the core  
42 "beliefs" that make up this false religion. We will also show why every one of these beliefs not only cannot be substantiated  
43 with facts or law, but also that the opposite can be established with admissible evidence, scientifically provable facts, and  
44 law. This comparison and analysis builds upon the article in section 11.4, where we proved that our government has become  
45 a god, and that this was done essentially by destroying the "equal protection of the laws" that is the foundation of freedom in  
46 this country, and thereby making the public servants into gods because they do not have to abide by the same rules as everyone  
47 else does.

---

<sup>165</sup> See Isaiah 14:12-21.



1 **Table 5: Comparison of Political Religion v. Christianity**

<i>Belief</i>	<i>The false belief of “cult members”</i>	<i>The truth</i>	<i>Proof of the truth found in which section of the Great IRS Hoax, Form #11.302 book</i>
View of government	Government does good things for people and would never do bad things.	People working in government are human, make mistakes, and in the context of money, have been known to lie, deceive, and persecute those who insist on a law-abiding revenue collection system.	4.3.1, 4.3.2, 4.3.12
Purpose of government	Minimize risk and personal responsibility. Promote good. Decriminalize sinful behaviors. Act as a big parent for everyone.	To keep people from hurting each other and leave all other subjects at the discretion of the people.	4.3.1, 4.3.4
View of freedom in this country	Declaration of Independence says all just powers are based on the “consent of the governed”. I am free because no one forces me to do anything.	Americans are not free because taxes on labor are slavery in violation of the Thirteenth Amendment. The IRS collects without the authority of law or the explicit consent of the people. Consent is required and therefore the IRS is a terrorist organization because it ignores the requirement for consent. If you want to find out how “free” you are, then just	5.4.1 to 5.4.3.5
Citizenship	Everyone born in America is a “U.S. citizen” under federal law and under 8 U.S.C. §1401	People born in states of the Union and not on federal property are “citizens of the United States” under Section 1 of the Fourteenth Amendment but do not come under the jurisdiction of nearly all federal laws, including 8 U.S.C. §1401.	4.11 to 4.11.12
Meaning of the word “tax”	“Taxes” are money we pay the government to be spent however the democratic majority decides they want to spend it	The power of the government cannot be used for wealth redistribution, because this would be legalized theft, and theft is a sin and a crime, no matter who does it	5.1.2
Federal jurisdiction	The federal government has unlimited jurisdiction within states	The federal government only has delegated authority within states of the Union that derives directly from the Constitution. This authority is limited exclusively to mail fraud, counterfeiting, treason, and slavery. All other subject matters come under the exclusive police powers of the states.	5.2 through 5.1.9

<i>Belief</i>	<i>The false belief of “cult members”</i>	<i>The truth</i>	<i>Proof of the truth found in which section of the Great IRS Hoax, Form #11.302 book</i>
View of American justice system	Our justice system is fair and lawful. There is no conflict of interest anywhere.	Conflict of interest occurs every day all day in federal courtrooms. It is a conflict of interest in violation of 18 U.S.C. 208 for any judge or jurist to hear a case in which they have a financial interest, and yet federal judges and jurors routinely participate in tax trials while at the same time either being “taxpayers” who are jealous of the accused for not paying his “fair share”, or they are in receipt of socialist benefits derived from other people who participate in the IRS scam. This scam started in 1918, which was the first year that federal judges were made into “taxpayers” and subject to IRS extortion. As long as a federal judge risks an audit by IRS for not helping them prosecute tax resisters, justice is impossible in any courtroom. As long as attorneys are licensed by the government, it is impossible to get impartial representation in a court either. Attorney licensing started about the same time as judges became “taxpayers”, during the 1930’s in this country.	6.9 to 6.9.12
Nature of IRS publications	The IRS and the government tell the truth in the IRS publications and in their phone support..	The IRS publications are deceptive because they omit the most important parts of the truth.	3.19
Federal judges	Federal judges are honorable men who have no conflict of interest when hearing tax trials.	Since federal judges were put on the income tax rolls starting in 1918 and put under IRS terrorism, there has been no justice in the federal courtroom in the context of income taxes since then.	See: <a href="http://famguardian.org/TaxFreedom/Forms/Discovery/Deposition/WhyCourtsCantAddressQuestions.htm">http://famguardian.org/TaxFreedom/Forms/Discovery/Deposition/WhyCourtsCantAddressQuestions.htm</a>
Purpose of law	To promote good and public policy	To punish harm and leave all other subjects at the discretion of the individual.	3.3 to 3.6
IRS authority	IRS has legal authority to enforce the income tax, including assessments, penalties, and require people to keep records.	The Internal Revenue Code is not positive law, but special law. The entire title was never enacted into positive law (see 1 U.S.C. 204 legislative notes) and can’t be, because abuse of the government’s taxing power to accomplish theft can never be made into law. The I.R.C. was repealed in 1939 and now essentially amounts to a state-sponsored federal religion which is by the federal judiciary using “malicious abuse of legal process”.	5.4.10 to 5.4.13, Chapter 7
Requirement to pay taxes	Everyone should pay their “fair share”. This is a political, not legal requirement., which makes it a religion, not a law.	“Fair share” is determined by law, and we don’t have a law. The Internal Revenue Code, which is not law, also has no enforcement regulations so that even if it was law, it could not be enforced by the IRS. Therefore, there is no requirement for the average American to pay anything under the Internal Revenue Code.	5.1.2, 5.4.1 to 5.4.3.5, 5.6 to 5.6.21.

<i>Belief</i>	<i>The false belief of “cult members”</i>	<i>The truth</i>	<i>Proof of the truth found in which section of the Great IRS Hoax, Form #11.302 book</i>
Requirement to file a return	Everyone, and especially patriotic “U.S. citizens”, must file a return	There must be a legal “liability” existing in a positive law federal statute that applies to American in the states before there is a liability to file a return. No such statutes, nor regulations that implement them, exist. All prosecutions for willful failure to file amount to “malicious abuse of legal process” and “terrorism” by government judges and prosecutors in the absence of positive law.	5.5 to 5.5.10.
Relationship between religious belief and government	God comes first in my life as a Christian.	God comes second in the lives of those who pay federal taxes, because the government gets the “first fruits” before God gets His, in violation of Prov. 3:9-10. This is idolatry in violation of the first four commandments.	4.1, 4.3.3 to 4.3.15
View of my church’s relationship to the government	My pastor is neutral and objective in his view of government, and is under no duress at all by the government.	Most pastors are extensions of the government because they are privileged under 26 U.S.C. §501(c)(3). With this privileged status comes an obligation to not speak out against the government or corruption in the government, for fear of losing tax exempt status that was never really needed anyway because the federal government had no jurisdiction over them to begin with. There is no separation of church and state as long as IRS is able to abuse its power to persecute churches who expose their illegal activities by pulling their 501(c)(3) status and subjecting them to audits and harassment.	4.3.6 to 4.3.13

1 One of the things you hear church pastors talk about quite often is how Satan is the great imitator. Satan imitates God's  
2 design for everything. Satan, in fact, is quoted as saying:

3 "I will ascend into heaven,  
4 I will exalt my throne above the stars of God;  
5 I will also sit on the mount of the congregation  
6 On the farthest sides of the north;  
7 I will ascend above the heights of the clouds,  
8 **I will be like the Most High.**  
9 [Isaiah 14:13-14, Bible, NKJV]

10 The Bible also says that Satan is in control of this world and the governments of the world. See Matt. 4:8-11, John 14:30-31.  
11 Our tax system, in fact, is an imitation of God's design for the church and has all the trappings of a church. Going back to  
12 our definition of "religion" once again to prove this:

13 "**Religion.** Man's relation to Divinity, to reverence, worship, obedience, and submission to mandates and  
14 precepts of supernatural or superior beings. In its broadest sense includes all forms of belief in the existence of  
15 superior beings exercising power over human beings by volition, imposing rules of conduct, with future rewards  
16 and punishments. Bond uniting man to God, and a virtue whose purpose is to render God worship due him as  
17 source of all being and principle of all government of things. *Nikulnikoff v. Archbishop, etc., of Russian Orthodox*  
18 *Greek Catholic Church, 142 Misc. 894, 255 N.Y.S. 653, 663.*"  
19 [Black's Law Dictionary, Sixth Edition, p. 1292]

20 Based on the criteria in the above table, we can see that the Internal Revenue Code has all the essential characteristics of a  
21 "religion" and a church and thereby imitates God's design:

22 1. "Belief" in a superior being, which is the federal judge and public "servants". This reversal of roles, whereby the public  
23 "servants" become the ruling class is called a "dulocracy" in law.

24 "**Dulocracy.** A government where servants and slaves have so much license and privilege that they domineer."  
25 [Black's Law Dictionary, Sixth Edition, p. 501]

26 2. The capitol, Washington D.C., is the "political temple" or headquarters of this false religious cult. Don't believe us?  
27 During the Congressional debates of the Sixteenth Amendment in 1909, one Congressman amazingly admitted as much.  
28 The Sixteenth Amendment is the income tax amendment that was later fraudulently ratified in 1913. Notice the use of  
29 the words "civic temple" and "faith" in his statement, which are no accident.

30 "Now, Mr. Speaker, **this Capitol is the civic temple of the people**, and we are here by direction of the people to  
31 reduce the tariff tax and enact a law in the interest of all the people. This was the expressed will of the people at  
32 the polls, and you promised to carry out that will, but **you have not kept faith with the American people.**"  
33 [44 Cong.Rec. 4420, July 12, 1909; Congressman Heflin talking about the enactment of the Sixteenth  
34 Amendment]

35 If you want to read the above amazing admission for yourself, visit the website at:  
36 <http://fanguardian.org/TaxFreedom/History/Congress/1909-16thAmendCongrRecord.pdf>

37 3. This false and evil religion meets all the criteria for being described as a "cult", because:

38 3.1. The cult imposes strict rules of conduct that are thousands of pages long and which are far more restrictive than  
39 any other religious cult.

40 3.2. Participating in it is harmful to our rights, liberty, and property.

41 3.3. The "cult" is perpetuated by keeping the truth secret from its members. The *Great IRS Hoax*, Form #11.302  
42 contains 2,100 pages of secrets that our public servants and the federal judiciary have done their best to keep  
43 cleverly hidden and obscured from public view and discourse. When these secrets come out in federal courtrooms,  
44 the judges make the case unpublished so the American people can't learn the truth about the misdeeds of their  
45 servants in government. Don't believe us? Read the proof for yourself:

46 <http://www.nonpublication.com/>

47 3.4. Those who try to abandon this harmful cult are threatened and harassed illegally and unconstitutionally by covetous  
48 public dis-servants. For an example, see:

49 <http://www.irs.gov/compliance/enforcement/article/0,,id=119332.00.html>

50 4. No scientifically proven basis for belief. False belief is entirely based on false presumption, which in turn is promoted  
51 by:

- 1 4.1. “Prima facie” law such as the Internal Revenue Code. “Prima facie” means “presumed to be law”.
- 2 4.2. Propaganda and “brainwashing” by the media and public schools and cannot stand public scrutiny or scientific
- 3 investigation because it cannot be substantiated.
- 4 4.3. Deceptive IRS publications that don’t tell the whole truth. See section 3.19 of the *Great IRS Hoax*, Form #11.302
- 5 for proof.
- 6 5. The false government “god” is the “source of all being and principle of all government”. Those who refuse to comply
- 7 are illegally stripped of their property rights, their security, and their government employment by a lawless federal
- 8 judiciary in retaliation for demanding the rule of written positive law. They cease to have a commercial existence or
- 9 “being” as a punishment for demanding the “rule of law” instead of “rule of men” in our country. Their credit rating is
- 10 destroyed and their property is illegally confiscated as punishment for failure to comply with the whims, wishes, and
- 11 edicts of an “imperial judiciary” and its henchmen, the IRS.
- 12 6. The false religion has its own “bible”, which is all 9,500 pages of the “Infernal (Satanic) Revenue Code”. This “scripture”
- 13 or “bible” was written by the false prophets, who are our political leaders in Congress. It was written to further their
- 14 own political (church) ends. Former Treasury Secretary Paul O’Neil calls the I.R.C.:

15 “9,500 pages of gibberish.”

- 16 7. Federal courtrooms are where “worship services” are held for the cult. Even the seats are the same as church pews! This
- 17 worship service amounts to devil worship, because its purpose is to help criminals working for the government to enforce
- 18 in a federal courtroom that which is neither law nor which can be proven to create any obligation on the part of anyone.
- 19 In that sense, we are participating in Treason against the Constitution by aiding and abetting it. By subsidizing this
- 20 madness and fraud, we are also bribing public officials in violation of 18 U.S.C. §201.
- 21 7.1. Obedience to the edicts of the priest serve the function of “worship” in this civil religion.

22 *Obedientia est legis essentia.*

23 *Obedience is the essence of the law. 11 Co. 100.*

24 [*Bouvier’s Maxims of Law, 1856;*

25 SOURCE: <http://famguardian.org/Publications/BouvierMaximsOfLaw/BouviereMaxims.htm>]

26 “***He who has [understands and learns] My commandments [laws in the Bible] and keeps them, it is he who***

27 ***loves Me.*** And he who loves Me will be loved by My Father, and I will love him and manifest Myself to him.”

28 [*John 14:21, Bible, NKJV*]

- 29 7.2. Worship services consist of court hearings and trials.
- 30 7.3. Worship services begin with a religious event.
- 31 7.3.1. The taking of an oath is a religious event.

32 *Jurare est Deum in testum vocare, et est actus divini cultus.*

33 ***To swear is to call God to witness, and is an act of religion.*** 3 Co. Inst. 165. Vide 3 Bouv. Inst. n. 3180, note; 1

34 Benth. Rat. of Jud. Ev. 376, 371, note.

35 [*Bouvier’s Maxims of Law, 1856;*

36 SOURCE: <http://famguardian.org/Publications/BouvierMaximsOfLaw/BouviereMaxims.htm>]

- 37 7.3.2. Before the worship services begin, observers and the jury must stand up when the judge enters the room. This
- 38 too is an act of “worshipping and reverencing” their superior being, who in fact is a pagan deity.

39 ***Religion.*** Man’s relation to Divinity, ***to reverence, worship, obedience, and submission to mandates and***

40 ***precepts of supernatural or superior beings [JUDGES, in this case].*** In its broadest sense includes all forms of

41 belief in the existence of superior beings exercising power over human beings by volition, imposing rules of

42 conduct, with future rewards and punishments. Bond uniting man to God, and a virtue whose purpose is to render

43 God worship due him as source of all being and principle of all government of things. *Nikulnikoff v. Archbishop,*

44 *etc., of Russian Orthodox Greek Catholic Church, 142 Misc. 894, 255 N.Y.S. 653, 663.*

45 [*Black’s Law Dictionary, Sixth Edition, p. 1292*]

- 46 7.4. The worship ceremony, at least in the context of taxes, is conducted in the figurative dark, like a séance. The Bible
- 47 describes Truth as “light”. Any ceremony where the entire truth is not considered is conducted in the dark.
- 48 7.4.1. The judge is gagged by the law from speaking the truth by the legislature. [28 U.S.C. §2201\(a\)](#).
- 49 7.4.2. The judge forbids others from speaking the ONLY truth, which is the law itself. In tax trials, judges very
- 50 commonly forbid especially defendants from quoting or using the law in front of the jury. Those who
- 51 disregard this prohibition are sentenced to contempt of court.

1                   *“One who turns his ear from hearing the law [God's law or man's law], even his prayer [and ESPECIALLY his*  
2 *trial] is an abomination.”*  
3 *[Prov. 28:9, Bible, NKJV]*

- 4           7.4.3. Jurists who have never read or learned the law in public school are not even aware of what they are enforcing.  
5           Therefore, they become agents of the judge instead of the law.  
6           7.4.4. The law library in the court building forbids jurors from going in and reading the law they are enforcing, and  
7           especially while serving as jurists. They are supposed to be supervising the judge in executing the law, and  
8           they can't fulfill that duty as long as they have never learned and are forbidden from reading the law while  
9           serving as jurors.  
10          7.4.5. The judge does everything in his power to destroy the weapons of the nongovernmental opponent by excluding  
11          everything he can and excluding none of the government's evidence. This basically results in a vacuum of  
12          truth in the courtroom.

13                   *The first one to plead his cause seems right, Until his neighbor comes and examines him.*  
14 *[Prov. 18:17, Bible, NKJV]*

15                   *“The hypocrite with his mouth destroys his neighbor. But through knowledge the righteous will be delivered.”*  
16 *[Prov. 11:9, Bible, NKJV]*

- 17   8. The “deacons” of the church are attorneys who are “licensed” to practice law in the church by the chief priests of the  
18   church.  
19   8.1. They too have been “brainwashed” in both public school and law school to focus all their effort on procedure,  
20   presentation, and managing their business. They learn NOTHING about history, legislative intent, or natural law,  
21   which are the very foundations of law.  
22   8.2. The Statutes At Large published by Congress are the only real law and legally admissible evidence, in most cases.  
23   See [1 U.S.C. §204](#). Yet, it is so expensive and inconvenient to read the Statutes At Large online that for all practical  
24   purposes, it is off limits to all attorneys. For instance, it costs over \$7 per page to even VIEW the Statutes At Large  
25   in the largest online legal reference service, Westlaw.  
26   8.3. Because they are licensed to practice law, the license is used as a vehicle to censor and control the attorneys from  
27   speaking the truth in the courtroom. Consequently, they usually blindly follow what the priest, ahem, I mean  
28   “judge” orders them to do and when they don't, they have their license pulled and literally starve to death.  
29   9. The greatest sin in the government church called court is willful violations of the law. All tax crimes carry “willfulness”  
30   as a prerequisite. God's law and Christianity work *exactly* the same way. The greatest sin in the Holy Bible is to  
31   blaspheme the Holy Spirit, which is equivalent of doing something that you KNOW is wrong. See Matt. 12:32, Mark  
32   3:29, Luke 12:10.  
33   10. The judge, like the church pastor, wears a black robe and chants in Latin. Many legal maxims are Latin phrases that  
34   have no meaning to the average citizen, which is the very same thing that happens in Catholic churches daily across the  
35   country.  
36   11. The jury are the twelve disciples of the judge, rather than of the Truth or the law or their conscience. Their original  
37   purpose was as a check on government abuse and usurpation, but judges steer them away from ruling in such a manner  
38   and being gullible sheep raised in the public “fool” system, they comply to their own injury.  
39   11.1. Those who are not already members of the cult are not allowed to serve on juries. The judge or the judge's  
40   henchmen, his “licensed attorneys” who are “officers of the court”, dismiss prospective jurists who are not cult  
41   members during the voir dire (jury selection) phase of the tax trial. The qualifications that prospective jurists must  
42   meet in order to be part of the “cult” are at least one of the following:  
43   11.1.1. They collect government benefits based on income taxes and don't want to see those benefits reduced or  
44   stopped. The only people who can collect federal benefits under enacted law and the Constitution are federal  
45   employees. Therefore, they must be federal employees. Since jurists are acting as “voters”, then receipt of  
46   any federal benefits makes them into a biased jury in the context of income taxes and violates 18 U.S.C. §597,  
47   which makes it illegal to bribe a voter. The only way to eliminate this conflict of interest is to permanently  
48   remove public assistance or to recuse/disqualify them as jurists.  
49   11.1.2. They faithfully pay what they “think” are “income taxes”. They are blissfully unaware that in actuality,  
50   the 1040 return is a federal employment profit and loss statement.  
51   11.1.3. They believe or have “faith” in the cult's “bible”, which is the Infernal (Satanic) Revenue Code and falsely  
52   believe it is “law”. Instead, 1 U.S.C. §204 legislative notes says it is NOT positive law, but simply “presumed”  
53   to be law. Presumption is a violation of due process and therefore illegal under the Sixth Amendment.

1 11.1.4. They are ignorant of the law and were made so in a public school. They therefore must believe whatever  
2 any judge or attorney tells them about “law”. This means they will make a good lemming to jump off the cliff  
3 with the fellow citizen who is being tried.

4 11.2. Juries are FORBIDDEN in every federal courthouse in the country from entering the law library while serving on  
5 a jury because judges don’t want jurists reading the law and finding out that judges are misrepresenting it in the  
6 courtroom. Don’t believe us? Then call the law library in any federal court building and ask them if jurists are  
7 allowed to go in there and read the law while they are serving. Below are the General Order 228C for the Federal  
8 District Court in San Diego proving that jurors are not allowed to use the court law library while serving. Notice  
9 jurors are not listed as authorized to use the library in this order:

10 <http://famguardian.org/Disks/TaxDVD/Evidence/JudicialCorruption/GenOrder228C-Library.pdf>

11 11.3. Unlike every other type of federal trial, judges forbid discussing the law in a tax trial. Could it be because we don’t  
12 have any and he doesn’t want to admit it?

13 11.4. Public (government) schools deliberately don’t teach law or the Constitution either, so that the public become sheep  
14 that the government can shear and rape and pillage.

15 11.5. Federal judges also warn juries these days NOT to vote on their conscience, as juries originally did and were  
16 encouraged to do. He does this to steer or direct the jury to do his illegal and unconstitutional dirty work. He turns  
17 the jury effectively into an angry lynch mob and thereby maliciously abuses legal process for his own personal  
18 benefit in violation of 18 U.S.C. §208. He helps get the jury angry at the defendant by giving them the idea that  
19 their “tax” bill will be bigger because the defendant refuses to “pay their fair share”.

20 12. Those who refuse to worship the false god and false religion (which the Bible describes in the book of Revelation as “the  
21 Beast”) are “exorcised” from society by being put into jail so that they don’t spread the truth about the total lack of lawful  
22 authority to institute income taxation within states of the Union. They are jailed as political prisoners by communist  
23 judges and socialist fellow citizens, just like in the Soviet Union. You can read more about this at:

*Social Security: Mark of the Beast, Form #11.407*

<http://sedm.org/Forms/FormIndex.htm>

24 13. The lawyers representing both sides are licensed by the pope/judge and therefore will pay homage to and cooperate with  
25 him fully or risk losing their livelihood and becoming homeless. Every tax trial has THREE prosecutors who are there  
26 to prosecute you: your defense attorney, the opposing U.S. attorney, and the judge, all of whom are on the take. Attorneys  
27 have a conflict of interest and it is therefore impossible for them to objectively satisfy the fiduciary duty to their clients  
28 which they have under the law. You can read more about this scam at:

29 <http://famguardian.org/Subjects/LawAndGovt/LegalEthics/PetForAdmToPractice-USDC.pdf>

30 14. “Future rewards and punishments”, which are political persecution in a courtroom using our uninformed neighbors  
31 acting as jurors as a weapon against us and by exploiting their fear of the government, envy and jealousy directed against  
32 the rich or those who dare to demand the authority of law before they will pay “their fair share”, or those who challenge  
33 being compelled to subsidize the government benefit payments to these jurors with their labor.

34 15. Tax preparation businesses all over the country like H.R. Block are where “confession” is held annually to “deacons” of  
35 the federal church/cult.

36 16. Representatives of this church/cult, such as the Department of Justice and the IRS, dress the same as Mormon  
37 missionaries. They even travel in pairs and wear ID like Mormon missionaries. They must love Mormons because the  
38 “tax protester” capitol for the IRS is in Ogden Utah. Utah is the home state of the Mormons.

39 17. Those who participate in this cult can write-off or deduct their contributions just like donations to any church. State  
40 income taxes, for instance, are deductible from federal gross income.

41 18. The false god/idol called government gets the “first fruits” of our labor, before the Lord even gets one dime, using payroll  
42 deductions. Some employers treat the payroll deduction program like it is a law to be followed religiously, even though  
43 it is not. This is a violation of Prov. 3:9, which says:

44 *“Honor the LORD with your possessions, And with the **firstfruits** of all your increase;”*  
45 *[Prov. 3:9, Bible, NKJV]*

46 Yes, people, the government has made itself into a religion and a church, at least in the realm of taxation. The problem with  
47 this corruption of our government is that the U.S. Supreme Court said they cannot do it:

48 *“The “establishment of religion” clause of the First Amendment means at least this: **neither a state nor the***  
49 ***Federal Government can set up a church.** Neither can pass laws which aid one [state-sponsored political]*  
50 *religion, aid all religions, or prefer one religion over another. Neither can force or influence a person to go to*  
51 *or to remain away from church against his will, or force him to profess a belief or disbelief in any religion. No*  
52 *person can be punished for entertaining or professing religious beliefs or disbeliefs, for church attendance or*  
53 *non-attendance. **No tax in any amount, large or small, can be levied to support any religious activities or***  
54 ***institutions, whatever they may be called, or whatever form they may adopt to teach or practice religion.***

1 Neither a state nor the Federal Government can, openly or secretly, participate in the affairs of any religious  
2 organizations or groups and vice versa.  
3 [Everson v. Bd. of Ed., 330 U.S. 1, 15 (1947)]  
4

5 "[T]he Establishment Clause is infringed when the government makes adherence to religion relevant to a  
6 person's standing in the political community. Direct government action endorsing religion or a particular  
7 religious practice is invalid under this approach, because it sends a message to nonadherents that they are  
8 outsiders, not full members of the political community, and an accompanying message to adherents that they are  
9 insiders, favored members of the political community".  
10 [Wallace v. Jaffree, 472 U.S. 69 (1985)]

11 Can we prove with evidence that this false political religion is a "cult"? Below is the definition of "cult" from Easton's Bible  
12 Dictionary:

13 "cults, illicit non-Israelite forms of worship. Throughout the history of ancient Israel, there were those who  
14 participated in and fostered the growth of cults (cf. 2 Kings 21). These cults arose from Canaanite influence in  
15 the land of Israel itself and from the influence of neighboring countries. One of the main tasks of the prophets  
16 was to return the people to the proper worship of God and to eliminate these competing cults (1 Kings 18:20-40).  
17 See also Asherah; Baal; Chemosh; Harlot; High Place; Idol; Milcom; Molech; Queen of Heaven; Tammuz;  
18 Topheth; Worship; Zeus.<sup>166</sup> "

19 Since the belief and worship of people is directed at other than a monotheistic Christian God, the government has become a  
20 "cult". It has also become a dangerous or harmful cult. Below is the description of "dangerous cults" from the Microsoft  
21 Encarta Encyclopedia 2005:

22 *"V. Dangerous Cults*

23 *Some cults or alternative religions are clearly dangerous: They provoke violence or antisocial acts or place their*  
24 *members in physical [or financial] danger. A few have caused the deaths of members through mass suicide or*  
25 *have supported violence, including murder, against people outside the cult. Sociologists note that violent cults*  
26 *are only a small minority of alternative religions, although they draw the most media attention.*

27 **Dangerous cults tend to share certain characteristics. These groups typically have an exceedingly**  
28 **authoritarian leader who seeks to control every aspect of members' lives and allows no questioning of**  
29 **decisions. Such leaders may hold themselves above the law or exempt themselves from requirements made of**  
30 **other members of the group.** They often preach a doomsday scenario that presumes persecution from forces  
31 outside the cult and a consequent need to prepare for an imminent Armageddon, or final battle between good and  
32 evil. In preparation they may hoard firearms. Alternatively, cult leaders may prepare members for suicide, which  
33 the group believes will transport it to a place of eternal bliss"  
34 [Microsoft © Encarta © Reference Library 2005. © 1993-2004 Microsoft Corporation. All rights reserved.]

35 To summarize then:

- 36 1. A "cult" is "dangerous" if it promotes activities that are harmful. Giving away one's earnings and sovereignty is harmful  
37 if not done knowingly, voluntarily, and with full awareness of what one was giving up. This is exactly what people do  
38 who file or pay monies to the government that no law requires them to pay.  
39 2. Dangerous cults are authoritarian and have stiff mainly "political penalties" for failure to comply. The federal judiciary  
40 dishes out stiff penalties to people who refuse to join or participate in the dangerous cult, even though there is no "law"  
41 or positive law authorizing them to do so and no implementing regulation that authorizes any kind of enforcement action  
42 for the positive law. These penalties are as follows:  
43 2.1. Jail time.  
44 2.2. Persecution from a misinformed jury who has been deliberately tampered with by the judge to cover up government  
45 wrongdoing and prejudice the case against the accused.  
46 2.3. Exorbitant legal fees paying for an attorney in order to resist the persecution.  
47 2.4. Loss of reputation, credit rating, and influence in society.  
48 2.5. Deprivation of property and rights to property because of refusal to comply.  
49 3. The dangerous cult of the Infernal (Satanic) Revenue Code also seeks to control every aspect of the members lives. The  
50 tax code is used as an extensive, excessive, and oppressive means of political control over the spending and working

<sup>166</sup>Achtemeier, P. J., Harper & Row, P., & Society of Biblical Literature. 1985. *Harper's Bible dictionary*. Includes index. (1st ed.). Harper & Row: San Francisco



1 habits of working Americans everywhere. The extent of this political control was never envisioned or intended by our  
2 Founding Fathers, who wanted us to be completely free of the government. Members of the cult falsely believe that  
3 there is a law requiring them to report every source of earnings, every expenditure in excruciating detail. They have to  
4 sign the report under penalty of perjury and be thrown in jail for three years if even one digit on the report is wrong. The  
5 IRS, on the other hand, isn't responsible for the accuracy of anything, including their publications, phone support, or  
6 even their illegal assessments. In that sense, they are a false god, because they play by different and lesser rules than  
7 everyone else.

- 8 4. The cult of the Infernal (Satanic) Revenue Code also “preaches a doomsday scenario that presumes persecution from  
9 forces outside the cult”. This is a religion based on fear, and the fear originates both from ignorance about the law and  
10 with what will happen to the members who leave the cult or refuse to comply with all the requirements of the cult. The  
11 doomsday messages are broadcast from the IRS and DOJ website, public affairs section, where they target famous  
12 personalities for persecution because of failure to participate in the cult, and when successful, use the result as evidence  
13 that they too will be severely persecuted for failure to participate. This is no different than what the Communists did in  
14 Eastern Europe, where they put a big wall around East Berlin 100 miles long to force people to remain under communist  
15 rule. They patrolled the wall by guards, dogs, and weapons, and highly publicized all escape attempts in which people  
16 were killed, maimed, or murdered. This negative publicity acted as a warning and deterrent against those who might  
17 think of escaping.
- 18 5. The cult of the Infernal (Satanic) Revenue Code also prepares people for spiritual suicide and Armageddon. Remember,  
19 the term “Armageddon” comes from the Bible book of Revelation, where doomsday predictions describe what will  
20 happen to those who allowed government to become their false god. Those who did so, and who accepted the  
21 government’s “mark” called the Socialist INSecurity Number, will be the first to be judged and persecuted and injured,  
22 according to Revelation. This is the REAL Armageddon folks!

23 *“So the first [angel] went and poured out his bowl [of judgment] upon the earth, and a foul and loathsome sore  
24 came upon the men who had the mark of the beast [political rulers] and those who worshiped his image [on  
25 the money].”  
26 [Rev. 16:2, Bible, NKJV]*

27 Only those who do not accept the government’s mark will reign with Christ in Heaven:

28 *“And I saw thrones, and they sat on them, and judgment was committed to them. Then I saw the souls of those  
29 who had been beheaded for their witness to Jesus and for the word of God, who had not worshiped the beast or  
30 his image, and had not received his mark on their foreheads or on their hands. And they lived and reigned  
31 with Christ for a thousand years.”  
32 [Rev. 20:4, Bible, NKJV]*

33 Surprisingly, the U.S. Congress, who are the REAL criminals and cult leaders who wrote the “Bible” that started this  
34 dangerous “cult of the Infernal Revenue Code”, also described the cult as a form of “communism”. Here is the unbelievable  
35 description, right from the Beast’s mouth, of the dastardly corruption of our legal and political system which it willfully did  
36 and continues to perpetuate and cover up:

37 [TITLE 50 > CHAPTER 23 > SUBCHAPTER IV > Sec. 841.](#)  
38 [Sec. 841. - Findings and declarations of fact](#)

39 *The Congress finds and declares that the Communist Party of the United States [consisting of the IRS, DOJ, and  
40 a corrupted federal judiciary], although purportedly a political party, is in fact an instrumentality of a conspiracy  
41 to overthrow the [de jure] Government of the United States [and replace it with a de facto government ruled by  
42 a the judiciary]. It constitutes an authoritarian dictatorship [IRS, DOJ, and corrupted federal judiciary in  
43 collusion] within a [constitutional] republic, demanding for itself the rights and privileges [including immunity  
44 from prosecution for their wrongdoing in violation of Article 1, Section 9, Clause 8 of the Constitution] accorded  
45 to political parties, but denying to all others the liberties [Bill of Rights] guaranteed by the Constitution. Unlike  
46 political parties, which evolve their policies and programs through public means, by the reconciliation of a wide  
47 variety of individual views, and submit those policies and programs to the electorate at large for approval or  
48 disapproval, the policies and programs of the Communist Party are secretly [by corrupt judges and the IRS in  
49 complete disregard of the tax laws] prescribed for it by the foreign leaders of the world Communist movement  
50 [the IRS and Federal Reserve]. Its members [the Congress, which was terrorized to do IRS bidding recently by  
51 the framing of Congressman Traficant] have no part in determining its goals, and are not permitted to voice  
52 dissent to party objectives. Unlike members of political parties, members of the Communist Party are recruited  
53 for indoctrination [in the public schools by homosexuals, liberals, and socialists] with respect to its objectives  
54 and methods, and are organized, instructed, and disciplined [by the IRS and a corrupted judiciary] to carry into  
55 action slavishly the assignments given them by their hierarchical chieftains. Unlike political parties, the  
56 Communist Party [thanks to a corrupted federal judiciary] acknowledges no constitutional or statutory  
57 limitations upon its conduct or upon that of its members. The Communist Party is relatively small numerically,*

1 *and gives scant indication of capacity ever to attain its ends by lawful political means. The peril inherent in its*  
2 *operation arises not from its numbers, but from its failure to acknowledge any limitation as to the nature of its*  
3 *activities, and its dedication to the proposition that the present constitutional Government of the United States*  
4 *ultimately must be brought to ruin by any available means, including resort to force and violence [or using*  
5 *income taxes]. Holding that doctrine, its role as the agency of a hostile foreign power [the Federal Reserve and*  
6 *the American Bar Association (ABA)] renders its existence a clear present and continuing danger to the security*  
7 *of the United States. It is the means whereby individuals are seduced into the service of the world Communist*  
8 *movement, trained to do its bidding, and directed and controlled in the conspiratorial performance of their*  
9 *revolutionary services. Therefore, the Communist Party should be outlawed.*

10 That's right folks: We now live under communism stealthily disguised as "democracy", and which is implemented *exactly*  
11 the same way it was done in Eastern Europe. It's just a little better hidden than it was in Europe, but it's still every bit as real  
12 and evil. Go back and review section 2.7.1 of the *Great IRS Hoax*, Form #11.302 if you want to compare our system of  
13 government with Pure Communism. The "wall" between east and west like the one in Berlin is an invisible "legal wall"  
14 maintained by the federal judiciary and the legal profession, who keep people (the "slaves" living on the federal plantation)  
15 from escaping the communism and regaining their freedom and complete control over their property, their labor, and their  
16 lives. Those who participate in the federal income tax system by living on this figurative "federal plantation" essentially are  
17 treated as government "employees". In order to join this dangerous cult, all they have to do is use a federal W-4 or 1040  
18 form to lie or deceive the federal government into believing that they are "U.S. citizens" and "employees", who under the  
19 I.R.C. are actually and only privileged elected or appointed officers of the United States government. This is what it means  
20 to have income "effectively connected with a trade or business", as described throughout the code, because "trade or business"  
21 is defined in 26 U.S.C. 7701(a)(26) as "the functions of a [privileged, excise taxable] public office [in the United States  
22 Government]". If you would like to know how this usurious and unconstitutional federal employee kickback program is used  
23 to perpetuate the fraud, read section 5.6.11 of the *Great IRS Hoax*, Form #11.302. A whole book has been written about how  
24 the "federal employee kickback program" works called *IRS Humbug*, written by Frank Kowalik, and it is a real eye opener  
25 that we highly recommend.

26 All the earnings of these slaves living on this federal plantation are treated in law (not physically, but by the courts) as  
27 originating from a gigantic monopoly called the "United States" government which, based on the way it has been acting, is  
28 actually nothing but a big corporation (see 28 U.S.C. §3002(15)(A)) a million times more evil than what happened to Enron  
29 and which will eventually destroy everyone, including those who refuse to participate in the "cult", if we continue to  
30 complacently tolerate its usurpations and violations of the Constitution and God's laws. The book of Revelation in the Bible  
31 describes exactly how the destruction will occur, and it even gives this big corporation a name called "The Beast". The  
32 people living on the federal corporate plantation are called "Babylon the Great Harlot", which is simply an assembly of  
33 ignorant, lazy, irresponsible, and dependent people living under a pure, atheistic commercial democracy who are ignorant  
34 and complacent about government, law, truth, and justice. They have been dumbed-down in the school system and taught to  
35 treat government as their friend, not realizing that this same government has actually become the worst abuser of their rights.

36 ***Wake up people!***

37 *"And I heard another voice from heaven [God] saying, 'Come out of her [Babylon the Great Harlot, a democratic*  
38 *state full of socialist non-believers], my people [Christians], lest you share in her sins, and lest you receive of her*  
39 *plagues.'"*  
40 *[Revelation 18:4, Bible, NKJV]*

## 41 **11.7 Both Big Government And Big Religion: The Enemy Of Freedom.**

42 Almost immediately after Adam's fall, Lucifer and his minions collaborated with evil men to usurp God's authority and  
43 sovereignty. And nowhere is God more sovereign than in the heart and conscience of man. In the spirit world, the First  
44 Commandment ("Thou shalt have no other gods before me") is the battleground that is most fought over. The war for man's  
45 heart and soul is never-ending.

46 Nimrod was the first would-be tyrant to try and bring the world into a global "New World Order." His handiwork produced  
47 the Tower of Babel, which brought about a cataclysmic judgment from Jehovah. However, while Nimrod was the first  
48 globalist to try and unify the nations against God, he was certainly not the last. The Pharaohs, Darius, Artaxerxes, Cyrus,  
49 Alexander, Nebuchadnezzar, the Caesars, and hundreds like them have all brought their tyrannical rule over the hearts of  
50 men. And their ideas and passions are as alive and active in the world today as ever.

51 With every would-be world tyrant, there is one constant: the unholy marriage between a supranational government and Big  
52 Religion. If Jehovah God made anything clear in the Mosaic model of government, it was the fact that--until Christ Himself

1 comes to occupy both offices--the offices of Priest and King were to be eternally separate. At least one Old Testament Jewish  
2 king learned that lesson the hard way.

3 Yet, Big Government and Big Religion have always come together for the purpose of enslaving the masses. The devilish duo  
4 of Big Government and Big Religion killed the Old Testament prophets. They hung Jesus on the cross and persecuted the  
5 early Church. They murdered masses during the Dark Ages; they managed the Holocaust; and their obnoxious offspring are  
6 still at work today. This criminal cabal has been the bane of genuine faith and personal liberty since the beginning of time.

7 When Colonial America fired that shot heard around the world and fought their way to independence, they broke free, not  
8 only from the political domination of the Crown, but also from the religious domination of a State Church. No longer would  
9 citizens be required to join a particular church in order to hold public office. No longer would citizens be required to  
10 financially support churches and institutions they deemed to be offensive to their spiritual convictions. No longer could a  
11 religious institution use the power and force of civil government to subjugate men to its tenets and, yes, tentacles. Indeed, the  
12 apostate kingdom created by Constantine's spiritual whoredom ended at the eastern shore of America!

13 And dare I say that I am proud of my Anabaptist forebears for helping to embed the principle of religious liberty into American  
14 law and jurisprudence? Indeed, I am! What many Americans do not know (and what many militant secularists refuse to  
15 acknowledge) is that it was the influence of the Colonial Baptists--most notably, the Baptist minister John Leland--that was  
16 most responsible for the First Amendment being added to the US Constitution.

17 Therefore, it is more than disturbing when I see evangelical Christians being seduced by the ancient Big Government/Big  
18 Religion whorish union today. How can any true Gospel preacher accept federal Faith-Based Initiative monies, except that  
19 he has either lost all understanding of what freedom truly means, or is willing to sacrifice the sacred principles of liberty upon  
20 the altar of his own selfish interests? How can any true Gospel preacher not realize that Big Religion has always conspired  
21 with tyrannical governmental forces against the true Gospel message? Why are they so blind to these devilish conspiracies?  
22 At the highest levels of virtually every major religion, the conspiracy to hijack truth and enslave the masses is constantly at  
23 work.

24 This is what the Apostle Paul warned about in Ephesians 6:12.

25 *"For we wrestle not against flesh and blood, but against principalities, against powers, against the rulers of the*  
26 *darkness of this world, against spiritual wickedness in high places."*

27 Of course, the "rulers of the darkness of this world" are demonic. But it is also an absolute certainty that these demonic forces  
28 accomplish their devilish deeds through evil men who are given to "spiritual wickedness in high places."

29 Was not the spiritual netherworld complicit in helping to construct Nimrod's Tower of Babel? Was not spiritual wickedness  
30 at work when Pharaoh murdered the little children of the Hebrews? Were not dark principalities at work when  
31 Nebuchadnezzar ordered everyone to bow to the image of the Babylonian leader? When the Lord Jesus called Jewish King  
32 Herod a "fox," was not He acknowledging Herod's complicity with evil? Were not spiritual powers aiding and abetting the  
33 Jewish Sanhedrin when they moved the crowd to crucify the Son of God? When the early Church was being persecuted, was  
34 not spiritual wickedness at work? When nonconforming Christians were thrown to the lions and sawn asunder, were not their  
35 tormentors influenced by these same rulers of darkness? Of course they were!

36 Then, why is it so difficult for modern Christians--especially our pastors and preachers--to understand that this unholy union  
37 of Big Government and Big Religion is as evil and sinful today as it ever was? Why are they unwilling to recognize that the  
38 same devilish system that plagued the Church throughout the ages--suspended only temporarily by the successful revolution  
39 for American independence--is rearing its ugly head again? Why are they unwilling to believe that many of America's leaders  
40 (from both parties) routinely give themselves to luciferian rituals, such as those annual dances around the fire at the Bohemian  
41 Grove? Why is it so hard to believe that we have leaders (from both parties) who have given themselves to dark, secret  
42 societies, such as Skull and Bones? Why are they not suspicious when certain religious schools and institutions repeatedly  
43 produce many of the leaders (from both parties) who seem to universally take America down the same path of globalism?

44 As most Christians should know, The Beast of Revelation is as much a SYSTEM as it is a person. As the Apostle John  
45 warned, the "spirit of antichrist . . . even now already is it in the world." (I John 4:3) He also warned, "Even now are there  
46 many antichrists." (I John 2:18)

1 Any Big Government/Big Religion system that seeks to bring nations into global unity, enshrine a politically correct theology  
2 of universalism, establish Church/State uniformity, and marginalize independent, nonconformist ideology is nothing more  
3 than the emergence of another Tower of Babel or Beast-like system! And, dear Christian friend, has it occurred to you that  
4 our central government in Washington, D.C., is currently engaged in all of the above?

5 Both political parties--including most of our national leaders and news media--actively promote globalism; universalism is,  
6 without a doubt, the unofficial--but clearly understood--national religion; and anyone who holds nonconformist views (i.e.,  
7 pro-life, Jesus-only theology, anti-UN, anti-illegal immigration, questioning official government explanations of national  
8 tragedies, etc.) is being viciously ridiculed, impugned, and marginalized by virtually everyone in the national press corps and  
9 central government. Yes, I am saying it, THE BEAST IS EMERGING IN WASHINGTON, D.C.!

10 The powers that be in both Big Government and Big Religion want to control both our hearts and our minds. They cannot  
11 tolerate dissent. Mind you: they do not care if one is Republican or Democrat, because at the national level, both major parties  
12 are marching in the same beastly direction. They do not care if one is conservative or liberal, because the leaders of both  
13 camps are, likewise, marching in lockstep to the tune being played by The Beast. They do not care if one is Jewish, Catholic,  
14 or Protestant, because at the highest levels, these religions are committing whoredom with The Beast.

15 If a pastor or preacher is going to be true to his calling today, he must be willing to adopt the philosophy of the late, great  
16 Charles Haddon Spurgeon, who said,

17 *"The more prominent you are in Christ's service, the more certain are you to be the butt of calumny [slander]. I*  
18 *have long ago said farewell to my character. I lost it in the earlier days of my ministry by being a little more*  
19 *zealous than suited a slumbering age. And I have never been able to regain it except in the sight of Him who*  
20 *judges all the earth, and in the hearts of those who love me for my work's sake."*  
21 *[Charles Haddon Spurgeon]*

22 Any desire for promotion, pleasure, riches, or fame will quickly make one a servant of The Beast. And, I'm afraid, that is  
23 exactly what many of today's pastors and preachers have become.

24 The fight for independence was as much for the freedom of the heart and mind as it was for the freedom of a State or nation.  
25 In fact, one cannot enslave the latter until he first enslaves the former. And this is what is currently at stake: the freedom of  
26 the heart and soul to be governed by God and no other! And this battle will never be won--at least not nationally--as long as  
27 Christians and pastors are unwilling to recognize the enemy for what it is: "spiritual wickedness in high places."

## 28 **11.8 What's Wrong with American Christianity According to Pastor Chuck Baldwin**

29 Many of us grew up in Sunday School and church. We have heard the great Bible stories over and over. We heard about the  
30 story of how Moses' mother defied Pharaoh and hid her little baby boy in bulrushes. We heard the story of how Moses killed  
31 the Egyptian taskmaster defending a Hebrew slave and later became the great deliverer of God's people. We heard the story  
32 of young David going out alone against the Philistines' greatest warrior, Goliath. We heard the story of how Saul's servants  
33 refused to carry out the king's order to murder the priest Ahimelech. We know well the story of Daniel who defied his  
34 government's order to refrain from praying. The names Shadrach, Meshach, and Abednego are very familiar to us. We heard  
35 our teachers and preachers extol their courage in defying the government's order to bow to the image of their emperor. We  
36 remember that John the Baptist went to prison (and was eventually beheaded), not for preaching the Gospel, but for criticizing  
37 the king for his immoral behavior. We certainly recall the story of Simon Peter who bluntly told his civil magistrates, "We  
38 ought to obey God rather than men." We know that the Apostle Paul wrote many of his epistles from inside government  
39 prisons. We certainly recall that before John penned the Revelation, he had been banished to an island prison by his civil  
40 authorities.

41 I challenge Christians to objectively look at the great stories of Bible heroes (in both testaments) and observe how many times  
42 they are noted for either being martyred for defying a civil authority, or, perhaps, for being delivered from death for defying  
43 a civil authority. The stories of defiance to civil government (in one form or another) comprise a great percentage of all the  
44 stories contained in the Bible--perhaps even a majority of them.

45 So, how has it happened that a majority of today's Christians, it seems, have become such [sheepish slaves of government](#)?  
46 How has it happened that, for the most part, the concept of courage in the face of government oppression has been totally lost  
47 to the average Christian, pastor, and church? For all intents and purposes, it is time for many Christians to shred their Bibles,  
48 because the lessons and principles of God's Word have absolutely no influence over their attitudes and conduct.

1 For example, if the story of Peter in prison were being experienced today, instead of the church rallying behind their pastor  
2 and conducting an all-night prayer meeting for him, most church members would be excoriating him in the name of Romans  
3 chapter 13. Instead of Paul being let down the wall in a basket to escape the civil authorities trying to apprehend him, the  
4 average Christian today would be the first one to turn him over to the authorities.

5 In the mind of the average Christian, God is not God; government is God! For instance, when one well-known Christian  
6 attorney was recently confronted by the teaching of Scripture relative to the church's independence from government  
7 (meaning, no church should allow itself to be subject to the government's tyrannical 501(c)(3) non-profit, tax-exempt status),  
8 he said, "That might be Biblically correct, but it is not legally correct." In other words, the "Christian" attorney would rather  
9 a church be legal than Biblical. And, unfortunately, that seems to be the attitude of the vast majority of professing Christians  
10 today. They would rather please the government than please God; they would rather obey the government than obey God;  
11 they would rather be at peace with the government than be at peace with God.

12 And when it comes to the courage of risking anything of value in order to do right, forget it!

13 Think of what Abram risked when he obeyed God and left his country and kin and struck out for a land that God had not even  
14 told him of. Think of what Moses risked when he killed that Egyptian; think of what Joshua and Caleb risked when they  
15 defied the entire nation that was following the evil counsel of the ten spies; think of what David risked when he faced the  
16 giant; think of what Elijah risked when he confronted 850 false prophets all by himself; think of what the Old Testament  
17 prophets risked when they rebuked or challenged the kings of Israel and Judah; think of what the disciples risked when they  
18 "left all" and followed Jesus; think of what the early church risked when it embraced the Gospel and defied the wishes of  
19 Rome and Jewry (not to mention their own families and friends). But these stories are more like fairy tales to the average  
20 Christian today. They serve no practical benefit whatsoever!

21 Let a church deacon, trustee, or elder be told by some government-backed attorney that he is really a corporate officer, subject  
22 to the laws and punishments of IRS tax codes, and that church leader will say anything, sign anything, or do anything to save  
23 his own financial security. In order to not jeopardize his own standing with the IRS, that same church leader would turn his  
24 back on his best friend, or gladly join with the government in prosecuting a fellow believer.

25 I personally know of more than one case where professing Christians either lied against a beloved brother in order to protect  
26 themselves against threatened government (read: IRS) penalties, or actually testified for the prosecution (read: IRS) under  
27 oath in a court of law against a Christian brother. In each case, these "brothers" actually felt it was their "Christian duty" to  
28 betray their friends and brothers and help the government.

29 I am reminded of the verse where Jesus said,

30 *"Yea, the time cometh, that whosoever killeth you will think that he doeth God service."*  
31 *[John 16:2, Bible, KJV]*

32 I am also reminded of the warning from the prophet Jeremiah when he cautioned,

33 *"Take ye heed every one of his neighbour, and trust ye not in any brother: for every brother will utterly*  
34 *supplant, and every neighbour will walk with slanders. And they will deceive everyone his neighbour, and will*  
35 *not speak the truth: they have taught their tongue to speak lies, and weary themselves to commit iniquity."*  
36 *[Jeremiah 9:4,5, Bible, KJV]*

37 Jeremiah's prophecy is spot-on! Christians today cannot be trusted to be faithful to the truth; they cannot be trusted to not  
38 betray and turn against their brethren; they cannot be trusted to not be party with slander and libel. If it means saving their  
39 own skin, or keeping their bread buttered, or staying in the good graces of the IRS, they would sell out their best friend--  
40 maybe even their own mother! And it is no coincidence that Jeremiah, himself, experienced firsthand that which he had  
41 spoken. It is no wonder he said, "Trust ye not any brother."

42 **When will Christians get it through their heads (and in their hearts) that oftentimes government is the enemy of God?**  
43 **When will they understand that they have only one Sovereign: King Jesus? When will they come to comprehend that**  
44 **helping government perpetrate unjust action against fellow believers is a crime against Heaven? When will they stop**  
45 **talking about the Bible and actually start internalizing its teachings, examples, and principles?**

1 It has gotten to the point today many unbelievers are far more trustworthy than today's Christians--especially when it comes  
2 to the subject of resisting unjust government. It grieves me say that many "Christian" attorneys, politicians, pastors, and  
3 church leaders are merely skills and toadies for a government that has often become both oppressive and illegitimate!

4 May God help us! He will have to, because we won't get much help from the vast majority of today's professing Christians.  
5 That is for sure!

## 6 **12 Guide to Discerning Truth**

7 After having described in detail how clergy and parishioners have been and continue to be deceived about what the word and  
8 law of God requires, we will now present a method that the reader may employ to prevent or avoid further deception in the  
9 future:

- 10 1. The truth is the most important thing you can possess.

11 ***"Buy the truth, and do not sell it, also wisdom and instruction and understanding."***  
12 *[Prov. 23:23, Bible, NKJV]*

13 *"Happy is the man who finds wisdom,*  
14 *And the man who gains understanding;*  
15 ***For her proceeds are better than the profits of silver,***  
16 ***And her gain than fine gold.***  
17 ***She is more precious than rubies,***  
18 ***And all the things you may desire cannot compare with her."***  
19 *[Prov. 3:13-15, Bible, NKJV]*

- 20 2. The only source of absolute, unchanging Truth is God and not any man, philosopher, or group of men.

21 *Jesus said to him, "I am the way, the truth, and the life. No one comes to the Father except through Me."*  
22 *[John 14:6, Bible, NKJV]*

23 *"Sanctify them by Your truth. Your [God's] word is truth."*  
24 *[John 17:17, Bible, NKJV]*

25 *"The entirety of Your word is truth, And every one of Your righteous judgments endures forever."*  
26 *[Psalm 119:160, Bible, NKJV]*

27 *"Your righteousness is an everlasting righteousness, And Your law is truth."*  
28 *[Psalm 119:142, Bible, NKJV]*

- 29 3. Knowledge and understanding of the Truth BEGINS with loving and knowing God:

30 ***"The fear of the LORD is the beginning of knowledge,***  
31 **But fools despise wisdom and instruction."**  
32 *[Prov. 1:7, Bible, NKJV]*

33 ***"The fear of the LORD is to hate evil; Pride and arrogance and the evil way And the perverse mouth I hate."***  
34 *[Prov. 8:13, Bible, NKJV]*

- 35 4. The product of seeking the Truth is knowledge and wisdom.

36 *"For the LORD gives wisdom; From His mouth come knowledge and understanding;"*  
37 *[Prov. 2:6, Bible, NKJV]*

38 *"I, wisdom, dwell with prudence, And find out knowledge and discretion."*  
39 *[Prov. 8:12, Bible, NKJV]*

- 40 5. The wisdom that results from seeking truth will unavoidably cause much grief and sorrow. This grief and sorrow will  
41 result from the realization of how hopelessly corrupt man and every creation of men truly is and why we desperately  
42 need God. This explains why all the sin and sorrow in the world began from Adam and Eve eating of the fruit of the tree  
43 of knowledge:

1                   *"For in much wisdom is much grief,  
2                   And he who increases knowledge increases sorrow."  
3                   [Eccl. 1:18, Bible, NKJV]*

- 4 6. The reason people avoid the truth and are enticed by a lying media and a lying government is because they want to avoid  
5 the grief and sorrow that results from knowing the truth. This avoidance of the truth will ultimately lead them to rebel  
6 against and offend God and to commit idolatry towards government:

7                   ***"Woe to the rebellious children,"** says the Lord, **"Who take counsel, but not of Me, and who devise plans, but  
8                   not of My Spirit, that they may add sin to sin; who walk to go down to Egypt, and have not asked My advice,  
9                   to strengthen themselves in the strength of Pharaoh [the "government"], and to trust in the shadow of Egypt  
10                  [or the District of Criminals, Washington, D.C. in this case!] Therefore the strength of Pharaoh shall be your  
11                  shame, and trust in the shadow of Egypt shall be your humiliation..."***

12                  *Now go, write it before them on a tablet, and note it on a scroll, that it may be for time to come, forever and ever:  
13                  that this is a rebellious people, **lying children, children who will not hear the law of the Lord**; who say to the  
14                  seers, "Do not see," and to the prophets, "Do not prophesy to us right things" **Speak to us smooth [politically  
15                  correct] things**, prophesy deceits. Get out of the way, turn aside from the path, cause the Holy One of Israel to  
16                  cease from before us."*

17                  *Therefore thus says the Holy One of Israel:*

18                  ***"Because you despise this word [the Truth], and trust in oppression and perversity, and rely on them, therefore  
19                  this iniquity shall be to you like a breach ready to fall, a bulge in a high wall, whose breaking comes suddenly,  
20                  in an instant. And He shall break it like the breaking of the potter's vessel, which is broken in pieces; He shall  
21                  not spare. So there shall not be found among its fragments a shard to take fire from the hearth, or to take  
22                  water from the cistern."***  
23                  *[Isaiah 30:1-3, 8-14, Bible, NKJV]*

- 24 7. The Truth is codified in God's Holy Laws:

*Laws of the Bible*, Form #13.001  
<http://sedm.org/Forms/FormIndex.htm>

- 25 8. The Truth can be verified:  
26 8.1. By the Holy Spirit in the case of spiritual matters.  
27 8.2. By evidence in the legal field. Anything not based on evidence is a state-sponsored religion and not a REAL law.  
28 9. The Truth never conflicts with itself. Anyone who contradicts themselves is a liar.

29                  *"But if one walks in the night, he stumbles, because **the light [Truth] is not in him.**"*  
30                  *[John 11:10, Bible, NKJV]*

31                  *It is, of course, true that statutory construction "is a holistic endeavor" and that the meaning of a provision is  
32                  "clarified by the remainder of the statutory scheme ... [when] only one of the permissible meanings produces a  
33                  substantive effect that is compatible with the rest of the law." [United Sav. Assn. of Tex. v. Timbers of Inwood  
34                  Forest Associates, Ltd., 484 U.S. 365, 371, 108 S.Ct. 626, 98 L.Ed.2d. 740 \(1988\).](#)  
35                  *[U.S. v. Cleveland Indians Baseball Co., 532 U.S. 200, 121 S.Ct. 1433 (2001)]**

- 36 10. The Truth is best obtained from those who are not trying to sell you anything:

37                  *"It is good for nothing," cries the buyer; But when he has gone his way, then he boasts.  
38                  [Prov. 20:14, Bible, NKJV]*

- 39 11. If, in seeking the truth, you become confused, it is usually because someone with an agenda is trying to hide or conceal  
40 the truth, usually with "words of art" and deception:

41                  ***"For where [government] envy and self-seeking [of money they are not entitled to] exist, confusion [and  
42                  deception] and every evil thing will be there."***  
43                  *[James 3:16, Bible, NKJV]*

44                  ***"Shall the throne of iniquity, which devises evil by law, have fellowship with You? They gather  
45                  together against the life of the righteous, and condemn innocent blood. But the Lord has been my defense, and  
46                  my God the rock of my refuge. He has brought on them their own iniquity, and shall cut them off in their own  
47                  wickedness; **the Lord our God shall cut them off.**"***  
48                  *[Psalm 94:20-23, Bible, NKJV]*

1 12. If you seek to eliminate confusion, ask of the Lord in all sincerity of heart and in fervent prayer, and it will be revealed  
2 to you:

3 *"If any of you lacks wisdom, let him ask of God, who gives to all liberally and without reproach, and it will be  
4 given to him."  
5 [James 1:5, Bible, NKJV]*

6 *"Trust in the LORD with all your heart,  
7 And lean not on your own understanding;  
8 **In all your ways acknowledge Him,**  
9 **And He shall direct your paths.**"  
10 [Prov. 3:5-6, Bible, NKJV]*

11 13. Those who refuse to learn, accept, and act upon the Truth will first be deceived and ultimately destroyed:

12 ***"For the mystery of lawlessness is already at work; only He [God] who now restrains will do so until He is taken  
13 out of the way. And then the lawless one [Satan] will be revealed, whom the Lord will consume with the breath  
14 of His mouth and destroy with the brightness of His coming. The coming of the lawless one [Satan] is according  
15 to the working of Satan, with all power, signs, and lying wonders, and with all unrighteous deception among  
16 those who perish, because they did not receive the love of the truth, that they might be saved [don't be one of  
17 them!]. And for this reason God will send them strong delusion [from their own government], that they should  
18 believe a lie, that they all may be condemned who did not believe the truth but had pleasure in  
19 unrighteousness."**  
20 [2 Thess. 2:3-17, Bible, NKJV]*

### 21 **13 Conclusions**

22 This section succinctly summarizes the analysis in this document into the following enumerated list:

23 1. The Bible is a law book, not a history book.

24 *"One who turns his ear from hearing the law [[God's law](#) or [man's law](#)], even his prayer is an abomination."  
25 [[Prov. 28:9](#), Bible, NKJV]*

26 *"This **Book of the Law** shall not depart from your mouth, but you shall meditate in it day and night, that you  
27 may observe to do according to all that is written in it. For then you will make your way prosperous, and then  
28 you will have good success. Have I not commanded you? Be strong and of good courage; do not be afraid, nor  
29 be dismayed, for the LORD your God is with you wherever you go."  
30 [[Joshua 1:8-9](#), Bible, NKJV,  
31 IMPLICATION: If you aren't reading and trying to obey God's law daily, then you're not doing God's will and  
32 you will not prosper]*

33 *"But this crowd that does not know [and quote and follow and use] the law is accursed."  
34 [[John 7:49](#), Bible, NKJV]*

35 *"Salvation is far from the wicked, For they do not seek Your [God's] statutes."  
36 [[Psalm 119:155](#), Bible, NKJV]*

37 2. The essence of what it means to be a Christian, in fact, is one who:

38 2.1. Professes faith in God.

39 2.2. Views the entirety of the Bible, both Old Testament and New Testament, as a law book that directly regulates their  
40 current behavior.

41 2.3. Produces fruit (works) that evidence his/her faith consistent with God's law.

42 3. The laws of the Bible are codified and organized by topic in the following document:

*[Laws of the Bible](#), Form #13.001  
<http://sedm.org/Forms/FormIndex.htm>*

43 4. Modern Christianity suffers from delusions about:

44 4.1. The nature of God

45 4.2. The proper relationship of Christians to civil government

46 4.3. The nature of the Bible as a law book.

47 5. These delusions are a product mainly of the desire on the pastors and parishioners to:

48 5.1. Avoid responsibility to God for their actions.

49 5.2. Avoid truth.



- 1 5.3. Avoid responsibility or effort under God’s covenant.
- 2 5.4. Avoid conflict.
- 3 5.5. Avoid cognitive dissonance.
- 4 5.6. Avoid risk or confrontation.
- 5 5.7. Avoid looking legalistic.
- 6 5.8. Avoid appearing dogmatic or controlling.
- 7 5.9. Invent their own substitute standard for behavior that displaces God’s law.
- 8 5.10. Engage in selfish or prideful behaviors.
- 9 6. God predicted this delusion would happen when He said;

10 “Woe to the rebellious children.” says the Lord, “Who take counsel, but not of Me, and who devise plans, but  
 11 not of My Spirit, that they may add sin to sin; who walk to go down to Egypt, and have not asked My advice,  
 12 to strengthen themselves in the strength of Pharaoh [the “government”], and to trust in the shadow of Egypt  
 13 [or the District of Criminals, Washington, D.C. in this case]! Therefore the strength of Pharaoh shall be your  
 14 shame, and trust in the shadow of Egypt shall be your humiliation...

15 Now go, write it before them on a tablet, and note it on a scroll, that it may be for time to come, forever and ever:  
 16 that this is a rebellious people, lying children, children who will not hear the law of the Lord; who say to the  
 17 seers, “Do not see,” and to the prophets, “Do not prophesy to us right things’ Speak to us smooth [politically  
 18 correct] things, prophesy deceits. Get out of the way, turn aside from the path, cause the Holy One of Israel to  
 19 cease from before us.”

20 Therefore thus says the Holy One of Israel:

21 “Because you despise this word [the Truth], and trust in oppression and perversity, and rely on them, therefore  
 22 this iniquity shall be to you like a breach ready to fall, a bulge in a high wall, whose breaking comes suddenly,  
 23 in an instant. And He shall break it like the breaking of the potter’s vessel, which is broken in pieces; He shall  
 24 not spare. So there shall not be found among its fragments a shard to take fire from the hearth, or to take  
 25 water from the cistern.”  
 26 [Isaiah 30:1-3, 8-14, Bible, NKJV]

- 27 7. When people become conditioned to accept and to not question contradictions in their own faith, they become:
  - 28 7.1. Delusional.
  - 29 7.2. Hypocritical.
  - 30 7.3. Psychotic.
- 31 8. Ignorance and intellectual laziness are usually the reason people are willing to accept deception, lies, delusions, and  
 32 contradictions.

33 “...it is not good for a soul to be without knowledge,”  
 34 [Prov. 19:2, Bible, NKJV]

35 “My people are destroyed for lack of knowledge.”  
 36 [Hosea 4:6, Bible, NKJV]

37 “One who turns his ear from hearing the law, even his prayer is an abomination.”  
 38 [Prov. 28:9, Bible, NKJV]

- 39 9. The only thing that typically can cure the ignorance and resulting delusions of a psychotic is chaos and pain arising from  
 40 the consequences of their inaccurate perceptions and the consequences arising from them. That chaos and pain comes  
 41 from God’s judgment of a wicked people. God uses the chaos as a teaching tool to show people that their choices and  
 42 the consequences they create are harmful, cannot stand the test of time, and must be reformed.

43 “Wisdom calls aloud outside; she raises her voice in the open squares, she cries out in the chief concourses, at  
 44 the openings of the gates in the city she speaks her words; how long, you simple [atheist] ones, will you love  
 45 simplicity? For scorers delight in their scorning, and fools hate knowledge. Turn at my rebuke; surely I will  
 46 pour out my spirit on you; I will make my words known to you. Because I have called and you refused, I have  
 47 stretched out my hand and no one regarded, because you despised my counsel [and My law: God’s law], and  
 48 would have none of my rebuke, I also will laugh at your calamity; I will mock when your terror [and the IRS]  
 49 comes. When your terror [and the IRS] comes like a storm, and your destruction comes like a whirlwind, when  
 50 distress and anguish come upon you. Then they will call on me, but I will not answer; they will seek me  
 51 diligently, but they will not find me. Because they hated knowledge [and were too lazy and complacent to seek  
 52 it out], and did not choose the fear of the Lord. They have none of my counsel and despised my every  
 53 rebuke. Therefore they shall eat the fruit of their own way, and be filled to the full with their own fancies. For  
 54 the turning away of the simple will slay them. And the complacency of fools will destroy them; but whoever

1 *listens to me [God and the wisdom that comes ONLY from God] will dwell safely, and will be secure, without*  
2 *fear of evil.*  
3 [[Prov. 1:20-33](#), Bible, NKJV]

4 In a court of law, one's complicity in a matter is summarized in three questions:

- 5 1. What did you know?
- 6 2. When did you know it?
- 7 3. What did you do about it when you found out?

8 The same can be asked of you. The purpose for your existence is much greater than any supposed eternity spent in heaven  
9 playing a harp. God has purposed in you a potential far beyond what you now dream.

10 Describing these last days, Paul wrote to Timothy,

11 *"Evil men and seducers shall wax worse and worse, deceiving, and being deceived."*  
12 [[II Tim. 3:13](#)]

13 No longer do you have to be "deceived" by those doing the "deceiving." But like a court of law, Christ will ask you what you  
14 did with the knowledge He gave you.

15 By this point, you will likely want to ask your minister about what you have read. Beware of clever rebuttals. Do not believe  
16 cunning arguments meant to twist the clear, unambiguous scriptures covered herein.

17 Your minister should know the answers to these questions. The prophet Ezekiel makes it clear what God thinks of those who  
18 have knowledge and willingly ignore it:

19 *"You dwell in the midst of a rebellious house, which have eyes to see, and see not [a choice is made!]; they*  
20 *have ears to hear, and hear not: for they are a rebellious house."*  
21 [[Ezek. 12:2](#)]

22 Will you be the same?

23 Why have you never been taught these things? How can such amazing truths—so obvious from the pages of your Bible—  
24 remain hidden for so long?

25 Your eyes have been opened to flawed arguments commonly advanced by both churches and their parishioners. You are left  
26 to decide whether you will return to deception—or find out why you have been misled for so many years. The right choice  
27 means you can begin to learn many more marvelous truths from God's Instruction Manual for mankind—the Holy Bible!  
28 All it takes is a little curiosity and a desire to ensure that everything you say and do is completely consistent with itself and  
29 with every part of what the Bible literally and actually says.

## 30 **14 Resources for application, study, and rebuttal**

31 The following resources may prove helpful to those who wish to explore the issues dealt with in this pamphlet further:

- 32 1. *Where Is The Church? ..And Its Incredible History!*, Reformed Church of God  
33 <https://rcg.org/books/thogtc.html?gclid=CMXZ1uqVz9ECFUpNfgodUE4EXQ>
- 34 2. Political Activism Resources. Use these resources to introduce members of your church to the concepts in this document.  
35 You can also use this document:
  - 36 2.1. *What Pastors and Clergy Need to Know About Government and Taxation*, Form #12.006-background on the biblical  
37 relationship between Christians and government. Simplified to appeal to pastors.  
38 <http://sedm.org/Forms/FormIndex.htm>
  - 39 2.2. *75 Bible Questions Your Instructors Pray You Won't Ask, Second Edition, Gary North, 1984, 1988, ISBN 0-930462-*  
40 *03-3.*
  - 41 2.3. *One Hundred One Questions Your Pastor Hopes You Never Ask*, Earl Paulk, 1990, K-Dimension Pub; ISBN 10-  
42 091759536X.
  - 43 2.4. *Should Christians Always Obey the State?*, Form #13.014

- 1 <http://sedm.org/Forms/FormIndex.htm>
- 2 2.5. *The Crisis of Church Incorporation*, Form #13.017
- 3 <http://sedm.org/Forms/FormIndex.htm>
- 4 2.6. *Biblical Standards for Civil Rulers*, Form #13.013
- 5 <http://sedm.org/Forms/FormIndex.htm>
- 6 2.7. *Christian Citizenship Training Course, Volume 1*, Form #12.007
- 7 <http://sedm.org/Forms/FormIndex.htm>
- 8 2.8. *Christian Citizenship Training Course, Volume 2*, Form #12.008
- 9 <http://sedm.org/Forms/FormIndex.htm>
- 10 2.9. *Christian Citizenship Training Course, Slides and handouts*, Form #12.009
- 11 <http://sedm.org/Forms/FormIndex.htm>
- 12 2.10. *Bible Law Course*, Form #12.015
- 13 <http://sedm.org/Forms/FormIndex.htm>
- 14 3. **Ministries.** Organizations which emphasize that the Bible is a law book and try to remedy the falsehoods described here.
- 15 3.1. *Sovereignty Education and Defense Ministry (SEDM)*. Focus on legal education of both man's law and God's law
- 16 as a way to teach people how to love and protect their neighbor. Support the conclusions in this document.
- 17 <http://sedm.org>
- 18 3.2. *Family Guardian Website*. Legal research on corruption within Christianity, government, and the legal profession.
- 19 Focus on providing tools to correct the corruption.
- 20 <http://famguardian.org>
- 21 3.3. *Chalcedon Foundation*. Focuses on restoring the authority of biblical law within secular society.
- 22 <http://www.chalcedon.edu/>
- 23 3.4. *Restored Church of God*. David C. Pack, Pastor.
- 24 <http://www.thercg.org/>
- 25 3.5. *Freedom Ministries*, Pastor John Weaver
- 26 <http://www.sermonaudio.com/search.asp?SpeakerOnly=true&currSection=sermonsspeaker&keyword=John^Weaver>
- 27 3.6. *His Holy Church*-background on what early Christian churches were like and why the modern, institutionalized,
- 28 large church is in conflict with early Christianity
- 29 <http://www.hisholychurch.net/>
- 30 3.7. *Apostasy Watch Website*: Information about the corruption of Christianity in America
- 31 <http://apostasywatch.com/>
- 32 3.8. *Real Truth Website*. Several portions of this article were adapted from this website. Excellent resource
- 33 <http://www.realtruth.org/>
- 34 4. **References.**
- 35 4.1. *Socialism: The New American Civil Religion*, Form #05.016-how modern American government has become a
- 36 substitute religion that supersedes the biblical God.
- 37 <https://sedm.org/Forms/05-MemLaw/SocialismCivilReligion.pdf>
- 38 4.2. *The Ten Commandments: Nailed to the Cross or Required for Salvation?*-excellent book that emphasizes the
- 39 authority and applicability of the entirety of God's law to the modern affairs of man
- 40 <http://www.thercg.org/books/syotte.html>
- 41 4.3. *Spirituality Page, Section 12: Corruption of Christianity, Family Guardian Fellowship*-background on the
- 42 corruption of Christianity
- 43 <http://famguardian.org/Subjects/Spirituality/spirituality.htm>
- 44 4.4. *The Institutes of Biblical Law*, Rousas John Rushdoony, 1973, The Craig Press, Library of Congress Catalog Card
- 45 Number 72-79485. Excellent book about the application of Biblical Law to modern society.
- 46 4.5. *Laws of the Bible*, Form #13.001-organizes all the laws and commandments in the bible by topic, including both
- 47 the new and the old testament.
- 48 <http://sedm.org/Forms/FormIndex.htm>
- 49 4.6. *Jesus of Nazareth: Illegal Tax Protester*, Ned Netterville-book about the true nature of Jesus from a Biblical
- 50 perspective
- 51 4.6.1. Scribd, <http://www.scribd.com/doc/2421538/Jesus-Tax-Protestor#scribd>
- 52 4.6.2. SEDM Form #11.306: <https://sedm.org/Forms/11-Research/JesusOfNazareth-IllegalTaxProt.pdf>
- 53 4.7. *Jesus is an Anarchist*, Family Guardian Fellowship-book about the true biblical nature of Jesus
- 54 <http://famguardian.org/Subjects/Spirituality/ChurchvState/JesusAnarchist.htm>